

Evangelism and Missions



- An authoritative presentation
- Challenging and compelling
- An expedient masterpiece on evangelism

dag heward-mills

Evangelism

and

Missions

2ND EDITION

DAG HEWARD-MILLS

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission title pg.qxd 2008/05/14 14:10 Page 2

Scripture quotations are taken from the KING JAMES VERSION of the Bible, unless otherwise stated. Excerpts in:

Chapter 6 from Portrait of a Protestant Mission, of the book, "SURVIVORS ON THE GOLD COASTThe Basel Missionaries in Colonial Ghana" by Peter A. Schweizer, page 44. Chapter 12 from Classic Books For Today No. 196, An Hour Series: An Hour With David Livingstone by Walter McCleary Public Domain.

Chapter 16 from The Trial of J.J.Rawlings by Kojo Yankah, pages 16-19. Chapter 16 from Josephus, pages 388-389.

Chapter 21 from Welcoming a Visitation of the Holy Spirit,

by Wesley Campbell, Published by Strang
Communications.

Chapter 28 The Power of Faith, Article in October 1999
issue of Reader's Digest, author Phyllis McIntosh.

All excerpts used by permission.

Copyright © Parchment House 2007

2nd Printing 2008

E mail Dag Heward-Mills :

bishop@daghewardmills.org

Find out more about Dag Heward-Mills at:

www.daghewardmills.org

Write to:

Dag Heward-Mills

P.O. Box 114

Korle-Bu

Accra

Ghana

ISBN 10: 9988-596-71-5

ISBN 13: 9789988-596-71-2

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles. Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission title pg.qxd 2008/05/14 14:10 Page 3

Contents

SECTION I: EVANGELISM

1. The Importance of Evangelism	1
2. A Focus on Evangelism for Church Growth	9
3. The Supreme Task of the Church	15
4. Strategies for Effective Evangelism	20
5. Keys to the Harvest	28

SECTION II: INTRODUCTION TO MISSIONS

6. A Brief History of Missionary Work
.....37

7. Church Expansion
.....45

8. The Work of Church Planters
.....55

9. Fruitfulness and Missions
.....61

10. Barrenness in the Church
.....70

11. Fighting Different Kinds of Barrenness
.....76

12. The Doctrines of Sacrifice and Obedience in Church
Planting88

13. Strategies for Practical Missionary Work
.....101

14. Methods for Effective Missionary Work
.....115

SECTION III: SACRIFICE AND FRUITFULNESS

15. Preaching and Missions
.....131

16. Preaching the Cross
.....142

17. Sacrifice and the Anointing
.....159

18. The Christian Leader and Sacrifice
.....162

19. Sacrifice and the Glory
.....169

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission title pg.qxd 2008/05/14 14:10 Page 4

SECTION IV: THE WORKS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

20. Recognizing the Supernatural
.....179

21. The Presence of the Holy Spirit
.....190

22. The Charismatic Gifts of the Holy Spirit
.....202

SECTION V: THE DOCTRINE OF HEALING

23. Interpreting “Jehovah Rophe”	217
24. The Purposes of Healing	227
25. Understanding the Gift of Healing	237
26. Healing and the Power of the Holy Spirit	244
27. Dimensions of the Healing Anointing	248
28. Characteristics of the Healing Anointing	252
29. Channels of the Healing Anointing	259
30. Jesus and the Healing Anointing	267
31. Humility and the Healing Anointing	274
32. Seasons for the Anointing	279

33. The Works of Jesus
.....287

Questions
.....294

Bibliography
.....315

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission title pg.qxd 2008/05/14 14:10 Page 5

SECTION I

Evangelism

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission title pg.qxd 2008/05/14 14:10 Page 6

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 1

The Importance of Evangelism

1

2. THERE ARE FEW OR NO SPECIALIST

REASONS WHY YOU MUST

HARVESTERS ANYMORE.

BE A SOUL WINNER

Specialist harvesters are the Evangelists:

Every pastor must be an evangelist at heart. He itinerant evangelists, tele-evangelists, radio

must know that he is standing in the midst of a

evangelists and so on. Paul told Timothy in 2

great harvest of souls and must understand that

Timothy 4:5, to do the work of an evangelist. He in spite of the many churches around, he is still was telling Timothy that even though he was a

surrounded by many unsaved souls. Pastors

pastor he could still do the work of an evangelist need to know that they must concentrate on the

at the same time.

harvest of souls otherwise they will become

distracted by money, positions and popularity.

3. THE ONLY REASON WHY PASTORS CARE FOR

It is a spiritual thing when a pastor is able to **THE CHURCH MEMBERS IS SO THAT THEY**

see the harvest. It is good for the pastor to be **WILL GO OUT AND BEAR FRUIT.**

able to teach and preach but that alone is not good enough. He must include the harvesting

Unless sheep are fed and taken care of, they will of souls to his duties. Every pastor must send

not give birth. Some sheep can grow and

his church members to harvest souls. I would

become a great blessing to the Church of God.

like to share with you fifty-three reasons why

you must be a soul winner.

4. THE REAPING OF THE HARVEST IS THE

1. WITHOUT A HARVEST THERE WILL BE NO

CARDINAL SIGN OF THE EFFECTIVENESS OF

SOULS OR SHEEP TO CARE FOR.

A SHEPHERD'S WORK.

A pastor needs to have souls around to join the Numbers tell a lot about the effectiveness of any choir, prayer ministries, and normal church ministry. Pastors should not be deceived to services and conventions. When there are many think that quality is the only cardinal sign of people in the pastor's church, they provide effectiveness in ministry. The Bible always financial support for church development talked about the large crowds that followed projects. Church members will also be able to Jesus' ministry. The number of people who get find suitable marriage partners in a big church. saved matters. It is extremely important.

The work of the ministry begins with the

harvest.

1

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 2

2

/ CHAPTER 1

5. TO

AVOID

BEING

SENT

OUT

BY

witnesses, he provokes God's provision. God

PERSECUTION AND TROUBLE.

will bring certain blessings in the way of the

person who does his work. The minister will

Often when ministers do not obey the voice of benefit from the principle of sowing and the Lord, trouble forces them into obedience. It reaping. took persecution to get the disciples to go into all the world, (Acts 8:1, Matthew 28:19-20).

When a minister begins experiencing certain

8. THE BIBLICALLY, SCRIPTURALLY, AND

troubles, he should begin to think about

DOCTRINALLY GOOD SHEPHERD IS THE ONE

whether God is allowing those troubles to

WHO LEAVES THE NINETY-NINE SHEEP AND

compel him to obey his voice.

GOES TO LOOK FOR THE ONE LOST SHEEP.

The Bible says that a good shepherd is the one

6. TO AVOID THE MISTAKE OF "POLISHING

who leaves the flock and goes to look for the one **THE**

SAME COIN SEVERAL TIMES OVER".

lost sheep (sinner), "What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not

In Luke 15:8-9, the Bible describes a situation of leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and a lost coin, "Either what woman having ten

go after that which is lost, until he find it? And pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not when he hath found it, he layeth it on his

light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek

shoulders, rejoicing. And when he cometh

diligently till she find it? And when she hath

home, he calleth together his friends and

found it, she calleth her friends and her

neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me;

neighbours together, saying, Rejoice with me;

for I have found my sheep which was lost" (Luke

for I have found the piece which I had lost".

15:4-7).

We can gather from this Scripture that there

A good pastor must begin to see the lost. The

is one lost coin that God wants his people to go kind of shepherd/pastor who has his eyes on the

out and get. However it looks like God's people prize (souls) , is the one doing the real ministry are busy just 'polishing the same coin'; giving

work. There are many people who don't know

the same people all the attention and care.

about the Lord because nobody has told them.

There are so many different messages which are

preached to the same people over and over.

Pastors must send those polished coins into the

9. CHRIST IS THE GREATEST SHEPHERD AND

field to bring the lost coins into God's house.

THE BEST SOUL WINNER.

The Bible says that Jesus came into the world to **7. IN ORDER TO PROVOKE THE HIGHEST**

save sinners, "This is a faithful saying, and

HEAVENLY SUPPORT AND BACKING FOR THE

worthy of all acceptance, that Christ Jesus came
PASTOR'S LIFE AND MINISTRY.

into the world to save sinners; of whom I am

chief" (1 Timothy 1:15). Pastors must be able to According to Luke 15, verse 10, there is a divine say this about themselves. Pastors must desire

spiritual reaction in Heaven every time a soul is to be Christ-like. Christ was a soul winner.

brought into the house of the Lord, "Likewise, I Jesus Christ came to seek and to save the lost,

say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the

"For the Son of Man has come to seek and to angels of God over one sinner that repenteth". save that which was lost" (Luke 19:10).

The response from Heaven will be happiness,

divine provision, joy, prolongation of days and

The Church of God must emphasize on

blessings for the minister. Every time a person finding and saving the souls. Church members

and ministries in the church must be organized

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 3

THE IMPORTANCE OF EVANGELISM / 3

to seek and to save the lost. When pastors do

13. THE HARVEST IS OVERWHELMINGLY

the work of God, they will have an abundance of

GIGANTIC, THEREFORE MINISTERS MUST

souls to help to do the work in the ministry.

HAVE A LARGE HARVEST OF SOULS.

Jesus said that the harvest is plentiful, "Then **10. THE FIRST LEADERS THAT CHRIST SPOKE**

saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly is **TO, HE**

TOLD ABOUT SOUL WINNING.

plenteous, but the labourers are few" (Matthew

9:37). Jesus is saying here that the harvest is so

"And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will

large that there is a desperate need for laborers. make you fishers of men" (Matthew 4:19). If

pastors are following Jesus, they will realize that Pastors may not fully understand the size of

he will make them fishers of men.

the harvest. If all pastors left their secular jobs and went into full-time ministry the harvest

would still be gigantic. Most ministers do not

11. JESUS TOLD THE LAST GROUP OF LEADERS

naturally think of the huge harvest that exists in **HE SPOKE TO, TO GO AND HARVEST THE**

the Middle East, yet it exists. There are

SOULS.

currently 1.3 billion Muslims in the world.

Pastors should not fight with other churches

“Go ye therefore, and teach all nations,

over their members. Fighting doesn't bring in

baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the
harvest.

the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them

to observe all things whatsoever I have

commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always,

14. CHRIST DID NOT JUST PONDER AND

even unto the end of the world” (Matthew

WONDER OVER THE RIPENING HARVEST, HE

28:19,20).

DID SOMETHING ABOUT IT.

“These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded

12. EVERY CHRISTIAN IS FIRST A SOUL WINNER

them, saying, Go not into the way of the

THEN THEY CAN BECOME TEACHERS,

Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans

SHEPHERDS, WRITERS, SINGERS, PROPHETS,

enter ye not: But go rather to the lost sheep of **MUSICIANS
OR ADMINISTRATORS.**

the house of Israel.

Jesus said that the gospel must first be

And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of

preached (soul winning), "And the gospel must

heaven is at hand. Heal the sick, cleanse the

first be published among all nations" (Mark

lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye 13:10).
Many pastors want the position or office have received,
freely give" (Matthew 10:5-8).

in the ministry, but following the Lord means

Jesus sent his twelve disciples into the

being a soul winner, first. The best pastors,
harvest, and then he sent seventy others, "After prophets,
and miracle workers are soul winners
these things the Lord appointed other seventy
first. Miracles exist for soul winning. Signs and also, and
sent them two and two before his face
wonders bring people to Christ. Preachers
into every city and place, whither he himself
cannot enter into towns where fetish dominates
would come. Therefore said he unto them, The
without the power of God manifested through
harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few: signs and
wonders. That is what will lead to the pray ye therefore the
Lord of the harvest, that
winning of souls.
he would send forth labourers into his harvest"
(Luke 10:1,2).

/ CHAPTER 1

15. A TRUE SHEPHERD MUST BE MOVED WITH

19. TO ATTAIN THE DIVINE BALANCE OF

COMPASSION FOR SOULS AS JESUS WAS,

TWENTY PER CENT OF EVANGELISM.

OTHERWISE

HIS

CALLING

MUST

BE

Twenty per cent of the five-fold ministry is

QUESTIONED.

evangelism, “And he gave some, apostles; and

some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and

16. T

some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting

O AVOID BECOMING AN IMBALANCE, AN

of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the
ABOMINATION.

edifying of the body of Christ” (Ephesians

“A false balance is abomination to the LORD: but 4:11,12.)

a just weight is his delight” (Proverbs 11:1).

A great man of God, Kenneth Hagin fell down

20. THE FORGOTTEN ONES MUST HEAR THE

and broke his arm whilst preaching. The next

GOSPEL TOO.

morning, the Lord Jesus appeared to him in a

vision and told him that the reason why he had

allowed that accident to happen to him was

21. OVER 1000 GROUPS OF PEOPLE, RACES,

because Kenneth Hagin was out of balance.

AND TRIBES HAVE NOT HEARD THE GOSPEL

Jesus explained to him that God had called him

OF JESUS CHRIST.

to be a prophet and a teacher, and not a pastor, and so because he was out of God's will, Satan

had gained access to him.

22. NINETY-FOUR PER CENT OF ALL MINISTERS

As a man of God matures, God evaluates him

ARE PREACHING TO NINE PER CENT OF THE

differently and with a much more stricter hand.

WORLD'S POPULATION.

A pastor must now allow himself to become

imbalanced by concentrating on attending

funerals, weddings and other such things that

23. SIX PER CENT OF ALL MINISTERS ARE

aren't so necessary, all the time.

STRUGGLING

WITH

THE

REMAINING

NINETY-ONE PER CENT OF THE WORLD'S

17. T

HARVEST.

O OVERCOME THE IMBALANCE IN GOD'S

WORK IN TERMS OF EMPHASIS.

Many pastors want comfort in the ministry.

Many do not want to go, or to be sent into the
real harvest of the 91%. They may rather

18. TO OVERCOME THE IMBALANCE THAT

resign, than go into the untouched areas.

**EXISTS IN RELATION TO HARVEST FIELDS
AND WORKERS.**

24. IT IS TO PREVENT THE INVASION OF FALSE

The number of workers in relation to the

RELIGIONS

INTO

THE

WORLD'S

number of harvest fields is very low and those

COMMUNITIES.

few that exist are under constant attack from
the world.

Christians must not make the wrong

assumption that people want to become

Even in the ministry, there are many workers

Christians. There is an inherent desire in every doing the

light work, but very few doing the

man toknow God, therefore whichever religion

difficult work of harvesting souls.

comes first and whoever sounds convincing is

the one that will be received. People really want Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 5

THE IMPORTANCE OF EVANGELISM / 5

God. This is proven by the way Muslims for

People will be able to believe the gospel when

instance are ready to die for what they believe. they hear a
preacher.

The search and need for God is manifested

through many false religions. As long as

Christians are silent, other religins will

30. EVERY CHURCH HAS A DIVINE DECAPOLIS

dominiate the world.

OF HARVEST FIELDS.

"Decapolis", means ten cities. Every minister **25. IT IS TO AVOID THE MISTAKE OF FISHING IN**

must identify his divine decapolis. The mad

THE BATHTUB.

man of Gadara who got healed preached Christ

in ten cities, "And when he was come into the

Fishing in the bathtub (home) will provide little ship, he that had been possessed with the devil

results, because often there are no fish in the

prayed him that he might be with him. Howbeit

bathtub. The harvest is not internal but

Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go

external.

home to thy friends, and tell them how great

things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee. And he departed, and

26. TO AVOID THE MISTAKE OF SOWING SEEDS

began to publish in Decapolis how great things

ON A HARD FLOOR.

Jesus had done for him: and all men did marvel”

(Mark 5:18-20). Every member and church has

ten different cities that God has given them.

27. THE ANOINTING OF GOD WILL NEVER

INCREASE UNTIL THE GOSPEL IS PREACHED

TO EVERY CREATURE.

31. BELIEVERS WILL PERSONALLY ACCOUNT

FOR THE BLOOD OF SINNERS.

The most successful shepherds and pastors are

those who "bring" their members to church. As

“When I say unto the wicked, Thou shalt surely

a pastor does what God asks him to do, the

die; and thou givest him not warning, nor

anointing on his life will increase. When one is speakest to warn the wicked from his wicked

faithful with the little that God gives, God

way, to save his life; the same wicked man shall blesses the person with more.

die in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at thine hand” (Ezekiel 3:18). It is not easy to

answer for the blood of someone on earth. This

28. THERE IS NO WAY PEOPLE CAN HEAR THE

should let every believer know that it will be

GOSPEL WITHOUT A PREACHER.

more frightening to answer for the souls of

people before Almighty God.

“How then shall they call on him in whom they

have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how

32. PASTORS MUST HAVE THE ATTITUDE THAT

shall they hear without a preacher?" (Romans

THE SALVATION OF THE WHOLE WORLD

10:14).

DEPENDS ON THEM.

It is helpful for ministers of God to assume that **29. TO HAVE BEAUTIFUL SHEPHERDORAL FEET.**

they have the sole responsibility of evangelising the world. It is a good attitude to have even

"How beautiful are the feet of them that preach

though in reality, one person cannot evangelize

the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of

the whole world. This is the attitude that

good things!" (Romans 10:15).

eventually leads people into full-time ministry

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 6

As soon as pastors assume that other people will **36. TO OVERCOME AND BREAK EVERY**

do the work, the work will never get done. The

TRIBALISTIC AND RACIST TENDENCY IN THE

best pastors are those who still love souls. If a **CHURCH.**

pastor does not, he will love other things.

“And the apostles and brethren that were in

Judaea heard that the Gentiles had also received **33.**

HARVESTING OF SOULS IS A SURE SIGN

the word of God. And when Peter was come up

THAT PASTORS ARE NOT DISTRACTED.

to Jerusalem, they that were of the circumcision contended with him, Saying, Thou wentest in to

“But and if that evil servant shall say in his

men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them”

heart, My lord delayeth his coming; And shall

(Acts 11:1-3). Tribalism and racism prevents

begin to smite his fellow servants, and to eat and believers from reaching into some of the harvest drink with the drunken; The lord of that servant fields.

shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of, And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion

37. THE SIGNS OF THE END TIME ARE INTENDED

with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and

TO CAUSE BELIEVERS TO MOP UP AND

gnashing of teeth" (Matthew 24:48-51). As time

COMPLETE THE HARVEST.

passes in every church and ministry there is a

tendency to do things that ministers are not

"And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the

supposed to do. The anointing can lift after a

disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell

while. Distractions that creep into the lives of us, when shall these things be? and what shall

believers can lead to the anointing being lifted. be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the Soul winning and evangelism must remain the

world? And Jesus answered and said unto

central focus to keep pastors from being

them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For

distracted. Building clinics, school, hospitals, many shall come in my name, saying, I am

etc. are good, but can be a sign that the church Christ; and shall deceive many. And ye shall

is becoming or is distracted from the Great

hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be Commission.

not troubled: for all these things must come to

pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise **34. I**

against nation, and kingdom against kingdom:

T IS TO KEEP QUARRELS, HURTS AND

and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and
WOUNDS TO A MINIMUM IN THE CHURCH.

earthquakes, in divers places. All these are the When a church does not do evangelism, people

beginning of sorrows.

begin to become annoyed with many things in

Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted,

the church. A church that is not activity

and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all oriented has nothing to do. However a church

nations for my name's sake. And then shall

that is busy with the work of God, keeps these to many be offended, and shall betray one another,

the barest minimum.

and shall hate one another. And many false

prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many

35. TO

PREVENT

CHURCH

SPLITS

AND

shall wax cold. But he that shall endure unto

DIVISIONS.

the end, the same shall be saved. And this

gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all

the world for a witness unto all nations; and

then shall the end come" (Matthew 24:3-14).

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 7

THE IMPORTANCE OF EVANGELISM / 7

The gospel shall be preached unto all the world

43. HARVESTING SOULS IS THE PRIMARY TASK

then shall the end come. The last sign depends

OF THE CHURCH.

on you.

The Bible says the gospel must be preached

“first”. “And the gospel must first be published **38. THE
LAST WAVE OF MIRACLE POWER IS**

among all nations” (Mark 13:10).

INTENDED TO HELP EVERY SHEPHERD AND

PASTOR TO REAP THE HARVEST OF THE

44. HARVESTING SOULS MAKES YOU A WISE

WORLD.

SHEPHERD AND NOT A FOOLISH SHEPHERD.

39. B

“And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and **ECAUSE
HARVESTING GIVES MEANING TO**

wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler

CHRISTIANITY.

over his household, to give them their portion of You will feel happy when you see the souls won

meat in due season? Blessed is that servant,
for Christ.

whom his lord when he cometh shall find so
doing" (Luke 12:42,43).

40. HARVESTING

IS

ENERGISING

AND

45. EVERY SHEPHERD WHO HARVESTS SOULS

UPLIFTING TO YOUR MEMBERS.

WILL EXPERIENCE DIVINE PRESERVATION.

It gives energy to dull and sleepy members. It creates energy in the whole church when they

Paul had many troubles but the Lord kept him.

begin to win souls. Allow the members to win

When you are doing what God wants you to do,

souls for themselves, it will make them happy

God will preserve you (Psalm 91:14, 2

and energise them.

Corinthians 11:23-25).

41. H

46. A

ARVESTING SOULS INCREASES THE SELF-

HARVESTER

WILL

HAVE

DIVINE

ESTEEM OF CHRISTIANS.

ASSISTANCE IN HIS LIFE.

When a person has an opportunity to win a soul,
“Because he hath set his love upon me,
the person begins to feel a bit righteous. When therefore
will I deliver him: I will set him on
a person thinks of himself as a good person he
high, because he hath known my name” (Psalm
does good things. Praise your members every
91:14).
and any time they win a soul.

47. SOUL WINNING IS THE HEARTBEAT OF
42. IT GIVES A NEW FOUND PLEASURE TO
CHRIST JESUS FOR HIS CHURCH.
CHRISTIANS.

The heart of Christ is the evangelism of the
Any genuine Christian should find pleasure in
world. We need to have the same heartbeat of

winning souls because the Bible says there is joy the Lord.
in Heaven over one sinner that repents. “I say
unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven
over one sinner that repenteth, more than over
ninety and nine just persons, which need no
repentance” (Luke 15:7).

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 8

8

/ CHAPTER 1

48. EVERY MEMBER IN THE CHURCH MUST BE A

avail yourself for the work of the ministry.

MINISTER.

Ecclesiastes 12:1-7. The 'night' can be certain
political/economical situation in a country;

The Bible teaches that saints are expected to do

[wars, curfews, famine, drought, lights-off] that the work of the ministry. “And he gave some,

make it physically possible to pursue any apostles; and some, prophets; and some, ministry work. When you have children. When evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; you have a new well-paid job or business.

For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of These will demand hard work and time.

the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ” (Ephesians 4:11,12).

49. TO AVOID THE MISTAKE OF SOWING ON A TERRAZZO FLOOR.

Sometimes you are preaching to hardened Christians who do not respond. Soul winning will lead you to many people and some of these people will make a commitment to the Lord.

50. EVERY MINISTRY MUST BE AN INDUSTRY.

It must conduct outreaches and be selfsupporting. **51.**

EVERY CHURCH MUST BE A CONTINUOUS

CRUSADE.

A church must regularly do altar calls, and

conduct crusades.

52. THE TIME IS SHORT.

Your life is short. The time to the rapture is

short. People have short lives and they go into eternity (John 9:4). "For what is your life? It is even a vapour, that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away" (James 4:14)

53. THE NIGHT COMETH WHEN NO MAN CAN

WORK.

"The night comes when no one can work" (John

9:4). The 'night' can be old age: age may catch up with you and there will be no strength to

A Focus on Evangelism for Church

Growth

2

goal is to reap the harvest. When we forget the

THE HARVEST OF SOULS

main reason for which the church exists, we

begin to go into error. Sometimes when you talk I am a pastor and not an evangelist, but even as to pastors, you cannot help but realize that soul a pastor, my burden is for souls. The burden for winning is one of the last things on their minds. souls is not just for evangelists! The Lord Jesus How do I know that many ministers do not care

testified of Himself; "I am the good shepherd

about souls anymore? By listening to what they

[pastor]..." (John 10:11). A good shepherd

preach and watching how church services are

means a good pastor. Jesus was the best pastor

conducted. Many ministers hold services

that ever lived and yet He said: "For the Son of without making an altar call for the lost. This man is come to SEEK and to SAVE THAT WHICH

goes to show that the salvation of the lost is not WAS LOST" (Luke 19:10).

a burden on their hearts, for "out of the

A good pastor is one who seeks and saves the

abundance of the heart the mouth speaks".

lost. Some people think that a good pastor just When I see a large crowd, what occurs to me is

thinks about caring for already existing sheep.

the souls that can be saved. After an impressive Do you remember this scripture? "This is a

power display, what about the souls who are

faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptance,

lost? I can see the harvest. I can see the

that Christ Jesus came into the world to save
whitened and ripened harvest fields virtually
sinners; of whom I am chief" (1 Timothy 1:15).
untouched.

God gave the five-fold ministry to the body of
Christ to ensure that the work of Christ

THE IMPORTANCE OF SEEING THE

continues. We have apostles, prophets,

HARVEST

evangelists, pastors and teachers. What is the

duty of these different ministries? The ultimate **1. SEEING
THE HARVEST IN LARGE CROWDS.**

goal for every minister is to win the lost to
Christ.

"That SEEING they may SEE..." (Mark 4:12). I

When you go into the hospital, you will find

realize that many Christians, and even pastors,
secretaries, cleaners and even messengers. All
do not notice the harvest of souls around them.
of these people working in the hospital, have the I see the
multitude of people all around and
ultimate goal of providing health service for the wonder if
these people know Christ!
community. Every secretary employed by the
Sometimes, when driving to church, I see
hospital should know that the letters she types
crowds of people streaming down the road. I
contribute towards this goal. So it is with
often ask myself, "How many of these people pastors,
prophets and teachers. Our ultimate
know Christ as their Saviour? How many will
really die in Christ?

/ CHAPTER 2

How many of them go to church on Sunday

morning, election results from remote towns

morning?" Recently, my wife and I drove

and undeveloped districts began to roll in. This through the
streets of Johannesburg (in South

time the story was different. The ruling party

Africa), which is a very beautiful city. We saw was having a
landslide victory. They won so

many nice buildings. At one point during the

many votes from rural and distant places that

ride, we had a good view of the entire city

they completely swallowed up the victories that

beautifully lit with thousands of lights. As I

the opposition party had achieved in the big
looked down, I suddenly thought to myself that
regional capitals.

there are so many people in the world. South
I looked at the results and noticed the names

Africa is full of souls. Adam and Eve have done of places I
had never heard of. As I watched the a good job in filling the
earth!

elections tip in favour of the ruling party, God I did not only
see the nice buildings, but I saw spoke to me. He said,
"There are many more the vastness of the harvest, which
lay virtually human beings out there in this nation than you

untouched. Dear friend, there are millions of
can see." He added, "The real harvest is out people around
you. I don't know if you notice

there in the remote towns and the villages." that there are
so many precious souls who have

He showed me that masses of people are out
just a short time to live before tasting eternity. there, far

away from the big cities. I thought to How many people will die in Christ? How many

myself that of the thousands of people out there will live again?

in the rural areas, how many really know the Lord!

2. S

Sometimes we become happy when we have

EEING THE HARVEST IN ELECTIONS.

two hundred people in our city church. It is

In 1996, presidential and parliamentary

because we cannot see the extent of the harvest

elections were held in Ghana. Out of the various fields we are dealing with. There are thousands political parties contesting, there were two main and thousands of human beings out there

contenders. After voting ended that Saturday,

beyond the main roads and beyond the cities!

the results from all over the nation began

Who will go there? How will they hear about
trickling in.

Jesus Christ? How can they believe except they
hear? And how can they hear the gospel except

I was awake praying in my study at about 3
someone goes there to preach?

a.m. the next morning when I decided to turn on
the television. The TV station had organised a

“How then shall they call on him in whom

panel of analysts to discuss the election results they have
not believed? and how shall they

as they came in.

believe in him of whom they have not heard?

and HOW SHALL THEY HEAR WITHOUT A

That dawn, I saw the whitened harvest of

PREACHER?" (Romans 10:14).

souls even more vividly. For the few minutes that I watched, election results came in from three major cities. In all these three major

THE HARVESTING OF SOULS AS

cities, the opposition party had won by very

THE PRIMARY ROLE OF THE

large margins. The figures showed several

CHURCH

thousand votes in favour of the opposition party. I thought, "Wow! The opposition seems to be It is easy to get a pastor to go to New York City winning!"

or Copenhagen. However, it is not so easy to get I switched off my television and concentrated

a missionary to go to one of Africa's lesser-known preparing for my Sunday services. By mid-known towns. If pastors saw the enormity of the harvest, perhaps they would realise that we

A FOCUS ON EVANGELISM FOR CHURCH GROWTH / 11

need to concentrate on evangelism. The
did not! He said the Church should go out and
primary role of the Church is not to build
preach the gospel in as many countries as
schools. That is the job of the Ministry of
possible. He told us to travel far and wide with Education.
The principal job of the Church is not the good news of the
kingdom.

to open hospitals. That is the job of the Ministry of Health.
The central task of the Church is not to build orphanages.
These are all good things

2. THE PRIMARY ROLE IS CARRIED OUT BY

and I believe in all of them. But none of these is
PREACHING AND TEACHING.

the primary reason for which God raised up the

Church.

How many churches have degenerated into social clubs and political groups? Someone may think that I am against hospitals and schools

1. THE LAST WORDS OF JESUS EMPHASIZED

being set-up by churches. You are wrong!

THE PRIMARY ROLE OF THE CHURCH.

Setting up schools and hospitals by churches is a good thing. I went to a Catholic school.

The first thing that Jesus told his disciples when Churches run the best schools and hospitals in

he met them was: "...Follow me, and I will make Ghana. What I am saying is that it is not the

you fishers of men" (Matthew 4:19). The whole

primary thing that the Church is supposed to do. idea of taking Peter and John away from their

That is not our chief task. Perhaps it is a

learned trade of fishing was to make them
secondary or tertiary function of the Church.
harvesters of souls.

Every institution must know what its

On a lonely hill with eleven disciples, Jesus

principal role is! Would you be happy if you sent issued his
last emotional command. "And he

your child to school and the main thing he or

said unto them, GO YE INTO ALL THE WORLD,

she did was to attend long prayer services

and preach the gospel to every creature" (Mark

everyday without learning anything? Of course

16:15).

not! The school is supposed to educate the child The last
words of a man are probably the

and not conduct all-day prayer meetings. There

most important words that he will ever speak.

is nothing wrong if the school has a weekly

Some years ago, I read about an aircraft that

service or a daily prayer time. That is a different developed
a serious problem. As it flew over

thing. But every institution has its primary role. some
mountains, the pilot informed everyone

When you make a secondary role the primary

on board that they were going to crash; indeed

function, the institution becomes completely

they crashed and everyone onboard was killed.

confused and irrelevant.

It seemed as if they had about ten or fifteen

There are times when pastors come under

minutes before they eventually crashed. Many

pressure from governments and the community

of the passengers wrote notes and messages to

to change their emphasis. You will hear

their loved ones while they could. I will never important
government officials saying things

forget that scene on television. I couldn't help like, "We
advise the Church to become more

but wonder what those last messages and notes

socially relevant instead of praying everyday." contained.
Anyone who knows he's going away

forever would probably give a very important

You will hear dignitaries calling on Church

message as his last word. leaders; "We appeal to the
Church to extend electricity to this town so that the
contribution So what were Jesus' last words? Did Jesus

of the Church will be felt." "If the Church can say, "Go and
make people rich?" Did he say, "Go dig some bore holes
for this village, its

and build hospitals and schools?" Did he say, relevance to
the society will be appreciated."

"Go and take the reins of political power?" He Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and

/ CHAPTER 2

Dear friend, digging bore holes and providing peace? As people hear the Word of God, do they water for a community is not what makes the not choose peace rather than war? I have Church relevant! That is not our primary job. several former radical student leaders in my The Head of the Church, Jesus Christ, has given church. These people were once politically us clear instructions to GO INTO THE WORLD aflame, fighting authorities over any frivolous AND PREACH! Preaching and teaching is the and vexatious cause they could find. Today they primary task of churches and ministers.

are peaceful born-again citizens serving and

Preaching and teaching the Gospel is what

building their nation. There is no need for the makes the Church relevant. I wish to emphasize

Church to leave its main duties. Dear Christian, this to any politician who intends to make the

let us never forget that we are standing in the

Church what he calls "relevant".

midst of harvest fields - whitened and ripened,

It is because we have lost our drive for soul

ready to be harvested. I greatly respect

winning that people have begun to see us as a

ministers who have stayed with their original

sort of social institution, delivering social needs. call. I recently listened to an evangelist on

When we preach and teach, people are saved

television. This man has conducted several

and their lives are changed. This is our best
crusades worldwide. I listened to him speaking
contribution to our society!
about the harvest and I became excited! I said
to myself, thank God this man has stayed with
the original call."

3. SALVATION DRIVES AWAY CORRUPTION AND WAR.

A Vision to Win the Lost to Christ

What is the greatest canker that has destroyed

I have a vision to win the lost at any cost. It is most African
nations? Is it not corruption?

a vision that has been burning in my spirit. I

Ghana is endowed with riches yet majority of

want to see people saved. I do not think that the our people
are impoverished. Corruption has

answer to humanity's needs can be found in any

left its mark on the masses. The situation is so political solution. Neither colonisation nor

bad that entire shiploads of cocoa can disappear independence can help us. Democracy, "house

on the high seas. How is this possible? A

cleaning" or revolutions are not the answer to

modern form of corruption involving the

the problems of Africa or the world.

inflation of contract figures has surfaced in

Someone asked me whether I did not want to

Ghana. Projects which should have cost sixteen

help people by using my medical profession. I

million dollars, end up costing the nation twenty said to him,

"I really do want to help people but four million dollars.

Where does the eight

I know that I can help them best by giving them

million dollars go? Straight into private pockets!

the gospel." If you give a man quinine tablets Inflated contracts are signed everyday and the

and save his life, what have you really done?

nation loses millions of dollars into the pockets You have extended his life on this earth for a few of vampires.

more days. What about eternity? When he

When people are born again and taught the

stands before God Almighty, the message of

Word of God, they refuse to be involved in

salvation will help much more than four tablets

corruption and other evil deeds. This is one of

of chloroquine. I am helping people much more

the areas by which the Church becomes

by preaching the gospel than by practising

relevant. The preaching of righteousness by the medicine. That is a fact of reality.

church greatly reduces corruption in the nation. Dear friend, I have a vision to plant churches

Isn't Africa the battlefield for many civil wars anywhere I can find people. I want to win the

and conflicts? Is the gospel not a gospel of

lost at any cost. I have a vision to train as many Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 13

A FOCUS ON EVANGELISM FOR CHURCH GROWTH /
13

preachers as possible. I want men and women

who engages in soul winning will begin to

to be as fruitful as they possibly can. I have a discover the
reason for his salvation. Soul

dream that God will use me to reap His harvest.

winning increases the self-esteem of the

Thank God for doctors, teachers and politicians. Christian.

Let them concentrate on their jobs, and I will

concentrate on mine. I am calling on fellow

ministers of the gospel. I am calling their

2. SOUL WINNING GIVES GREAT JOY.

attention to the harvest fields that are ripened

“After these things the Lord appointed other
and waiting for labourers!

seventy also, and sent them two and two before
his face into every city and place... Therefore

THE BENEFITS OF HARVESTING

said he unto them, The harvest truly is great... **SOULS**

Go your ways: behold, I send you forth... And

the seventy RETURNED AGAIN WITH JOY... “

1. SOUL WINNING GIVES MEANING TO

(Luke 10:1-3,17).

CHRISTIANITY.

Anytime you go out there preaching you will
return with joy. There is joy when souls are

I once had a chat with a taxi driver in London. I won. I cannot explain it. Only a mother can

told him I was a Christian, and began to share

explain how she feels after her baby is born. I Christ with him. I also told him about the reality have seen many women struggling in labour,

of heaven and hell. He laughed and asked

but neither pain nor the struggle is able to keep whether I really believed in what I was saying.

them from rejoicing. When you bring people to

He said, "If heaven is real, why don't Christians the Lord, you will discover what it means to

just kill themselves and move on to heaven?" have the joy of the Lord. I cannot explain it to What he was trying to say was that since heaven

you. You have to discover it for yourself.

is such a nice place, and Christians have nothing to do on earth, they should transfer themselves

immediately to heaven.

3. SOUL WINNING ENERGIZES CHRISTIANS.

If indeed, there is nothing for Christians to do I have discovered that my church members

on earth, then this man has a good point.

become energized when they get involved in

However, the reality is that Christians have a lot soul winning. Soul winning leads to church

to do on earth before getting to heaven. We are growth.

supposed to witness and preach the gospel of

Jesus Christ. We must win the lost at any cost. The salvation of millions of people depends

4. SOUL WINNING PREVENTS CHURCH SPLITS.

on us. I'm sorry to say that most Christians have When your church members are engaged in

not found out the reasons for which they were

fruitful activities, they have no time for petty saved. The Bible says that we were saved for a

quarrels that bring divisions. Pastors must

reason-for good works! "For we are his

teach their church members that a soul is a soul,
workmanship, CREATED in Christ Jesus UNTO

and is precious to God. When church members

GOOD WORKS, which God hath before ordained

are conscious of the souls that need to be won,

that we should walk in them" (Ephesians 2:10).

their priorities become biblical priorities.

Christians are backsliding everyday because

Church splits and divisions are avoided. When

they have no purpose for being in the church.

too many Christians are in one place doing

People attend church, but after awhile they drop nothing, it
often generates hurts, quarrels and

out, finding no meaning to church life. Anyone

wounds.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan

/ CHAPTER 2

5. SOUL WINNING MAKES YOU ALIGN

HIM, and honour him. With long life will I

YOURSELF WITH THE HEARTBEAT OF JESUS.

satisfy him, and shew him my salvation" (Psalm
91:14-16).

Some years ago, I had a vision. In this vision, I saw a
human heart covered with blood. The

When you set your love on God to please Him,
heart was beating. God impressed upon my

God says that He will deliver you. I believe that heart that
day that the heart cry of Jesus Christ I am doing the will of
God. Perhaps that is the is harvesting the fields. Jesus did
not leave His only reason why I am still alive. Just like Paul, I
throne for nothing! He came into this world to

have had a few near-death experiences,

save sinners (Luke 19:10).

including near plane crashes and car accidents.

“Are they ministers of Christ? (I speak as a fool) I am more; in labours more abundant, in stripes

6. SOUL

WINNING

GENERATES

DIVINE

above measure, in prisons more frequent, in

SUPPORT.

deaths oft. Of the Jews five times received I

forty stripes save one. Thrice was I beaten with When you win souls you generate divine support

rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered

for all that you are doing. As you read the Bible, shipwreck, a night and a day I have been in the

you will discover that soul winning generates

deep" (2 Corinthians 11:23-25). In all these heavenly joy. There is a heavenly response to things I can speak like Paul and say that God each and every soul won for the Lord. "I say delivered me from them all.

unto you, that likewise JOY SHALL BE IN

"For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor

HEAVEN over one sinner that repenteth, more

life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, than over ninety and nine just persons, which

nor things present, nor things to come, Nor

need no repentance. Likewise, I say unto you,

height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall there is JOY IN THE PRESENCE OF THE

be able to separate us from the love of God,

ANGELS OF GOD over one sinner that

which is in Christ Jesus our Lord" (Romans

repenteth” (Luke 15:7,10).

8:38,39). I see God delivering you now! I see

Churches must know why they exist: to

God helping you in your time of trouble! I see

generate souls for heaven. Embassies exist to

God standing with you because you have set

represent the government from which they

your love on Him!

came. Similarly, churches are heavenly

Do you want to stay in the will of God? Do

embassies.

you want your church to grow? Be a soul winner

today. You will see a difference in the church. | **7. SOUL**

WINNING

LEADS

TO

DIVINE

only see my pastoral job fulfilled when I am able
PROTECTION.

to convert a member into a minister. I want
every member of my church to be a soul winner.

Many pray that God will keep them from evil.

I want them to have fruit to show one day. If

Did you know that divine protection is made

there is no harvesting of souls, there will be no available for
all who take part in doing God's

sheep for the pastor to look after. Every pastor will? Psalm
91 says that, God will keep and

can do the work of an evangelist!

protect you because you have set your love on

Him. "Because he hath set his love upon me,

therefore WILL I DELIVER HIM: I will set him on

high, because he hath known my name. He

shall call upon me, and I will answer him: I WILL

BE WITH HIM IN TROUBLE; I WILL DELIVER

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 15

The Supreme Task of the Church

3

hold marriage seminars to polish the coins.

EMPHASIZING EVANGELISM

More polishing! We have home cell meetings

and do more polishing. The polishing goes on!

Why is it that only a few people get involved in soul
winning? When people start new

We have end of year get-togethers for our

churches, we do not see much soul winning. It

nice Christian brothers and sisters. More

is easier to start a church by "stealing" sheep polishing! All

this while, the one coin is

than by winning souls, because it is easier to
changing colour in the corner. The unbelievers

destroy than to build! Before Jesus went away, are getting
more and more hardened as we

He emphasized the preaching of the gospel to
concentrate on ourselves.

the lost. It is sad to note that, winning the lost It is time for us
to turn our attention to the

has now become a side issue in the Church.

supreme task of the Church: winning the lost at Although the
command to go out and reach the

any cost! It is time for us to harvest the masses lost was a
priority, it has been relegated to the that are waiting for a
preacher. We must avoid

background.

the mistake of polishing, followed by more

Many of us are making the mistake of

polishing, followed by even more polishing of

"polishing the same coins" repeatedly. The the same coin.
Every Christian is first a soul

already established church members are the

winner. Thank God for the gifts of drama and

nine coins you will read about in the passage

singing, but you must first be a witness. After below.
Ministers spend most of the time

you are a soul winner, you may then go on to be

polishing these nine coins over and over again!

a teacher, shepherd, musician, singer or

"Either what woman having ten pieces of silver,
administrator.

if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and
Christians who become singers without being

sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find soul
winners do not understand why they sing.

it? And when she hath found it, she calleth her They often

think that they are supposed to

friends and her neighbours together, saying,

impress people with their nice songs. You are a REJOICE WITH ME; FOR I HAVE FOUND THE

Christian singer and not a singing ChristianPIECE WHICH I HAD LOST” (Luke 15: 8,9). there is a difference! Whatever we find

The lost coin represents lost and dying

ourselves doing in the body of Christ, let us

sinner. Sometimes when I minister in a church,

know that we are first expected to bring souls to I look at the crowd and think to myself, that

the Lord.

these are the nine coins I'm going to polish

again! We bring in anointed teachers and

spectacular prophets to polish our coins. We

/ CHAPTER 3

WAYS OF KEEPING THE FOCUS ON

I appreciate the Swiss, German and Scottish

EVANGELISM

missionaries who came to Ghana many years ago and established the Church. Many of them died of malaria. They would send back

A. AVOIDING THE IMBALANCE

messages saying that all the missionaries sent

I see an imbalance in the work of the Lord. A

were dead. The churches in Europe would

false balance is a terrible thing. The Bible calls respond by sending more missionaries. Many

an imbalance an abomination. "A false balance

missionaries died and others, such as Rev. F.A.

is abomination to the Lord...” (Proverbs 11:1).

Ramseyer (1868-1869), were captured and

Too much emphasis is placed on the already

taken to Kumasi by Ashanti invaders. Many of

established church, to the neglect of a lost and these missionaries such as Johannes Christaller

dying world. It is like ten people trying to lift up achieved remarkable milestones, such as the Twi

a heavy log. Nine of them are at one end of the (a local Ghanaian language) translation of the

log and only one person is at the other end. This Bible, Twi Grammar, a collection of 3,600 Twi

is an imbalance.

proverbs and Twi translations of Christian

doctrinal works. Johannes Zimmerman,

founded the Basel Mission Schools at Osu and

B. RECOGNIZING THE ALARMING STATISTICS

Abokobi (1854). He also made notable translations into the Ga language (another local Some statistics tell us that there are over one dialect).

thousand groups (tribes and races) of people, who have never heard the gospel even once. It All of this means that, European men of God is also said that ninety-four percent of ministers laid down their lives in Ghana for the are preaching to nine percent of the world's establishment of the Church. They did it at a population. What does this mean? It means time when there were no airplanes, electricity, that six percent of all ministers are struggling running water, cars, televisions and telephones. with the remaining ninety-one percent of the

Even now, with many of these comforts readily

world's harvest! It is no wonder that religions available, people are not prepared to go on

like Islam are gaining grounds in large sections similar sacrificial missionary journeys.

of the world.

These apostles came, knowing that their predecessors had died or had been captured and killed. You may curse the White man for the

C. REMEMBERING THE SACRIFICE OF EARLY

slave trade; however, there were some genuine

MISSIONARIES

apostles who brought the gospel to us in Africa. Even in Ghana, how many anointed Charismatic

They learnt our language! They translated the pastors would opt to go to remote parts of the Bible for us! They lived and died amongst a country? After visiting the north of Ghana, I

strange people! All this for the love of Christ!

realized that many people live in abject poverty. Where is this sacrificial love for the gospel and I realized how difficult it must have been for any for our Lord? I have the feeling that heaven will missionary, Ghanaian or otherwise, to live

reveal a host of unknown heroes. The people we

there! Today, people are no longer willing to hail today as great men of God may not be the

make great sacrifices for the expansion of the

ones to receive the laurels on 'prize giving day'

gospel. Dear friend, we need to remember that

in heaven!

people laid down their lives for the

If we in our own country are not prepared to

establishment of the Church.

lay down our lives for this gospel, the Church is not going to expand! It is time for us to send

people out to remote towns and villages where

THE SUPREME TASK OF THE CHURCH

/ 17

Christ is not known. It is time for us to return One minister
was asked, "How did you get

to the days of true missionaries. It is time for into the
ministry?" He answered, "I was never pastors to decide
whether they are called, or

good at anything in school, so I decided to
whether they are just looking for another job
become a priest."

avenue.

If that is the reason why you became a

The G

Graves oof M

Missionaries

minister, you are not likely to carry the burden that Jesus carried! You are not likely to transmit I remember attending a funeral in the Akwapim

the burden of the lost to your congregation. It Mountains of Ghana. Whilst at the cemetery,

is time for us to get back to the primary call of waiting for the burial service to start, I decided the Church. It is time for us to make soul

to take a stroll through the graveyard. I read the winning our main task.

names on some of the tombs. Initially, I thought I would only see the names of the local Akwapim

Soul winning is the main task of Lighthouse

people. But I was surprised to find the names of Chapel International. All choristers in my

Swiss and German people on some of the

church go on evangelistic outreaches. They win

tombstones. I realized that I was looking at the souls and follow them up. I have made them

names of Swiss missionaries who had died on
understand that they are Christian singers and
those mountains a hundred years ago. It struck
not singing Christians! Ushers in my church do
me that these people had paid a great price for
'person-to-person' witnessing. At one time, our the Church
to expand to Ghana.

ushering ministry became very large because
the leader of the ushers often took the ushers

Today, if I do an altar call asking for
out on 'bus-to-bus' preaching.

missionaries to go to certain remote places, I
will get little or no response. However, if I do an Let us
analyse the number of harvest fields

altar call for missionaries to go to New York or and the
number of workers we have. There is a

Paris, I will have a huge response. What is

great imbalance between the harvest fields and

happening? Do we really care about the lost, or the labourers. It is time for us to look at maps are we only concerned about becoming affluent

and find out where the sinners are and go to

and popular pastors in big cities?

them. It is time for the forgotten ones to hear. It is time for the poor ones to hear. It is time for the neglected ones to receive some light. It is **4. NOT SEEING THE MINISTRY AS AN**

time for people to graduate from the university

ALTERNATIVE SOURCE OF EMPLOYMENT

and say, "I want to give the rest of my days to the ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ. I want to I often wonder what people mean when they say

win the lost at any cost!"

they are called to the ministry. Many people

take full-time ministry as an alternative source A M

Mega C

Crusade

of employment. I am NOT in full-time ministry

I once organized a crusade in a prominent park

because I have no other job. I see it as a calling. in my city. An evangelist had travelled all the I see it as something I have to do. I can

way from America to preach at this crusade.

confidently say with Paul, "Woe is me, if I preach When it was about time for the sermon, I

not the gospel." If I wanted to be rich, I would decided to do something unusual. There was a

not be a minister. God blessed me with a very

large crowd present. Everyone was seated in

noble and lucrative profession - the medical

great expectation. I thought to myself that

profession. The ministry of the Lord Jesus

almost everybody in that crowd was a Christian.

Christ is a calling and must always remain a

We had advertised the program on television,
calling.

and Christians had gathered in their numbers. I said to the
pastors around me, "Let's send these Dag Heward-Mills
eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd
2008/05/14 14:02 Page 18

18

/ CHAPTER 3

people out to invite sinners to the meeting." in the same
city. I muse that these people do

Many of the pastors were unsure of what was
not know what they are talking about. I have

happening. I said to them, "The reason for very large and
successful branch churches just a which we are gathered is
to win souls for Christ. few metres from where I am. Most of
these

If there are no lost souls in the crowd, what is pastors used
to work with me at the

the use of this program? Why did we spend all headquarters. When I sensed the potential in this money?" The crowd was sent out and they then to minister, I sent them out to begin happily invited hundreds of hungry souls. Some churches. Most of them have succeeded in might have thought that at such an establishing solid Bible-based churches, and the international forum, doing something like that entire ministry has expanded because of this. was unacceptable. But that night, we reaped a mighty harvest of souls for the Lord.

TWO KEYS TO A GREATER

ANOINTING FOR EVANGELISM

THE PRICE FOR DISREGARDING

THE SUPREME TASK OF THE

1. GAINING BY TRADING

CHURCH

Do you want more anointing on your life? There

1. P

is a process by which anointing and gifts

ERSECUTIONS

increase. It is called "gaining by trading" "...that God is issuing a warning to the Church: "If you he might know how much every man had

don't spread out, I will spread you out myself." GAINED BY TRADING" (Luke 19:15). Let me

Did you know that the Early Church did not fully give you a secret right now! The more you do

obey the instruction to win souls?

God's work, the more the anointing increases.

God has different ways of getting us to obey

Do not forget the story of the master who

Him. When the Early Church refused to go out,

gave his servants ten pounds. He told them,

God allowed a strong persecution to come her

"Occupy until I come." When the master came way. He sent a man, Saul, to harass the Church

back, some of the servants had more than

until the people were forced to travel away from others. Then came the first, saying, Lord, THY

Jerusalem in order to avoid death. "And Saul

POUND [anointing] HATH GAINED ten pounds"

was consenting unto his death. And at that time (Luke 19:16).

there was A GREAT PERSECUTION AGAINST

The pound represents the anointing. The

THE CHURCH which was at Jerusalem; and they

pound represents the gifts that God has given to were all scattered abroad... " (Acts 8:1).

you. That gift supernaturally increases as you

begin working! When you plunge into soul

2. C

winning and evangelism, the anointing on your

HURCH SPLITS

life will double and triple. I see you gaining by Many churches experience splits and painful

trading! I see you gaining a new anointing by

divisions. If you look carefully, you will realize trading with what God has given you! I see you

that many of these painful divisions actually

preaching to thousands and doing miracles!

lead to church growth in the long run. The

I always enjoy going back to the classroom

reason is that more ministers are allowed to

where I began my ministry. Sometimes, I stand

develop their gifts and more churches are

outside the window of the classroom where I

established. Are you waiting for your church to began and stare at the few chairs within it. I

split up before you obey God? I laugh when remember preaching to about ten people. For people criticize me for planting many churches over ten years, I have been at the pulpit,

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 19

THE SUPREME TASK OF THE CHURCH

/ 19

preaching every Sunday and Tuesday. At the beginning, I preached to about five people. But I have definitely gained by trading. I now minister to thousands of people every week. I always thank God for His mercy.

2. GAINING BY KINGDOM PROMOTION

Learn another secret right here! After improving through the secret of gaining by trading, God

will lift you up by another method I call

"kingdom promotion". Gaining by trading makes the pound you have swell up. But when the

master assesses that you have gained

something by trading, you will receive a

"kingdom promotion". A "kingdom promotion" is an elevation that is so lofty that it makes you

marvel at how far the Lord has brought you.

The man who was given authority over ten cities

could not compare his new status with his

former job of trading with ten pounds. "...thou

hast been faithful in a very little, have thou

authority over ten cities" (Luke 19:17). In the day you receive a "kingdom promotion", you will know that God has truly lifted you out of the

dust.

Harvesting the lost is the first and foremost

task of the whole Church. I am talking to

prophets. I am talking to teachers. I am talking to singers. I am ministering to administrators. The gospel is the first thing. We must win the

lost at any cost! "And the gospel must FIRST be

published among all nations" (Mark 13:10).

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 20

Strategies for Effective Evangelism

4

What does this mean: "blood will be required **THE PRINCIPLES FOR** at your hand?" I remember when my father, a **EVANGELISM** lawyer, was the attorney for a man accused of murder. My wife Adelaide, and her friend Rev.

Sackey, were junior lawyers working with my

We must have the attitude that the salvation of

father. It was an interesting case to follow. Both the whole world depends on us. Without this

the families of the accused and the deceased

attitude, we will always assume that some

were present in Court. Before the jury gave its zealous evangelist will do the job.

final verdict, Rev. Sackey had to make a final

Dear friend, there are very few zealous

address in defence of the accused man. The

evangelists today. Evangelists have very little packed to capacity courtroom was tense, as both

support for their work. It seems that it is much families followed the proceedings. All concerned more profitable to be a pastor than to be an

parties wanted to know whether this man was

evangelist. The offerings that are available to guilty or not. What was happening? People

the evangelist cannot be compared to the

were requiring the blood of the slain farmer

offerings that pastors receive from overfed
from the hands of the accused.

Christian millionaires who sit on the pews of the When the
Bible says that God will require the

church. Why would anyone want to be an

blood of sinners at your hand, it simply means

evangelist? It is a truly thankless job and the that you will be
asked to answer for a murder

rewards can only be found in eternity. I believe charge. I am
sure you don't think of yourself as that God divinely blesses
anyone who chooses to

a murderer or a killer. But by refusing to warn win souls and
makes it his life's work. I would

sinners, by refusing to hold crusades and by

like to discuss two principles that are effective refusing to
do door-to-door witnessing, you are

for evangelism.

indirectly assigning people to hell. God says

that He will hold you responsible! That is why

THE PRINCIPLE OF AVOIDING A

you must preach the gospel in every corner, on

MURDER CHARGE

every highway and on every street.

“When I say unto the wicked, Thou shalt surely

1. AVOID A MURDER CHARGE BY PREACHING

die; and thou givest him not warning, nor

THE GOOD NEWS OF THE GOSPEL

speakest to warn the wicked from his wicked

way, to save his life; the same wicked man shall How
beautiful are the feet of those that preach

die in his iniquity; but HIS BLOOD WILL I

the gospel and bring good news! What is good

REQUIRE AT THINE HAND” (Ezekiel 3:18).

news? Is the good news that electricity has

STRATEGIES FOR EFFECTIVE EVANGELISM / 21

been extended to the village? Is the good news

on your soul winning. Let us arise together and that pipe
borne water is now available in your

bring about the return of Jesus Christ to rule

town? Is the good news that we have a new

this world in authority and power.

President? None of these is the good news of

Let soul winning be your chief task. When

the gospel.

you minister in song, let the lost souls be your There is no
news like the gospel of Jesus

target. Dear prophet, when the Lord uses you to Christ. It is
the only answer to the problems of minister in signs and
wonders, remember that

a lost human race. The whole world is confused. signs and wonders are to attract sinners to

If one or two cruise missiles were sold, the

Christ. If signs and wonders are just being used problems of millions of people could be solved!

to attract rich people to your group, you have

There is an imbalance in the distribution of

not understood why God made you a prophet.

wealth. The poor are getting poorer and the

The ministry gifts are not given for you to

rich are getting richer. There seems to be a

acquire nice houses and cars. They are power

curse in certain sections of the earth. Many

instruments for reaping the harvest. When

people cannot make ends meet. In the underpeople come to you with financial and marital developed world, people talk about the global

problems, please direct them first to Christ.

economic crisis and children not having enough

Make sure that they are saved in the Lord.

to eat. In the rich western world, people are

An elderly man once came to see me. He had

worried because some won't have turkey and

a string of problems. He wanted me to pray for

salad to eat at Christmas! Everyone has his or

his clinic, his marriage and his home. He felt

her own problems!

that he needed deliverance, ministration and

What is the good news that these people

prayer! I asked him a simple question, "Are you need?

Everyone needs the gospel. The gospel

born again?" He did not even know what that is good for

the rich and for the poor. The gospel meant! I knew

immediately that this man

is good news for both western and eastern

needed Christ first. I promptly led him in the nations. The preaching of Jesus Christ has sinner's prayer to receive the Lord. It was only power in the land of the communists as well as after that, that I considered his other problems. in the land of the capitalists.

Dear revivalist, I am very happy about the spectacular display of signs and wonders in your **2. AVOID A MURDER CHARGE BY MAKING**

ministry! We have prayed for years that signs **SOUL WINNING YOUR CHIEF TASK**

and wonders would come back to the Church. But for goodness sake, remember why signs and I see a last wave of miracle power coming into wonders are being restored to the Church. They the earth. It is going to help us to reach out to are being restored for the harvest. Please use

the harvest fields. God will support us! The

your ability to gather crowds to win souls. I

power of the Holy Spirit is on us as we set out to have
watched large crowds gather under the

tackle the harvest. Do you know that the

ministry of 'signs and wonder' revivalists. It is rapture will not
occur until the gospel has been pathetic to see them gather
and disperse time

preached to all nations?

and time again, without a single salvation altar call being
made. If you do not do the right thing Jesus gave us signs
of the end. The last and

with your gift, God will give it to somebody else. specific
sign was the preaching of the gospel to Dear friend, we
must win the lost at any cost!

the nations. "And this gospel of the kingdom

shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all
nations; and then shall the end come"

(Matthew 24:14). The end of the world depends

/ CHAPTER 4

THE PRINCIPLE OF AVOIDING

2. THE MISTAKE OF PROCRASTINATION

MISTAKES IN EVANGELISM

The cardinal enemy of all evangelism and

1. THE MISTAKE OF DISTRACTIONS

outreach is the demon of procrastination.

Outreach is often postponed and put off till later. In order to stay focused on soul winning, there

Some people go as far as cancelling their

are several things I have to deal with. One of

scheduled outreach programs. "I will witness to them is distraction. It is very easy to be

him tomorrow," they say. "We will do a crusade distracted from your primary task. The church

next year; after all, there are other pressing
has become so established that sometimes she
problems to deal with." Years ago, I learnt loses sight of
why she exists. As a full-time
something very important from a Full Gospel
minister, I try to stay focused on my calling. I Businessmen's
Fellowship meeting. I was
believe in interaction between churches.
invited to be the main speaker at a breakfast
However, there are times when those
meeting. When I finished ministering, I sat
interactions can be distractive. Contrary to
down on stage as they concluded the meeting
traditional belief, it has been shown that a lot of with some
announcements. One of the
trans-church interaction does not lead to church
announcements struck me and the Lord spoke to

growth. Hurts, wounds and quarrels have been

me at that moment. They announced that their
generated through some of these interactions.

next outreach was to be held in a month's time.

Pastors end up spending a lot of time ironing out Right
there, the Lord showed me that these

their differences, and all that time could have

people had planned a rigid schedule of monthly
been spent fulfilling the primary call.

outreaches that were not negotiable. They were
not negotiable in the sense that they could not

Recently, our church was attacked by a mob

be postponed or cancelled. The speakers for

of individuals brandishing sticks and stones. We their
meetings were sometimes scheduled a

had a serious confrontation with them and many

year in advance. Whether there was a tidal

people got hurt in the process. The scene was wave, economic upheaval or a political played back on national television and many earthquake, the outreach was going to come on.

people got to know about it. I was surprised,

From that moment, I became convinced that

though not shocked to hear when some

fixing an inflexible monthly outreach for every

Christians said: "It serves them right!" Many fellowship and ministry in my church was the

people are jealous of their brother's success, and way forward. There are many cares and

get into conflicts like Cain and Abel did. This is problems of this life.

very natural and so I have learnt to stay in my

corner and do the work of God.

Many people are struggling to pay school

fees, build houses and buy food to eat. Many

Conflicts and divisions within the church may

people have marital problems and do not know

also distract you from your primary goal of

how peace is going to come to their homes.

reaching the lost. If your church is involved in a They say,
"How can I think of evangelism when major internal conflict,
I will give you a

I have so many problems?" "And the cares of this
suggestion. Start outreach immediately! Don't

world... choke the word..." (Mark 4:19). Dear

say; "I will wait for the problem to resolve before Christian
friend, do not let the cares of this

I embark on evangelism." Embarking on

world choke the call of God on your life. I see outreaches
will help to turn attention away from you rising up in spite of
every weight and

the problem.

difficulty in your life! He that winneth souls is wise! Be wise now! Win a soul today!

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 23

STRATEGIES FOR EFFECTIVE EVANGELISM / 23

The soul you bring to the Lord may become a

have taken over large sections of many

blessing to you in different ways! "...He that

countries. The night has fallen in these places. winneth souls is wise" (Proverbs 11:30).

That is why we need to take advantage of every

opportunity. Many people think that peace will

always prevail. Look at countries like Liberia

3. THE MISTAKE OF STRUGGLING WITH

and Zaire, which enjoyed many years of relative

UNRIPENED HARVESTS

peace. Perhaps we did not know that it was

daytime in those places. As I am writing this

It is a mistake to try to harvest fields that are not textbook, there is war in the former Zaire. I

ready. Every soul winner must know that God's cannot go there and I would not like to send

harvest fields are ripe at different times. Doors anybody there. The night has come when no

to certain regions are divinely opened for a one can work in Zaire.

season. After a while, these doors swing shut.

In some Western countries like Switzerland,

One day Jesus said something prophetic. He

Christians are not permitted to preach on the

said, "I must work while it is day for the night streets or to hold crusades as freely as we do in will come when no one can work." No matter Ghana. The police have questioned our Swiss

how anointed or gifted you are, you will not be

pastor during gospel concert outreaches.

able to work at night. "I must work the works of Meanwhile, occult and witchcraft shops are

him that sent me, while it is day: THE NIGHT

springing up freely all over Switzerland. Many

COMETH, WHEN NO MAN CAN WORK" (John

parts of Europe are hard ground for the gospel.

9:4). Jesus spoke of a season when no one

The spirit of atheism is so entrenched that the

would be able to do God's work. He said a time

preaching of the gospel now looks absurd.

would come when no one would be able to

evangelise anymore. Take a look at the global

However, there are many places where the

harvest field; you will find that the night has

night has not yet fallen. It is easier to preach fallen on certain sections of the globe. It is now the gospel of Jesus

Christ in these places. Even impossible to harvest the fields in those parts of in nations where the gospel is permitted, you

the world.

will find that some sections of the population are more open to the gospel.

Look at the Islamic nations of the world.

There are millions of people under the cloud of

My message is simple: stay with the ripened

strict Islamic rule. Christianity is virtually

harvest. Go where the doors are open.

forbidden in many of these places. It is very

That is why I love preaching to young people.

dangerous to preach the gospel in Moslem

Every year I hold special programs in each of the countries.

Do you remember the days of the

universities in Ghana. I enjoy preaching in

Soviet Union? Communism stamped out all true

secondary schools. I see such a positive church life.

response from the young people. The young

Many Russians died without hearing the

people are my ripened harvest.

gospel of Jesus Christ because it was

technically, legally and physically impossible to Example
oof aan U

Unripened H

Harvest

preach the gospel over there.

I remember speaking with an eighty-year old

man at a wedding reception. During the

Look at sections of Africa today. Many African

wedding service, I had preached a sermon on

nations are battlefields. I cannot send

salvation. This man was in the congregation
somebody's husband or father to certain
and had heard all that I had said.

countries in Africa. How would I explain to the wife if the
pastor got killed? It is impossible to He called me aside at
the wedding reception

drive through certain African nations. Rebels

and said to me, "I want you to know something." Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 24

24

/ CHAPTER 4

"What is it, sir?" I asked.

student and he was a law student, but neither

He answered, "I want you to know that I will medicine nor
law could drown our divine call

never change!"

and desire to win more people to Christ. I am

reproducing below, four memorable letters my

"Oh!" I responded.

friend, the evangelist wrote to me. As you read He continued, "I am eighty-years old and I

them, I believe you will be inspired to launch out will never change! I want you to know that I will into the harvest.

never be born again! I am a traditionalist, I

1. Baptism of Zeal

belong to the Anglican Church and I will never

2

be born again!"

. Dreaming about Evangelism

3

I was taken aback! I had never heard anybody

. I'm With You

speak like that. This man was saying that he

4. Let's Die Preaching

was hardened and resistant to the gospel.

There are many people like that. Preaching to

THE LETTERS

them yields very little result.

Stay with the ripened and whitened harvests.

God will bless your evangelistic efforts. The

A Baptism of Zeal

poor are often more open to receive the gospel

29-5-1986

than the rich. Therefore, preach more to the

poor than the rich. When you spend time on

Dag,

unripened harvests, you will become

If ever we need a baptism from heaven, it

discouraged with evangelism. You will find it

should be a baptism of zeal. "The zeal of thine fruitless and a waste of time. Stay with the

house has consumed me." We really need to be ripened harvests. God has given them to you!

eaten up dry with a passionate passion. A

Win the lost at any cost!

burden that would make us uncomfortable until

we see and get men saved from the blackness of

LETTERS OF A SOUL WINNER

darkness into the kingdom of His dear son. This should be our waking thoughts and sleeping

As far back as I can remember, I have always

dreams.

had a vision to win souls for Christ. During my We really need the love that is blind to all the early days at the university, I met a law student possible dangers of the mission. Love that

called E.A.T. Sackey. He happened to be a

ignores personal safety, disregards the odds

classmate and a friend of my wife, so naturally
against it, drops "sacrifice" from its vocabulary, we became
good friends. I soon discovered that

requires no crutches, ignores all dangers and is he and I
had similar interests like soul winning. intolerant to
idleness.

I believe that is what drew us together in
ministry. I am glad that we are both in the

Remember that the master went out at the
ministry today. Although my calling is to pastor, ELEVENTH
HOUR and He found some men still

my hobby is to win souls and organize crusades!
IDLING in the market places. May God help us!

I enjoy playing the organ and drums at

In this eleventh hour, the church seems to be
crusades. I feel very happy when I see the lost idling,
careless of its responsibilities. I'm really being preached to.

doubtful whether I'll want to be part of this

system. I'm beginning to believe that it is not I recently discovered some of the letters he

the sin of the world that is making the Church

wrote to me when we were both students in the

sick, but rather the sin and unconcern of the

university in 1988. At the time, I was a medical Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 25

STRATEGIES FOR EFFECTIVE EVANGELISM / 25

Church that is making the world sick. I'm getting **Dreaming
about Evangelism**

fed up with complacency in the church. I'm

filled with Holy anger - against the devil, against c/o C 52

sin, against our unbelief AND also against the

An/Sarbah Hall

Church.

1987

Everything in the world is broken confidence in government,
confidence in the Hi Brother Dag,

dollar, marriages are breaking up and teenagers

"I thank my God upon every remembrance of

are breaking up their minds with drugs. All is

you." Well since you have so much to do in broken - except
one thing, the hearts of the

these crucial times, I had better write just a

believers. But I believe that we need broken

note, and not a letter.

hearts to face this colossal mess. Weeping is a command.
But there should be action after that

I always thank God for the mission God has

(Joel 2:7).

called us to. Yesterday God told me clearly that I had better
get serious with this ministry

The present lethargy in the Church is almost

because the time is short, and I know you agree

unpardonable. I need to bear a broken heart
as well. Dag, I am bent on seeing the mighty
over the coldness in the church. Yay!! The
hand of God in our ministry. I'll never be
fields are really white.

satisfied with anything short of that, and God

DAG, LETS BIND OUR HEARTS TO THE

Himself knows. As we launch out, I'm so certain
REACHING OF THE UNREACHED. We need to

of the fact that God will be confirmed, so that
become impervious to the opinions of others

what was said of Christ, "that a man approved about our
zeal. We should not care what it

of God by many signs and wonders" would also would cost
us to be burnt out for God. Whether

be said of us and the ministry; so that man's

we are flattered or fattened, esteemed or

faith will not rely on the wisdom of men but the despised,
condemned a fool or a philosopher,

power of God.

through evil report or good report, kisses or

I know that we really do a lot. I see you as an curses, we
should be set to do the will of Him

answer to a need in my life. You might not

who sent us. We need to move out and away

understand this very well, but I hope Maame

from the centralised system we seem to be

would explain it further. THE HOLD OF

having in Accra.

EVANGELISM ON ME GETS STRONGER WITH

The Church is founded with showmanship,

EVERY PASSING DAY. IT NEVER LESSENS. I

competition, "holding the form of religion but DREAM OF IT, WAKE UP WITH THAT DREAM

denying the power thereof." (2 Timothy 3:5). AND GO TO BED, WITH IT STILL OCCUPYING

Although the Pharisees prayer is always seen as
THE GREATER PART OF MY MIND.

not good enough - ("God I thank Thee I am not I know that God will lead us by His own Spirit

like other people: swindlers, unjust, adulterers, and we shall see with our own eyes utterly,

etc.") How many church folks can pray such many coming to taste for the first time "the prayers anyway? May God help us!

unspeakable gift." Whatever the Holy Spirit tells I pray, like Habakkuk did, "LORD, IN YOUR

you and whatever leading He gives you, be sure

WRATH, REMEMBER MERCY."

that I'll agree with you. Dag, we have to make

it, we can make it, and we will make it in Jesus'

Love to all.

name. Well, for the sake of formality let me just EATS

wish you success in your exams. You're a

stranger to failure.

Co-Worker

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 26

26

/ CHAPTER 4

Regards to Asamoah, Stanley, Donkash and

Let's Die Preaching

all those who call on the Lord from a pure heart. Grace and
peace be multiplied unto you.!

C47 An/Sarbah

planned coming to church there on Sunday but

Legon

I can't because I'm supposed to preach at
Nautical College. I'll be there the next Sunday. 20/6/86

Love from Cynthia, of course.

Hello Brother Dag,

Affections

Only the Holy Ghost can reveal to you what's
been going on in my heart since I came from

Brother T.

Korle-Bu. Like I said, I never knew that you had I hope that
after exams you'll be free enough

such a vision at all. I really bless God for you with the
permission of M so that we can talk and and for making us
to know each other in these

pray for these times.

times when so many believers are seeing the
2nd coming of Christ and the end of the age as
only subjects for rare curiosity. The hope of

Christ's return is not certainly an escapist

clause. It's not an alibi for non-involvement. To **I'm With You**

the contrary, it's a spur to holiness, to

evangelism and to obedience. It's a maturation

Pastor,

to make God's words on earth OUR OWN, for as

I thank my God upon every remembrance of

Jesus said "Occupy till I come" (Luke 19:13). you. In fact, you mean so much to me, and I

One man said we are to behave and give and

don't feel worthy to be a co-worker with you.

love and work as though Jesus Christ died

However, God has considered my low estate and

yesterday, rose today and is coming again

given me favour in your sight. Henceforth all

tomorrow. Surely, the greatest need of the men shall call me blessed!! Please don't let Church today is not more members, more Maame tell you that these are my usual and buildings, more money. The supreme issue is normal raps. I mean this with all my heart and missions and evangelism, repentance and God is my witness. Well Pastor, I have great revival. It is not great strength or great wealth confidence in you as my Pastor and I know we that Christ calls for in His Church on the eve of are a terror to the kingdom of the devil and a His coming. It is great faithfulness to Him and great embarrassment to demons. Hallelujah. great obedience to His will and to the We're going to work together, walk together and opportunities He gives us.

be an unflinching threat to the negative spiritual world.

DAG, LET'S DIE PREACHING! Let's give our

whole heart to it. Let's make it our own

And I also wish to use this occasion to

business so that we can say with Paul, "My

reaffirm my pledge and commitment to you. I

Gospel". It makes a lot of difference. Let's be want you to know that, you can trust me to the

pliable tools in the hands of the Master. He

last degree. I'm very stable and settled in mind, really needs us. I'm dying to see next term

purpose, and objective. Glory to Jesus!! I really come. Our, at long last, sign-wonder-miracle

wish I could come home and give you a birthday

which we have desired is near us!! Glory.

hug, but where I am, I'm restrained and

inhibited by our perceiving circumstances. I'm

I can see my own come to know God, I can

with you in the spirit any way.

see the power of God present to lead, and to see
establishment and abundance in the kingdom of

Bro. T.

God. Glory!!

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 27

STRATEGIES FOR EFFECTIVE EVANGELISM / 27

Dag, I'm quite sorry if I've not been able to

express myself quite well. The Spirit will reveal it to you. I
have a burden I cannot describe. It keeps bubbling in my
heart and belly. The word

of God is like fire in my bones. Oh, the world is waiting for
us. There's a command from above:

"Go ye unto all the world". There's a cry from beneath:
"Father Abraham send somebody to

preach to my relatives," and there's a call from without
"Come over to Macedonia and help us". WE SHALL

SURELY DO IT, IF EVEN IT

MEANS SACRIFICING AND INVESTING OUR

LAST PENNY INTO IT, OR EVEN WALKING
OVER BROKEN BOTTLES.

And the God of All Grace shall see us
through. Regards from my beloved C.
EATS.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 28

Keys to the Harvest

5

you will be anointed when you pray. If you are

HOW TO UNLOCK THE

not prayerful, people will just tell you, "I see **HARVEST**

your point, but I don't agree with you." All your preaching will be like water dripping off a duck's back. Why do pastors struggle and fight over sheep?

back! I'm speaking to pastors now! Mobilize the Why do pastors want to have members from

entire church to pray. Mobilize the entire

other churches in their church? Why do pastors

church to fast. Pray for church growth. Pray for start churches by breaking up other churches? I

salvation. Pray for people to become born believe it is because they do not know the keys again. You will have tremendous results. A

to the harvest. Let me share two important keys pastor's job is not just to preach and teach, but with you.

to lead the sheep. You must lead the sheep into outreaches and soul winning. They will be

blessed when they have something to do with

1. THE KEY OF MASSIVE ORGANIZATION

their spiritual energy.

There are more than enough souls waiting to be

Organize crusades, breakfast meetings, doorsaved. There are not enough buildings to to-door witnessing, street evangelism and

contain the harvest if it were reaped. Unlock the concerts that win souls. Involve the whole

harvest with the key of massive organization.

church and discover the joy of soul winning. On What do I mean by massive organization?

one of the Sundays, send out your members to

Pastors must mobilize their church members to

bring in anyone they can find on the streets.

have massive organized prayer, massive

The following week, organize 'Operation Bringorganized fasting and massive organized Your-Family'-that is, a Sunday when everyone

outreaches. How utterly boring it must be if a brings his or her household to church. Then

Christian's life is just listening to a thirty-minute plan for

Sundays when you can have "Operation sermon every week. For goodness sake, there Bring-Your-Colleagues". The whole church will must be more to Christianity than being a pew invite their co-workers to church. You will warmer. Christians will find satisfaction when experience tremendous church growth. they fast and pray for souls. Do you know why One day, find out how many members of your many people do not attend prayer meetings? It church were saved in the church. As you do is because the pastor himself does not get more soul winning, you will find out that more involved. Fasting and prayer is the key that and more of your members will come in through removes scales from a sinner's eyes. When you soul winning.

pray before witnessing, you will have better results. People will be saved! Just like Jesus, 28

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 29

KEYS TO THE HARVEST / 29

It is better to have church growth through in a part of Europe. I was most excited when he soul winning than through the transfer of angry said that seventy thousand people had written and discontented members from other churches. back responding to Christ through the books. That is anagkazo at work - forcing the gospel into every home! He was using every means

2. THE KEY OF "ANAGKAZO"

available to push the gospel into rebellious "Anagkazo" is a Greek word which means "to European letterboxes.

compel, to force, to drive, to necessitate, to

Dear friends, our gentle Christian smiles have

threaten and to use any means at your disposal" little effect in a hostile world filled with sceptical to convince someone (Luke 14:23). You will

people. People do not trust anything or anyone!

discover that Jesus used the word "anagkazo" Africans thought they could trust their leaders. when he was speaking about evangelism. The

Then came African dictators, who like vampires, master sent out his servants to anagkazo anyone sucked the wealth of their nations. Americans

they could find on the streets, highways, hedges thought they could trust their president and

and in the gutters. "And the lord said unto the

then came the presidential scandals. People

servant, Go out into the highways and hedges,

thought they could trust the engineers and

and compel [anagakazo] them to come in, that my pilots and then came the TWA, Swissair, Kenya house may be filled” (Luke 14:23).

Airways and the Concorde crashes. Many Many of those originally invited to the party

people trusted pastors and then came the teledid not bother to come. What is Jesus trying to evangelists' scandals.

tell us? The Lord is showing us that gentle

Folks are sceptical about the solutions we

invitations will not reach the lost. We have to offer through Christ. It is time for us to rise up use any other means at our disposal. Our

with the key of anagakazo and bring in the

churches will be empty if we do not use the key

harvest. Let us use every means available, such of anagakazo.

as invitations, entreaties and warnings. Let us Earlier in this

textbook, I spoke of how we

use the radio, television and the print media.

organized an international crusade at a

Let's go out there to a dying world and give

prominent park in our city. Many souls were

them the good news of salvation. If someone's

saved during those three days. One of the keys

house was on fire and you could see that he was

that we used was the key of anagkazo. When

about to perish, would you give him a gentle

the crowd had gathered, we gave a command to

nudge or would you shake him out of his sleep?

the old and young alike. We told them to go out Win the lost
at any cost! Win the lost if it means into the streets where
the prostitutes and

using 'Anagkazo'.

broken-hearted were and bring them in. There

was a clear command, "Do not return to the
crusade alone. You must bring a soul with you!" **3. THE
KEY OF FOLLOW UP**

I went out myself with the visiting American
When a church begins to practise follow-up, it
evangelist, and together we brought back some
retains the converts it gets from evangelism.
people to the crusade grounds.

Follow-up leads to retention of souls.
We are not trying to impress anybody. We are
Without a follow-up ministry, evangelism is
trying to obey our Master's command. Many
virtually a waste of time, money and resources.
things that are impressive to man are not
All our efforts will be in vain. Every church
impressive to God. I heard one evangelist

must develop an effective follow-up ministry
describing how he had printed several million
that deals with the souls that come to the Lord
books and had them distributed to every home

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 30

30

/ CHAPTER 5

There are some common mistakes to avoid in
people who were serious about Christ. “and
follow-up.

the things thou has heard about me from many

a. Preventing the Abandonment of New

witnesses, the same commit to faithful men ,
who shall be able to teach others also” (2

Converts

Timothy 2:2).

The follow-up ministry is a scientific way of preventing the loss of converts. So much

THE REWARDS FOR SOUL

energy is spent in winning the lost. A

WINNERS

proportional amount of time and resources must

be spent to retain the harvest. One of the

saddest things I saw in the hospital, was a little **1. STARS FOREVER**

baby that had been abandoned by its mother.

The mother had gone through nine months of

“And they that be wise shall shine as the

pregnancy, struggled in the labour ward and

brightness of the firmament; and they that turn

finally delivered a bouncing baby girl.

many to righteousness as the stars for ever and

ever" (Daniel 12:3). God has promised in His

When no one was watching, this lady slipped

Word that those who win souls and those who

out of the labour ward and vanished. What was

turn many lives to Christ will enjoy a permanent going to
happen to that baby? Her future lay in status of stardom in
heaven. The glory of the

the hands of fate. I felt particularly sorry when film stars and
the pop stars of this world is

the nurses had to ask some of the lactating

fleeting. Some of these stars were so famous

mothers to donate some milk to the baby. Let

that everyone in the world knew them. Yet, a

me also ask this: What is going to happen to all few years
down the line, they were forgotten.

the souls who come to the Lord? Follow-up is to Their
names are not mentioned anymore. They

new converts as breast-feeding is to babies.

are actually no longer stars. God has promised

If the church were to do follow-up, and retain

every soul winner that he will be a star forever. the people we won, the church would

Thank God that your heavenly stardom will not

experience major growth. Planting churches

be a temporary one. There are several other

where crusades and evangelism have taken

special rewards that are listed for those who

place is another major part of follow-up. Followlived and worked for Jesus. up also involves prayer for the converts that

have been won to the Lord. "My little children, **2. DINNER AT THE TREE OF LIFE**

of whom I TRAVAIL [pray] in birth again until

Christ be formed in you" (Galatians 4:19).

"He that hath an ear, let him hear what the

spirit saith unto the churches; to him that

You must travail for your souls in prayer.

overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, That is how to follow them up spiritually. After which is in the midst of the paradise of God”

spiritual follow-up, you must visit them. New

(Revelation 2:7). There is going to be a special converts are established through visitation. In occasion where dinner will be served at the Tree my church we do not only have counsellors but

of Life. Some of us will be invited. Do you

we have people who go to the homes of the

remember when there was an important

converts as well.

function to which you were not invited? How

b. One common mistake people make when

painful it was! Make sure that you are invited to the do follow up is to waste time on nonthe dinner at the Tree of Life. These things look serious and “unsaved” converts.

like insignificant prizes. One day, it will matter whether you have them or not.

Paul told Timothy to spend time on serious

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 31

KEYS TO THE HARVEST / 31

Everyone that overcomes in the ministry will

5. HIDDEN MANNA

receive this special invitation.

“...to him that overcometh will I give to eat of

THE HIDDEN MANNA...” (Revelation 2:17).

3. BECOMING A MEMBER OF THE ROYAL

What is hidden manna? Of what use is this

FAMILY OF HEAVEN.

hidden manna to my life? Dear friend, you do

not know what pertains in heaven. Perhaps

“...Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give

those who have this hidden manna will have

thee a crown of life” (Revelation 2:10). A crown some great advantage in heaven.

separates royalty from the commoners! If you

think there are classes on earth, please get

When you are a child you do not know the

ready for heaven. If you think the differences

significance of certain things. You do not know between the Royal Family and the rest of us

the importance of being an American citizen. It commoners are too great, then get ready!

means nothing to you as a child, but if you were Fortunately, you and I have a chance to possess

a grown up you would probably appreciate

a crown and become royalty in heaven. You will

having U.S. citizenship. Perhaps the hidden

have a chance to be a part of the royal family in manna will

be like this - an object of great

heaven. Missionaries who have been faithful
importance that you will discover only upon
unto death can expect to be members of the
arriving in heaven.

royal family of Heaven.

6. THE WHITE STONE

4. ESCAPING DAMAGE FROM THE SECOND

“...And will give him A WHITE STONE, and in
DEATH.

the stone a new name written, which no man

“He that hath an ear, let him hear what the

knoweth saving he that receiveth it” (Revelation spirit saith
unto the churches; He that

2:17). What is this white stone and what can it overcometh
SHALL NOT BE HURT of the second

do for me? Once again, we will probably

death” (Revelation 2:11). It seems that some discover its value when we arrive in heaven. I people will be hurt by the event of the second can imagine why you don't think much of this death. In other words, they will have some white stone. After all, what is a stone on earth? damage as they pass through this experience. But I tell you, it may be the one thing that The Bible teaches us that some people will be everyone in heaven longs for. Don't be jealous saved as through fire. “If any man's work shall if I have a white stone and you don't! be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; YET SO AS BY FIRE” (1

7. APPOINTMENTS OVER NATIONS

Corinthians 3:15). To be saved through fire

means that everything gets burnt up but the

“And he that overcometh and keepeth my works

individual survives. Although you are saved you unto the end, to him will I give power over the

experience great loss to your property and

nations” (Revelation 2:26). I am happy to

personal possessions. Everyone that overcomes

announce to you that, appointments as rulers

has this great promise. You will not be hurt or over the different countries of the world will be experience damage through the process of the

given to people who do the work of the Lord.

second death. I hope you see your advantages

Perhaps you will be the President of Mexico.

piling up as you overcome in the ministry.

Perhaps you will be appointed over Fiji. You will sit on a throne and have an unbelievable status. I was amazed when I read Rick Joyner's "The Final Quest". All sorts of

/ CHAPTER 5

glorious thrones. He described how the least of **10. A
DIVINE RECOMMENDATION FOR HEAVEN.**

these thrones were greater than any earthly
throne.

“He that overcometh... I WILL CONFESS HIS
NAME before my Father, and before his angels”

People were rulers over cities on earth and
(Revelation 3:5). Upon arriving in heaven, you
others were rulers over the affairs of heaven.

may or may not receive a special

Others still were rulers over the affairs of the
recommendation by Jesus to the Father. In the

physical creation, such as the stars and galaxies. army for

instance, after a war is over, you may

How real these little scriptures had become!

be recommended by your Commanding Officer.

May we not miss our thrones. Win the lost at

If you are recommended to the government for

any cost and you will be appointed over nations!

your bravery, you receive awards like a Purple

Heart or a Congressional Medal of Honour. Dear

8. A MORNING STAR

friend, recommendations are going to be made

after the last battle is over. Will your

“And he that overcometh and keepeth my works

Commanding Officer have anything on which to

unto the end... I will give him THE MORNING

recommend you? I pray so! In receiving this

STAR” (Revelation 2:26,28). This morning star

award, you will be taken to the Father in the
is one of the rewards that we will only
presence of angels and be highly commended to
understand in heaven. What the morning star
the Father for your good works. This will be
will do for you, no one knows. I assure you,
done in the presence of angels and the hosts of
however, that when you get to heaven you will
heaven. You can understand why you would be
be glad if you have a morning star.

respected by all and sundry. If Jesus singles you out and
says to the Father, "This was a special son who did more
than his share, please accord

9. HEAVENLY CLOTHING

him a special status in heaven." I tell you, man, you are
covered! It is not everyone who will

"He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed

receive such a recommendation. Dear

in WHITE RAIMENT...” (Revelation 3:5).

Christian, please aim for these glorious rewards. Special clothes will be provided for special

Win the lost at any cost and you will be

people who overcome in the ministry. At a

recommended by Jesus to the Father.

graduation ceremony in most universities, the

robes that are worn have a meaning. They

signify your achievements and they signify your

11. DIVINE LABELLING

rank in the academic world.

“Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the For instance, three bars on the sleeve of the

temple of my God, and he shall go no more out:

robe often indicate a doctorate degree. As we

and I will write upon him the name of my God,
move about in heaven, those who have these
and the name of the city of my God, which is
special robes will be distinguished in their
new Jerusalem... and I will write upon him my
heavenly ranks by their achievements on earth.
new name" (Revelation 3:12). Dear friend,
Mind you, these robes are not given to everyone
people buy names all the time. A MacDonald's
but to "him that overcometh". Win the lost at name or
franchise is acquired for a lot of money. any cost!
Polo shirts, t-shirts, belts and shoes carry names that make
people buy them. It is not strange
that one of the rewards given to some privileged people will
be to have the label of God's name on them.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 33

Perhaps your robe will be labelled El' Shaddai.

God that the burden will come upon your

Perhaps your designer clothes will be labelled

people. I pray for the financiers, that you will Elohim. May be your belt will be labelled

anoint them and give them the hearts of soul

Jehovah Nissi. When people recognize this

winners. I pray for the supporters and the

powerful signature on you, you will be

helpers who help us in the ministry. They are

distinguished from others in heaven.

people who assist us to do your Great

Commission. O God, I am praying for them

today. Holy Spirit, open the eyes of your people **12.**

HEAVENLY POSITIONS

and let us see the harvest that is ripe and

"To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with waiting for us.
Help us to notice the lost,

me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and

walking aimlessly around us. Let us see how

am SET DOWN WITH MY FATHER IN HIS

people are wandering about as sheep without a

THRONE" (Revelation 3:21). Promotion into

shepherd.

unbelievable heights awaits you as you do God's

Jesus, I pray that you will walk in the midst of will. You will
be elevated to the highest of

your people and touch our eyes and hearts

positions according to this Scripture.

again. Let us know why we are alive! Reveal to Perhaps
you don't know the value of being on

us what we are supposed to be doing. O Lord

a throne. After all, you have never been on

Jesus, I pray with all my heart. I cannot show anything like a throne on earth. Perhaps you them, but you can. Holy Spirit, you can show think you can manage without such a privilege. your people what you want. Lord I cannot Don't let the devil deceive you. You must not transmit it to them but you can. Father, in the miss this great reward. You must win the lost at name of Jesus, let your work be done and let any cost!

your kingdom come. Let your work be more important to us than any thing else. Let souls begin to be harvested. Let the finances come in

A Prayer for God's People

to support this great effort. Give us a heart, Lord Jesus, I pray for your people. I pray with Heavenly Father, for souls. Help us to win the all my heart for everyone who reads this

lost at any cost. Give the pastors a heart for soul textbook. I pray that you will transmit into their winning. As we shepherd your sheep, let us

hearts the burden that you have O Lord. Show

never forget why we are shepherds. Help us to

them the reason why you created the Church be more like you who came to seek and to save the reason why we exist. And the reason why

that which was lost. I pray in the name of Jesus. you brought us together as a Church. Show us

Thank you Lord. Amen! The following is a

O Lord the reason why we gather each time.

prophecy God gave me for you.

Help us to know that it is not to show off our

A Prophecy for the Church

new dresses, our new suits and our new shoes.

Show us I pray, O Lord! Reveal it to each person Today, certain people are stars in this world. O

who reads this textbook. I cannot explain it to Lord you have shown us clearly that in the days

them, Lord. I have done my best. I have spoken to come, different people are going to be stars. and I have written, but it is you, Holy Spirit, who They that win souls and they that turn many to

can reveal it to the people.

righteousness shall shine as the stars forever.

Lord, reveal yourself. Select the evangelists

They are going to be the people that know their

you are looking for. Find the people you are

God. The stars are going to be people that have searching for to help you accomplish this great

turned many to righteousness. Yea, they shall

work! I see a vast harvest before us. I pray O

be those who have contributed to the winning

and reaping of souls to the kingdom of God.

/ CHAPTER 5

They shall be those who have brought in the harvest, saith, the Spirit of the Lord.

This is my commission to the church. This is the great commission to the church and the people of God. This is the work that I have

called you to do. To go out there and win them. Say not, "It is not yet time." Say not, "I will do it next year." For the fields are white and the harvest is ready. For the people are waiting in their great numbers to be harvested and to be won to me. Yea, Islam is not the way, the truth and the life. No one, no one cometh unto the

Father but by me.

Therefore, take this message to the world.

Take the Word of God which is like a hammer, saith the Lord. Take the Word of God, which is

like a fire, and go forth with that fire. Go forth with the hammer. Go forth in the power of my

Word. For my Word shall go and shall not return unto me void but it shall accomplish those

things which it has been sent to do, saith the

Spirit of God.

Listen to me, the stars are going to change.

They are going to change. The Lord is saying

that there is something in it for you. There is a future for you. Do not be short-sighted. Do not see only today, but see the years ahead. See

eternity! You can shine like a star in eternity. Eternity will begin, it will begin shortly. It will begin soon, saith the Spirit.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 35

SECTION II

Introduction to Missions

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 36

A Brief History of Missionary Work

6

THE GREAT COMMISSION AND

1. THE SHIFTING RESPONSIBILITY OF MISSIONARY

MISSIONARY WORK

WORK

“Go ye therefore, and teach all nations,

It looks as though the responsibility of spreading baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Gospel has shifted from Whites to men of

the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them

colour. Whenever we think of missionaries we

to observe all things whatsoever I have

think of White people coming to save the

commanded you: And, lo, I am with you always,

unreached and uncivilised Black races. We

even unto the end of the world. Amen”

imagine pious White missionaries going through

(Matthew 28:19,20). This is the famous Great

the sweltering tropical jungles to reach savages
Commission that compels Christians to go into

in remote villages. However, all this has

all the world as preachers. Unfortunately, it is changed!

one of the least obeyed commands of the Bible.

There are not as many savages in remote

The Church tends to "stay" more than "go". villages as
there were four hundred years ago.

These were the last words of Jesus and must

Today, it is the White people who need to be

therefore be taken very seriously. This

reached. It is the White people living in rich and command
is as valid today as it was two

affluent cities who have no knowledge of God.

thousand years ago. It is not only the promises Do not misunderstand me, there are still

of prosperity that are valid today.

thousands of poor villages and towns which

The instruction "to go into all the world" still need to hear about Jesus.

rings loud and clear as an eternal command

But no one can deny the fact that the spiritual

from the Lord. This command takes on a new

landscape of the world has changed enormously.

meaning when you think of the kind of world we

The cloud of ignorance and spiritual

live in today. The regions where Christianity

backwardness has shifted to the western nations

used to be active have now changed. The

of the world. Spiritual death has placed its icy spiritually

alive sections of the world have

hands on the churches of Europe. Church

shifted from Europe to the poorer and more

buildings that seated hundreds of ardent

deprived parts of the world. Today, Europe is

worshippers every Sunday, today receive less

the seat of Satan, with most people on that

than fifteen old men and women. Many

continent being atheists or non-believers.

churches meet every two weeks instead of every

There is now a great need for us to reach out to week. On

Sunday mornings, the young people

such parts of the world. How do we achieve

are recovering from hangovers and the

this?

debauchery of the night before. They have no

time or knowledge of God. In Switzerland for

37

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 38

38

/ CHAPTER 6

instance, many of the pastors do not believe in

is worth it! When the Church failed to send out God. They
are often state employees who have

missionaries, the Lord allowed persecution to

a job to do. A recent millennium survey in

speak a little louder about missionary work.

England showed that only 28% of the population

"...And at that time there was A GREAT

believed in the traditional understanding of a

PERSECUTION against the church which was at

"personal God". 37% in the survey saw God as Jerusalem;

and they were all SCATTERED

a "spirit or life force". This obviously shows a ABROAD throughout the regions of Judaea and

lack of knowledge of the Bible and its teachings. Samaria, except the apostles. Then Philip went

There was also a remarkable drop in the number

down to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ of people who believed in Jesus as the Son of

unto them. And the people with one accord

God. 45% of those questioned believed that

gave heed unto those things which Philip spake,

Jesus was the Son of God as compared to 71%

hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

in 1957. This shows that over the last forty

For unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came years, over one third of the believers have given out of many that were possessed with them: and

up their faith. "And because iniquity shall

many taken with palsies, and that were lame,
abound, THE LOVE OF MANY SHALL WAX
were healed. And there was great joy in that
COLD" (Matthew 24:12). It is time for us to go
city" (Acts 8:1, 5-8). Can you see what power
again into every corner of the world with the
lay within the disciples who were gathered
Good News of Jesus Christ. I am very grateful
together in Jerusalem? They just had to go!
for the Americans and Europeans who came to
When they went, great things happened. You
Africa with the Gospel. Perhaps I would belong
have no idea what will happen when you go. I
to some other religion today if they had not
speak to all pastors and men of authority in the come.
Church. It is your duty to send men and women

as missionaries into the entire world.

2. THE NEED TO GO INTO ALL THE WORLD

If you fail to do this, you are inadvertently

sentencing those parts of the world to spiritual This command must be taken seriously today. If

death and hell. I shudder when I imagine what

we do not go when He has told us to, God may

it would have been like if missionaries had not

be forced to use other methods to drive us into

sacrificed their lives for some of us to know

the mission fields. In Acts 1:8, Jesus told his Jesus. It is this very thought that spurs me on disciples to wait for the Spirit. He promised that in my quest for world evangelism. I know that

after the Holy Spirit came they would be able to within me lies the power to teach whole nations. go very far with the Gospel. Unfortunately, like Jesus said we should go to the world and teach

most of us do, the disciples did not obey the

nations. By your obedience, multitudes will find commandment but stayed together in the peace and salvation. I think we often do not comfort of Jerusalem. "But ye shall receive know the effect of one man's obedience. power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon "Therefore as by the offence of one judgement you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in came upon all men to condemnation; even so by Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, the righteousness of one the free gift came upon and unto the uttermost part of the earth" (Acts all men..." (Romans 5:18). The story of the 1:8).

Basel Mission of Switzerland has always
It is much easier to change the carpet in the

intrigued me. Perhaps it is because my

church and to have a church picnic than to go

grandparents and mother come from there. I

into all the world and preach. It is when you do have always
been touched by the sacrifice that

what is hard and difficult that you move forward the Basel
missionaries made for the

in the right direction. It may not be easy, but it advancement
of the Gospel in Ghana.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 39

A BRIEF HISTORY OF MISSIONARY WORK / 39

3. THE NEED FOR MISSIONARIES

instruction, there was a need to obey and go

into all the world! Today, two thousand years

Some people thought there was no need for

after Jesus gave the missionary command, I

such an organisation to send missionaries into

declare to you that there is still a need for us to the world when Swiss people themselves

go! We must go! If we love Him, we must feed

needed Christ. This is a common argument that

His sheep! We must find a way of going to every leads to "paralysis by analysis". I know there are single nation of this world with the Gospel of

people today who would say, "Why should we

Jesus Christ. The example of the missionaries

send missionaries to any country when there are

of old should serve as inspiration to us in this millions of unsaved people all around in our own modern world. We must not just say, "Wow, that country?" "There is no need to go anywhere, the was a great effort!" We must rise up and do the sinners are next door!" "It is much more same and more! Let's now see how the Basel

economical to do evangelism in our

Missionaries gave up their lives as they obeyed

neighbourhood!"

the Great Commission.n

As I said earlier, I shudder when I think of what would have happened if that argument had prevailed over the simple command of our Lord

THE BASEL MISSIONARIES

to "go". I wish to quote the argument that one such person made against the concept of

missionaries being sent out from Switzerland in

1. THE BASEL MISSIONARIES IN RUSSIA

the nineteenth century. "Wouldn't it be strange, if a mission were sent out from Switzerland,

*"In 1820, two graduates were sent out to the

while there is such dire need that someone

Caucasus - an area that had been newly

comes to us in order to put an end to the

annexed by the Tsarist Russian empire. In these rampant domestic paganism in the heads of our

vast lands, between the Black Sea and the
own nobles and commoners, smart-heads and
Caspian, there were sizeable communities of
dimwits alike?" (Excerpt translated from
German and Swiss settlers in need of pastoral
Schlatter, Vol. 1, p.13). It seems there was a
care. But there were also the hitherto little
loaded debate as to whether people should be
known indigenous peoples. Some of them, had
sent out into the mission fields of the world or already been
Christianised in the early
not. However, some zealous members who
beginnings of the faith whilst others had
would not be deterred, set up the Basel
become Muslims. It was particularly this latter Evangelical
Missionary Society. Gradually a
group whom the Basel Missionaries tried to

complete missionary organisation, with its own reach with the Gospel.

overseas programs was established.

However, this effort ended when the Tsar,

You will notice from this history that the

faced with a revolt, removed the missionaries

Swiss people attempted to go "into all the

out of his empire. The Basel Mission continued

world". They were not distracted by the fact to despatch missionaries to the world through

that there were sinners in their own cities.

other missionary societies. The feedback from

Jesus never said that we should go when

these outreaches opened the eyes of their

everyone around us is saved. He just said that

leadership to new missionary horizons, notably, we should

go! Notice how the Church in

West Africa, India and China.

Switzerland sent missionaries to all parts of the These destinations eventually became the

world at great cost. They sent people to Russia, most important targets of the Basel Mission's

West Africa and Asia. One thousand eight

activities. It wasn't easy and they certainly had hundred years after Christ had given his

problems. Arguments over hierarchic

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 40

40

/ CHAPTER 6

subordination, questions of liturgy and issues of wives. A few months later, the bachelors and

culture arose. However, the work progressed

the wives of the two remaining missionaries

and other people followed the Basel Mission idea died of yellow fever, which had broken out in

and the Bremen Mission for example, was epidemic proportions. In no time most of the established.

expatriate community were dead or gone.

The remaining 'brothers' and a missionary,

2. THE BASEL MISSIONARIES IN SIERRA

who had arrived later, stayed back as the only

LEONE

Europeans in the territory. They returned to

Freetown to carry on the work of the British

The first targets of the Basel Mission in Subbated Church Mission Society, under whose Sahara Africa were Sierra Leone and Liberia.

protection they had come. A year later, the

"These territories had been acquired by British colonial administration decreed that henceforth

and American philanthropists respectively with only British nationals would be allowed in for the intention to resettle freed slaves.

doing missionary work. At this stage, the

Governmental backing had been assured in both

Committee in Basel decided to shift its focus to cases. In Basel, this development was seen as a Liberia.

good chance for gaining a missionary foothold

on the little known African Continent. News

3. T

went around that a modern education system

HE BASEL MISSIONARIES IN LIBERIA

was about to be set up. Hence, teachers and

The territory of Liberia had been dedicated as a pastoral workers were required. According to

resettlement area in 1817 by the African

the thinking of the European missionary Colonial Society. This private organisation movement of that time, the 'Whiteman' had to constituted itself in Washington, where it repay an enormous moral debt because of his enjoyed governmental backing. The Society's former trade in slaves on a . This debt could be leader, an American citizen by name of Jehudi repaid through good works. Another aspect was Ashmun, was installed as the territory's first that some indigenous societies still persisted in Governor. Liberia should henceforth be hunting and selling their next of kin; they had to developed as a homeland for freed slaves from be freed from such conditions of moral plantations in the Southern United States. backwardness.

In 1847, it became sub-Saharan Africa's first 'Sierra Leone' was originally the only name of independent country. As can be imagined, the the peninsula, on which the modern capital of setting up of an American-type administration Freetown is located. Freetown itself was on these shores was by no means easy. At one founded in 1787. The ex-slaves to be resettled stage in 1822, three dozens of the new colonists came from England and North America, later had to fight back about 800 natives. But a few also from intercepted ships in the Atlantic years later, Ashmun felt comfortable enough to Ocean. At that time, the hinterland of the issue a public announcement that invited peninsula appeared on the maps of the

missionary societies to start work in Liberia.

Europeans as nameless tribal territory. It was

The call fell on ready ears in Basel. After the precisely in this part of the country, where the setback experienced in Sierra Leone it offered

Basel men ultimately wanted to work: away
fresh hope.

from the European influenced coastal

settlements. In January 1823, four missionaries Anxieties concerning the high health risks

arrived in Freetown, from where they ventured

were brushed off with the typical confidence of

out to their individual destinations up-country. those, who lay their ultimate trust in the hands Two of the 'brothers' were accompanied by their

of 'Him who had called them'. Inspector

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 41

A BRIEF HISTORY OF MISSIONARY WORK / 41

Blumhardt wrote in the Mission Magazine of

After this fiasco, the Mission Directors

1827: "We would have considered it shameful to decided to place the next investment on more

the name of Christ to close our hearts and ears

promising soil. This opened the way for the

to the misery and the outcries for help of these most successful chapter of Basel missionary

poor souls in Africa, just because we shied away activities in Africa: the one on the Gold Coast. from the dangers of death. Neither does the

But other important ventures on the Black

European slave trader shy away from the perils

Continent were to follow, foremost in Nigeria,

of a life-consuming climate, when he roams the

Cameroon, Congo and the Sudan1.

same shores day and night like a predator..." As There are two important lessons to learn from

it turned out, Ashmun had painted a rather rosy
the mission to Liberia.

picture in which "reality and wishful thinking were
inextricably mixed up". Adequate housing a. Firstly, the
missionaries were expected to

was unavailable even in the capital, living costs establish a
"viable economic basis".

prohibitively high and, worst of all, the

This meant that they were to find jobs that

population showed little interest in what the

would sustain them in ministry. This is the lay

missionaries had to offer. The Governor himself ministry in
practice in the nineteenth century.

fell seriously ill after the arrival of four Basel People
became farmers, traders and builders in

Mission missionaries in 1828. He soon had to

order to survive as missionaries in a foreign

be repatriated to the United States, where he

country. You can readily see that it is not a new died three months later.

idea to let people work for a living as they do the The remaining administrators did not really

work of ministry. I am constantly amazed that

care about the missionary endeavour. Someone

people want the church to bear an impossible

seemed to have even retained the mail coming

financial burden that limits the scope and extent from Basel instead of passing it on. But the

of its outreach work. Today, people take pride in proverbial 'straw that broke the camel's back'

announcing how many hundreds of people the

came in the guise of the hostile attitude of the church employs. It is as though the more people American Baptist community, then the only

you have on your payroll, the more successful

other church organisation in Monrovia.

you are. Dear friend, what matters is what we are able to accomplish for the Lord. We must

These fellow Christians reportedly deemed it win the lost at any cost! If it means we have to necessary to exclude the Basel 'brothers' from

find a job, so be it. If it means we have to be church service, for the sole reason that they had fully employed by the church, so be it!

not been baptised in accordance with Baptist rules! This rendered the newcomers ineffective

b. The next lesson is to be learnt from the as preachers, since they had lost all credibility in attitude of Inspector Blumhardt who

the eyes of the town folks. Disgusted, the thought it was a shame to close our ears to missionaries left Monrovia to set up their

the cries of souls.

stations inland, just as their colleagues had

His logic was very simple. If European slave
previously done in Sierra Leone. They all went
traders were prepared to risk their lives and
their own way, in order to work among the
health roaming the shores of tropical West
native population. Bit by bit, the group
Africa for money, then the Christian
dwindled again due to death or illness. Finally,
missionaries could risk their lives for the souls of the last
remaining missionary's seed money ran
men.
out, before he had managed to establish a viable economic
basis as expected by the leadership in
Basel.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 42

4. THE BASEL MISSIONARIES IN GHANA

steadily growing mulatto population. It was for the educational and spiritual needs of these

Around 1826, the Basel Mission sought to widen

people, and of course for the benefit of the

its network of sponsors. Like-minded religious

Danish garrison staff, that the Danish

circles were approached, particularly in

Government had invited the Basel missionaries

Scandinavia. These advances from Basel were

to establish themselves in Christiansborg. In

first picked up in Denmark by Pastor Rønne, the

Basel, one had a different outlook. By

Inspector of the Danish Missionary Society

missionary standards, which were notoriously

(DMS).

strict, the level of morality at Christiansborg

Rønne had once been a tutor of the Crown

appeared as abysmal. The Mission Committee

Prince and enjoyed the confidence of the Danish

showed little enthusiasm for the idea of uplifting Court. He also was eager to give the DMS a new

the new and so far unsettled class of people that push, as it was about to slip into a state of

resulted from the promiscuity of European

lethargy. An arrangement with the dynamic

soldiers.

Basel Mission seemed to be just the right

In any case, the focus of the Basel

approach.

missionaries was on the indigenous population,

Precisely in that same year, Governor Johan

not the Europeans and their affiliations. But

von Richelieu, the Governor of the Danish

they were ready for a compromise, i.e. to let one station of Christiansborg on the Gold Coast

of their staff serve the garrison, while the others (Danish sources refer to it as the 'Guinea Coast'), would eventually be despatched to areas

arrived in Copenhagen on home leave. While outside.

briefing the King, von Richelieu impressed on

An agreement was finally reached, for which

His Majesty the urgent need for teachers and

both sides made concessions. The Basel Mission preachers in this Danish possession.

got the permission for inland work and in return Like the other European powers, who had

accepted the hierarchic subordination of its

established themselves on the Gold Coast,
missionaries under a Danish Lutheran Bishop.

Denmark pursued essentially commercial
Otherwise they could retain full operational
interests. Besides trading with the indigenous
autonomy.

population and keeping invaders away from the

In December 1828, four missionaries arrived
surrounding areas, the Danish garrison

at Christiansborg. They were the Germans Karl

exercised very little influence over the territory. F. Salbach,
Gottlieb Holzwarth and Johannes

The fort of Christiansborg with its Danish and
Henke, and the Swiss Johannes Schmidt. Death

mulatto population was virtually an European
cruelly intervened. Within a few months three

enclave on African soil. Seen through the eyes of them had already perished. Towards the end of its expatriate staff, a term on the Gold Coast of 1831 the fourth one, Henke, also followed meant privations and restrictions in many ways. them into the grave.

Moreover, it bore a high risk of death through Had it not been for the slow pace of tropical diseases. A man would go there only for communications in the 19th century, the filling his pocket as fast as possible, usually by Mission Committee would probably have given bartering guns and schnapps for gold and up the whole idea. However, before the news of slaves.

the last death arrived at headquarters, the Under the prevailing Danish law, each

Mission Board had already decided to send colonial employee was allowed to co-habit with reinforcements.

one native woman, who thereby acquired certain rights and privileges. This gave rise to a Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 43

A BRIEF HISTORY OF MISSIONARY WORK / 43

In 1832 these arrived: Andreas Riis and Peter Jäger, both from Denmark, and Christian

period of the transatlantic slave trade could be somewhat repaired, if one encouraged and

Friedrich Heinze, a medical doctor from Saxony.

assisted Africans in the running of their own

Dr Heinze was to study the situation of the 'plantation colonies' on indigenous soil. These extraordinary health risks that would be

lands would be reserved for ex-slaves, who were

encountered on the Gold Coast, and come out to make a living out of crops produced for with recommendations for preventive measures. overseas markets. The concept we see Ironically, 'Invincible Death' summoned him emerging here could in fact be the very first first. And not long after this loss, Riis lowered development project ever proposed for Africa!

Jäger into the grave. He nearly followed Isert mooted his idea in a widely sold book himself, had it not been for a native herbalist, after he returned from an exploratory journey to who saw Riis through the worst convulsions. An the Gold Coast in 1786. For the same purpose, Afro-Danish trader, Georg Lutterodt, then he later returned to the Gold Coast where he offered Riis his comfortable farmhouse for

explored the plateau on the Akuapem range,
recovery.

about 60-km inland from Christianborg. He

In 1835, Riis started building-up the Basel

wrote in his memoirs that he literally had to cut Mission's
first inland station on the Gold Coast. his way through the
bush, crossing 40 km of the

It was in the town of Akropong, capital of the
Akra Plain. On the plateau, he encountered a
small Akuapem State. Riis erected his living
comparatively healthy and hospitable
quarters first. The house was put on a solid
environment.

stone foundation and equipped with doors,

In any case, Nana Atiemo, the Paramount
windows and a functional wide roof.

Chief of the State of Akuapem at the time,

Such attributes the local people had never

readily granted him land. The project seemed to seen before. His energetic way of taking action take off well. A first report dated 16 January

earned Riis the nickname of 'Osiadan', meaning

1789, was carried by Isert himself to

the house builder (3.3.). The missionaries that Christiansborg. As it turned out, this was also followed produced similar structures. Quite a

his last one, since he suddenly succumbed to a

few of these can be seen to this day.

fever. After a few years, however, the project

Akropong eventually became the very nerve

had to be abandoned. Nevertheless, Dr Isert's

centre of the Basel Mission in Ghana.

efforts were not wasted. They inspired the

Symbolically speaking: Riis' stone-based house

Basel missionaries, who arrived on the Gold Coast in Akropong had served as 'the rock on which Coast half a century later.

the Basel Church was built!

When the Basel missionaries first set foot on

Why did Riis choose Akropong for

the Gold Coast in 1828, the territory - which

establishing his first inland mission station? For later became the Republic of Ghana - had

answering this question we shall now briefly

British, Danish and Dutch settlements

turn to the second half of the previous, 18th

interspersed along its shores.

century.

These settlements were essentially fortified

There we discover another remarkable

trading posts from which the respective
pioneer: the Danish citizen Dr P.E. Isert, a
governors exercised some indirect control over
botanist and medical doctor, also an admirer of
limited tracts of land extending not too far into the Genevan
philosopher Jean-Jacques

the densely forested coastal belt. Various kings, Rousseau.
Influenced by the latter's 'back-toamong whom the leader of
the Asantes', the nature philosophy', Isert was convinced
that the Asantehene, the most powerful, held the

damage done to African societies during the
remainder of the territory. Throughout the 19th Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 44

/ CHAPTER 6

century, the Asante Kingdom fiercely resisted
time, the Mission was reaching out north as far

any European attempts at further colonisation.

as Yendi in the Savannah Belt, was approaching

Only after the British had bought up the Danish

the border with the Ivory Coast in the western

and Dutch possessions, and henceforth could

direction, and had consolidated its eastern

launch a cohesive campaign against the

positions along the Volta River. It thus had

Asantes, did they manage to subdue this nation

mission stations in an area covering about half

of proud warriors. At a certain moment in the

of modern Ghana.”

long sequence of Asante Wars, a group of Basel

It is amazing to see the extent of missionary

missionaries was captured in Anum, east of the

activities carried out by white people in West

Volta River. They were brought to the kingdom's Africa. Almost two hundred years ago when

capital, Kumase, and kept there during four

there was no email, telephone, fax, jet airlines, years as hostages, albeit under a relatively mild electricity or running water, people were

regime of 'town arrest' (chapter 3.9.).

prepared to go as far as places like Yendi in the Given the political situation just mentioned,

north of Ghana! Even today, in the year 2000,

and also the arrangements made with other

you would rarely find a Ghanaian pastor eager to missionary organisations concerning their

go to Yendi. Dear friend, the Europeans no

respective regional priorities, the Basel Mission longer believe in this Gospel which they died for. was for the most part of the 19th century active It is the turn of the people who still have faith, in the inland area between the Volta and Pra

to take the Gospel to every remote corner. May Rivers.

Along the coast, the Basel people at first we go further than

they did, because we have
merely covered the Ga and Dangme speaking
more knowledge, more revelation, more
belt around Accra, later spreading to Winneba in
equipment and more access. May we cover
the west and Ada in the east. Hence, the Basel
more remote areas than they did! May we not
Mission operated between the areas of the
fail in this God given responsibility. We must
Bremen Mission which was engaged since 1847
win the lost at any cost! If we have to become
in the core country of the Ewe, and that of the
missionaries, so be it! If we have to die in a
Wesleyan (Methodist) Mission, which had in
foreign land, so be it!
1835 established itself in Cape Coast and first

"We would have considered it shameful to the tended to spread westward from there.

name of Christ to close our hearts and ears to

All of these mission societies had to stay clear the misery and the outcries for help of these

of the Asante Kingdom, which then spread over

poor souls in Africa, just because we shied away the main parts of the forest belt. The only

from the dangers of death. Neither does the

exception was a Wesleyan interlude in Kumase

European slave trader shy away from the perils

from 1840 to about 1870. During many of these

of a life-consuming climate, when he roams the

years, however, its lone representative was not

same shores day and night like a predator..." allowed to be active. Only after the deportation (Inspector Blumhardt-1826).

of the incumbent Asantehene, Otumfuo

Prempeh I, to Elmina Castle (and later to the Seychelles Islands, which marked the end of the Asante Wars) were Christian missions allowed into Asante. This became the high time for the Basel Mission, which methodically laid its network of mission stations over the realm. Finally, the year 1918 brought an end to the involvement of the Basel Mission in Gold Coast as an independent church organisation. At that

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:02 Page 45

Church Expansion

7

not have an effective church or pastor. There is
ADVANCING THE KINGDOM

an even greater need today for real

BY CHURCH PLANTING

advancement of the church into unchristianized territories. When Europeans sent There are times when one wonders whether the

out missionaries two hundred years ago, there

church is really advancing or not. There are

were only one billion people in the world. Today, many activities in the church and many

in the year 2004, there are 6.1 billion people in programmes are being held. But is the kingdom

the world. The secular world always complains

of God really marching forward or is it moving in about the ratio of doctors to the population.

circles? Sometimes in a large city you see new

Does anyone complain about the ratio of pastors

churches springing up. Often, these new

to the population? How many evangelists are

churches become the talk of the town and it

there compared to the millions of people living

looks as though God is doing something new.

today? It is essential to find ways of advancing Everyone
flocks to the church and everyone

the Kingdom of God in a real way.

seems to take a liking to this new thing. A

closer look at these new movements, however,

1. THE KINGDOM OF GOD WILL EXPERIENCE

often reveals that the new congregations are

made up of people who simply migrated from

A REAL ADVANCEMENT WHEN WE FOLLOW

another nearby church.

CHRIST'S INSTRUCTION.

The kingdom of God is full of carnal

Jesus' last command was to go into the world

Christians who are always looking for something

and to make disciples! "And Jesus came and

new and exciting. Many pastors get excited

spoke unto them, saying, All power is given unto because they think their churches are growing

me in heaven and in earth. GO YE THEREFORE,

and there is a revival. In reality, there is little AND TEACH ALL NATIONS, baptizing them in

overall growth in the kingdom of God. People

the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of

are simply rotating from church to church. The

the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all

kingdom of God needs to advance in reality.

things whatsoever I have commanded you: and,

lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the Years ago, Europeans sent missionaries to

world. Amen” (Matthew 28:18-20). In this

Africa and Asia. Through this act of sacrifice, scripture, Jesus tells all of us to teach people whole nations have been Christianized. People

'the Word of God'. There is no way you can teach who were previously pagans have been

people unless you regularly gather them converted to Christ. Let us not deceive together.

ourselves: there are many more people in the world today. There are also many people who do

45

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 46

46

/ CHAPTER 7

2. THERE IS A NEED TO START MANY

time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying,

GATHERINGS

OF

PEOPLE

IN

EVERY

WHO IS THE GREATEST IN THE KINGDOM OF

POSSIBLE LOCATION IN ORDER THAT WE

HEAVEN? And Jesus called a little child unto

FULFIL THE GREAT COMMISSION.

him, and set him in the midst of them, And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted,

A regular gathering of Christians for the

and become as little children, ye shall not enter purpose of teaching is called 'a church'. In other into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever

words, our Lord was telling us to go into all the therefore shall humble himself as this little

world and gather people together regularly in

child, THE SAME IS GREATEST IN THE order to teach them the word. God is in the KINGDOM OF HEAVEN" (Matthew 18:1-4).

business of creating gatherings of teachable

Jesus made it very clear who was going to be people. God by His Spirit is raising men who the greatest in the kingdom. No one can tell will go into all parts of the world to gather your humility by the size of your congregation. people regularly to teach them His word. The In fact, pastors with small congregations are more gatherings and groups there are, the more likely to be more humble (and therefore greater the Great Commission is being fulfilled. The in heaven) than pastors with big congregations.

more groups that are taught, the more the Great

What we need is more congregations, more

Commission is being fulfilled. These groups are churches and more fruit for our Master. Let us

the churches that are being planted by obedient

plant churches! "A church at every door and in

servants of the Lord.

every language" must be the goal of every true

Unfortunately, because most pastors are so

servant of God. A gathering at every electric

concerned about what people think, they cannot

pole or under every tree will make the kingdom

effectively fulfil this Great Commission. We

go forward. Let's stop trying to impress people. want to have one big impressive gathering for

Let's stop assessing our ministries by the size of all to see! We want people to think we are great!

our congregations. Let's have the gatherings.

After all, the more people there are in the

Dear church leaders, do not seek for the honour

congregation, the more important the pastor

of men but for the honour (approval and

looks. "In the MULTITUDE OF PEOPLE is the

endorsement) of God. "How can ye believe,

king's honour (approval and endorsement) ..."

which receive honour (approval and

(Proverbs 14:28).

endorsement) one of another, and seek not the

honour (approval and endorsement) that

The vastness of the world and the distribution

of people demands that pastors and people

cometh from God only?" (John 5:44).

move away from the one congregation church to

multiple gatherings in different locations. If we **3. A**

COMBINATION OF EVANGELISM AND

are really serious about obeying our Lord, then

TEACHING FULFILLS THE GREAT

we have no choice than to obey this. Leaders

COMMISSION.

must be trained. Pastors must be trained.

Workers must be trained. The “superstar”

Evangelism and crusades are good, as they are

mentality of the church must die. This superstar the starting point of these teachings.

mentality wants us to have one great pastor

Evangelists must go forth. But are they really

whom everybody acknowledges and praises. We

fulfilling the Great Commission? Yes and No!

are often deceived into thinking that the pastor YES, because they have started the process and

with the largest congregation will be the

NO, because without the teaching, which comes
greatest in heaven. This will not be the case.

by establishing churches, the Great Commission

The pastor who will be greatest in heaven is the will not be
truly fulfilled. Simply put, THE

most humble and childlike pastor. "At the same

GREAT COMMISSION IS EVANGELISM

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 47

CHURCH EXPANSION / 47

FOLLOWED BY PLANTING OF CHURCHES. The

I am writing about how your mind must work

churches are the gatherings and these

if you are to become a church planter. Without gatherings

are then taught the word.

this foundation, no one will advance into the very difficult task of church planting. The following chapters are basically educating you

4. THERE IS A NEED TO PLANT CHURCHES IN

on the importance of the doctrine of church

VIRGIN TERRITORIES.

planting. You will be prompted and your ministry will be inspired to engage in the last Above all, churches must be planted where the great apostolic church planting movement.

Lord directs us. Churches must be planted in the cities and in the villages. I see the need for churches to be planted in virgin territories.

1. UNDERSTAND THAT GOD IS MONITORING

Most of us concentrate on areas where things

YOUR WORKS.

are already working. But I tell you, there are many untouched areas where God has called us

Dear friends, your works on earth are being to. The passion and the commitment to soul monitored. God is going to require from you an winning and church planting must come back answer concerning what He has put in you. He into the church and we must sacrifice our young is going to ask you what you have done with His men for this.

gifts. God is going to require from you things He has given to you. He will enquire of your works!

Pastors must be concerned that Islam is

It is interesting that in the seven letters written taking over large sections of Africa and the

to the seven churches, one phrase was repeated

world, as the church looks on unconcerned.

over and over - I know thy works.

Moslems are sacrificial and do not mind going to the furthest towns and villages of many

Which works are these? Whatever these are,

nations. Meanwhile the Christians, who have

it must be important for every church to have

been commanded to go to the uttermost parts of

these works fully in place. Notice the following the earth, are sitting in the nearest and most

verses: "I KNOW THY WORKS, and thy labour,

convenient cities of the world! But ye shall

and thy patience, 'and how thou canst not bear

receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come them, which are evil:' and thou hast tried them

upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me

which say they are apostles, and are not, and

both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in

hast found them liars” (Revelation 2:2).

Samaria, and UNTO THE NEAREST, MOST

“I KNOW THY WORKS, and tribulation, and

CONVENIENT AND PROSPEROUS CITIES OF

poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the

THE WORLD! (Which Bible is this?)

blasphemy of them which say they are Jews,

and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan”

THE MINDSET OF CHURCH

(Revelation 2:9).

PLANTERS

“I KNOW THY WORKS, and where thou

dwestest, even where Satan's seat is: and thou

“Let this mind be in you, ...” (Phillippians 2:5). holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my

Christ had a way of thinking which made Him do

faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was

the things He did. 'This verse teaches us to

my faithful martyr, who was slain among you,

think in the same way that Christ thought'. This where Satan dwelleth” (Revelation 2:13).

is what 'let this mind be in you' means. It is only when your mind works in a particular way that

“I KNOW THY WORKS, and charity, and

you can accomplish the will of God.

service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy

works; and the last to be more than the first”

(Revelation 2:19).

/ CHAPTER 7

“And unto the angel of the church in Sardis

into full time ministry. It is interesting to note write; These things saith he that hath the seven that after taking that decision, I began to excel Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I KNOW THY

in the Medical School. I had a distinction and I WORKS, that thou hast a name that thou livest,

won prizes! To my amazement, I topped my

and art dead” (Revelation 3:1).

class. My heart was far away from any medical

“I KNOW THY WORKS: behold, I have set

ambitions, yet I was receiving medical laurels.

before thee an open door, and no man can shut

Isn't it amazing that the things you give up are it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept the same things that God gives back to you?

my word, and hast not denied my name”

"It takes faith to walk with God. The opposite
(Revelation 3:8).

of what I expected had happened. This is what it

"God did not say, "I know thy houses and thy

is like to walk with God. He that loses his life will cars". He
did not say; "I know thy Mercedes

gain it! He that preserves his life will lose it. Benz" He said;
"I know thy works!" He did not

There will never be a time when you will not

say; "I know thy degrees." He did not say; "I

need faith. We will always have to believe."

know thy father and thy mother." He said, "I

From that time until now, I have been fully

know thy works!"

plugged into the ministry. Shortly after that

period, I planted my first church, which I am

still pastoring. Since then I have been involved **2. CHURCH PLANTING IS THE KEY TO GOING**

in planting over 400 churches. I once made a

ALL THE WAY WITH GOD.

covenant with the Lord that I would plant at

least one thousand churches in Ghana alone. I

"For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but always pray that God will give me grace to fulfill whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the this covenant. I am going all the way! I am not gospel's, the same shall save it" (Mark 8:35). In holding back anymore. Let His will be done in

1985, I took a decision to go all the way with

my life!

God. I had just finished a very difficult medical school exam. In my opinion, I just scraped

In 1989, I qualified as a medical doctor. By

through that exam. As I thought of the effort I April 1990 I had finished my housemanship. All

had put into the exam, and the extra work I had

my medical mates were on their way to foreign

done, I felt in my heart that it was not worth it countries. It was quite clear to me that the Lord at all. Why should I suffer so much for

was asking me to stay in Ghana. There were just

medicine? Why should I give my life for such a

a few people in the church but I decided to stay cause?

with it. I knew that I had condemned myself to

a life of poverty. I talked to my wife and she

I vowed that from then on, my priority would

agreed. She supported me all the way. I knew I

be the work of God. Initially I thought that God would never have a house or anything like that.

was the number one person in my life. I was a

I just knew it. However, I said, 'Lord, I love you very serious Christian leader but I did not

with all my heart, I will do it. I entrust myself to realize that God's work was not my number one

you.' Many years have gone by and it's been

priority. From that time on, I determined that I worth it all. He said, 'seek ye first the kingdom had one purpose and that was to do the work of

of God and his righteousness and all these

God! All other things became side issues. This

things shall be added onto you'. "For whosoever was truly a turning point in my life. From then will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever will on, my number one goal was God and the

lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it"

ministry. The Medical School had taken its

(Luke 9:24).

rightful place as number two or three in my

heart. That was probably the time that I entered Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 49

CHURCH EXPANSION / 49

3. YOU ARE EXPECTED TO ACCOMPLISH

good works that God had called him to do.

CERTAIN WORKS WHILST ON EARTH.

Another reason why we do not kill ourselves is because it is a crime to kill yourself. It is against "For by grace are ye saved through faith; and the law and it is against God's will.

that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast. For we are his workmanship, CREATED IN CHRIST JESUS

4. WISDOM IS TO BE MINDFUL OF HEAVEN

UNTO GOOD WORKS, which God hath before

AND

CONSCIOUS

OF

APPROACHING

ordained that we should walk in them"

ETERNITY.

(Ephesians 2:8-10). God has good works for you

to do. That is why you are alive in the first place. Once, one of my pastors came to the office to

Make no mistake, the only reason why you are

say good-bye to me. He wanted me to pray for

still alive, is to accomplish certain good works. I him. He was going out as a missionary to a

was once with a certain English man who was

foreign country. As he sat next to me, the Spirit giving me a ride in his taxi. I asked him if he

of the Lord came upon me and I spoke to him

believed in God. He said he did not believe in

under the anointing. I said, "Always think like a God and wondered if I believed in such things.

dying man and you will be a wise man. Think

about your soon arrival in heaven and you will I told him that I did believe in God. Then he

be wise." You see, when people are on their

asked if I believed in heaven and hell. I told

deathbeds, they think differently from people

him, "I certainly do". He asked again, "Do you who are not thinking of the realities of heaven

believe that heaven is a good place?" I

and hell. I remember talking to my wife. I

answered, "Heaven is a wonderful place and we asked her, 'What do you think God will say to me are all looking forward to going there one day.' when I arrive in heaven?" I don't remember the

He continued, "Do you think that life in heaven answer she gave me but this is something that

will be better than life on earth?" "I'm sure it will bothers me all the time. Is heaven happy with

be," I responded. Then he asked a question that me? Is God pleased with me? What will Jesus

I have never forgotten. He said, "If indeed say to me on the day I see him face to face?

heaven is better than this earth, why don't you

all just kill yourselves and go to heaven right

Unfortunately, most of us are just thinking

away?" Before I could answer that question, we about earthly things - money, cars, visas, power, had arrived at our destination and I had to get

influence and the honour of men. These

down. As I went along, I pondered over the

thinking patterns are not wisdom. If you die

question that this man had asked me. It seemed

without doing His works, you will be a fool on

to make a lot of sense: Why not go to heaven

the day of your death. Don't be deceived; your

right now if it is such a great place? But God's time on earth is limited. After today, you will

word shows us why we must still stay on the

have one less day of opportunity. The houses

earth - we are here to do good works. We are

you are building and the things you are

ordained to do certain good works on this earth!

acquiring have no real value. Jesus said, "Do

We cannot leave until we have finished our work

not pile up things on earth." Why did He say so?

on earth.

Is Jesus against us having nice things? Certainly not! He was giving us the highest kind of

One day Kenneth Hagin had an experience in

wisdom - to live with eternity in mind and to

which he died physically. As his spirit ascended believe in the resurrection. The more eternity

out of his body, he heard a voice saying, 'go

conscious we are, the wiser we will be! Do a

back, go back, you have not finished your work

little calculation right now; how many more

on earth.' His spirit returned to his body and he years will you live on earth after reading this

lived for many more years, accomplishing the textbook.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 50

50

/ CHAPTER 7

Compare this with the many years you will

things” but Jesus did not do them. He knew that

spend in eternity. “My father once told me that the right thing to do was to obey God. The devil the way I spend the first twenty-five years of my also asks people to do “good things” but there is life would determine how I would spend the

always a hidden agenda. As soon as you step out

next forty-five years of my life. By the age of of God's commands you are in sin even though

twenty-five, I was a medical doctor and a pastor. you may

be involved in a “good thing”.

My first twenty-five years have truly affected the A. B
Biblical D

Definition oof SSin

years that have followed.” However, I have an
even higher piece of wisdom for you: “The way
Let me help you with a definition of sin.

you spend your seventy years on earth will

“Anomia” is a Greek word, which means to

determine how you will spend millions of years

reject the law, the will and the way of God. How in eternity.”

sad it is that we often think we know better than God.

“Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth

Don't be like the rich young fool who thought

also the law: for sin is the transgression of the that life was
only an earthly life. He was

law” (1 John 3:4). From this Scripture, we see planning

various things when the Lord said to

that transgression of the law is sin. The word

him, "Thou fool, tonight I require thy soul from

"transgression" is translated from the Greek

thee". That very night, the Lord called him up word

"anomia". This means "one who acts

to heaven in spite of his earthly plans. God

contrary to the law." Vine's dictionary declares knows the day He is going to call you to account. that this verse gives the real meaning of sin. Sin Get ready with your works. I know thy works!

is not necessarily doing something evil. It may surprise you to know that doing a good thing,

5. YOU WERE CREATED TO BE MORE THAN A

which is not God's will, is sin. As I said earlier, **GOOD PERSON IN THE SOCIETY.**

there were many good things that Jesus simply

would not do.

We were not created so that we would just be
Jesus could have gone on living longer but
“good” people. We were created to do certain
He accepted His father's will to die on the cross good
works. These good works were ordained
at the age of thirty-three. Would it not have
by God and not by you. In other words, God has
been a good thing for Jesus to have travelled all already
determined the works that you are
over the world preaching until He was eighty
supposed to do. No one can do anything to
years old? There are many sick people that
impress God. Your goodness, your morality, your
Jesus did not heal. Why didn't Jesus heal them?
uprightness and your perfection will not impress Was it not
a good thing to heal the sick?
God. To please God is to do what He says you

should do.

At this point, we need to understand the
essential definition of sin. SIN IS THE

After eating of the Tree of Good and Evil, men
REJECTION OF GOD'S WILL. SIN IS THE

have become obsessed with what they see as

REFUSAL TO ACCEPT GOD'S PLAN AND GOD'S

“good or evil”. Obeying God is what is right for WILL. It is the substitution of your plans for

us to do. Doing good things, moral things and

God's plans. Sin is the substitution of your

upright things are not necessarily pleasing to

wisdom for God's wisdom! That is what

God. When Satan approached Jesus in the

“anomia” means. Vine goes on to say, “This

wilderness, he suggested some “good things”

definition of sin sets forth its essential character for Jesus to do. Jesus was asked to use God's

as the rejection of the law, or will, of God and power to turn stones into bread but He did not.

the substitution of the will of self”.

He was also asked to protect Himself with God's power but He did not. These are all “good

Years ago, I remember telling God about my plans to serve Him. I decided that I would go

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 51

CHURCH EXPANSION / 51

into the secular world to earn a lot of money to just his thumb, how much would two thumbs

support the work of God. I told God that I would cost?"

be a high-income earner who would contribute

I said; "Sixteen thousand pounds."

thousands of dollars to the kingdom.

Then he asked me; "How much would five

I am not the only one who has had this idea.

fingers cost?"

I have met countless people who have expressed similar ambitions. It is amazing that very few, if I said, "Lord about forty thousand pounds." any at all of these people actually do bring a lot He continued; "How much would ten fingers of money to the kingdom. I am a full time pastor cost?" so I know what people do. Most of the rich people I know do not contribute much to the kingdom. In fact, you virtually have to plead " Then the Lord asked me; "How much would with them to cough up a few of their gold coins. an arm cost?" Can I be honest with you? I think that, if I answered; "A lot of money." had gone on that route (which would have been my way instead of God's way) I would have given "What about a leg, a kidney, a heart and a very little money to the kingdom. I think I

brain?"

would have probably criticized pastors and

"I am not sure."

churches for the way they use money. Mercy

Lord!

Finally he asked me, "How much would your

whole body cost?"

You see, God knows more than we do and

when God called me to full time ministry, He

I said, "Millions."

knew what He was doing. I remember clearly at

The Lord showed me that no matter how

the end of 1990 the Lord asked me to stop every

much money I contributed to the kingdom, it

other activity and be a full time ministry worker. would never
be up to the value of giving my

My way would have been to give God some whole body, spirit and soul to His work. In my money to keep Him quiet. Forgive! I didn't limited understanding, I thought that giving a know about my future ministry. I would have lot of money to God was just as good as giving forsaken the ministry and the rewards He had my whole self to Him.

called me to.

B. G

God requires total commitment

6. THE REASON FOR YOUR SALVATION IS THE

I once met a man whose thumb had been cut off

GOOD WORKS.

in a factory accident. He showed it to some

friends as I looked on with interest. He related We often

only preach about money and we teach
what happened and told us how much
people how to be successful. However, our
compensation he was paid for his thumb. With
salvation was and is for a purpose. The Bible
mixed feelings he stated that he had been paid
says we were saved by grace through faith and
eight thousand pounds sterling for his thumb.
that it is not of ourselves but it is the gift of God At that time,
I had only one pound in my
(Ephesians 2:8). "We are his workmanship
account and I thought to myself, "What a lucky created for
good works which God has before
man".
ordained that we (Christians) should walk in
them" (Ephesians 2:10.)
Years later, the Lord reminded me of this

man's thumb and asked me to do a calculation:

This is why we are still alive. There are good

"If this man was paid eight thousand pounds for works for us to do! One of these good works is

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 52

52

/ CHAPTER 7

the planting of churches. We need to go to the

Corinthians 4:7). Every earthen vessel that the villages and to the towns to preach. God wants Lord uses is plagued with personal problems.

people who will go with His message. God is

He ministers in spite of these and not because

looking for church planters. These good works

his life is perfect. The good news is that as you are the reason why God gave us a new life in

focus on the work of God, your personal

Him. It is so that we would live for Him and do problems diminish and the excellency of the

His purposes. Your works are very important to power of God becomes manifest.

God. This is the reason for our salvation. " I know thy works!"

8. THE STRENGTH OF A CHURCH IS MEASURED BY ITS SENDING CAPACITY.

7. DOING THE WORK HELPS YOU OVERCOME YOUR PERSONAL PROBLEMS.

The strength of a church is traditionally measured by its seating capacity. The more When people preach and teach it does not mean people the church seats, the greater it is that they do not have problems. As we minister perceived to be. However, the church was born

the Word of God, these problems become
as a sending church. Is your church sending
smaller. Instead of us focusing on our
people out?

difficulties, we must lift up our eyes unto the
Pastors like to boast about who comes to their

Lord of the harvest and look at what lies before churches.
They drop names and say 'The

us. Let us stretch out and reach the unMinister of the Sun,
Moon and Stars comes to church people of our day. God
has never

my first service. The Deputy Minister for
used perfect people who have no problems.

Financial Corruption is on my finance

Noah had a drinking problem but God used
committee.' Rarely do pastors speak of the
him. Abraham had serious marital problems,

people they have sent forth as missionaries.

but God used him. Rahab, the harlot had moral

Notice how the New Testament churches

problems but God used her. The fact that God

operated. "Now there were in the church that

will use you does not mean that you have no

was at Antioch certain prophets and teachers; as problems of your own!

Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger,

and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had

We have "this treasure in earthen vessels" (2

been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and

Corinthians 4: 7). God's glory and anointing is Saul. As they ministered to the Lord, and

not in heavenly or angelic vessels, but in earthly vessels, THE HOLY GHOST SAID, SEPARATE ME

vessels. I have always ministered in spite of my

BARNABAS AND SAUL FOR THE WORK

personal problems. There are times I have had
WHEREUNTO I HAVE CALLED THEM. So they,
financial problems, but I did the work of God.
being sent forth by the Holy Ghost, departed
There are times I had marital problems, but I
unto Seleucia; and from thence they sailed to
did the work of God. There are times I have
Cyprus” (Acts 13:1,2,4).

been sick, and had to be operated upon by
surgeons but I still did the work of God.

People look at me and assume that I have

9. DOING THE WORKS CAUSES YOU TO

never had any problems. Perhaps I even have

OVERCOME THE ZILCH OF LIFE.

more problems than the average person. But

doing the work of God makes it seem as if I have

"Therefore I hated life; because the work that is no problems. "But we have THIS TREASURE IN

wrought under the sun is grievous unto me: for

EARTHEN VESSELS, that the excellency of the

all is vanity and vexation of spirit. Yea, I hated power may be of God, and not of us" (2

all my labour which I had taken under the sun:

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 53

CHURCH EXPANSION / 53

because I should leave it unto the man that shall Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from

be after me. And who knoweth whether he shall

their labours; AND THEIR WORKS DO FOLLOW

be a wise man or a fool? yet shall he have rule

THEM" (Revelation 14:13).

over all my labour wherein I have laboured, and

Nothing except your works will follow you

wherein I have shewed myself wise under the

when you leave this world. You have to get

sun. This is also vanity. Therefore I went about involved with the work of God. You must plant

to cause my heart to despair of all the labour

a church in your lifetime. You have to get

which I took under the sun" (Ecclesiastes 2:17involved in your church. God only gives you an 20).

opportunity to be involved in His work. God does One of the words Solomon used many times

not need you. He does not need me. He does not

was the word vanity. Solomon discovered after

even need pastors. If pastors were so important, acquiring everything that everything was vanity. they would not die.

Nobody is of any relevance

God gave him things many human beings could
and significance to God. God's mercy allows us
only ever imagine. King Solomon discovered
to be involved in His work. Our inclusion in the that each
and everything was worthless and
work is God's mercy towards us!
empty. He said, "vanity of vanities all is vanity"
Everything is useless.

11. YOU WILL AVOID BECOMING CRITICAL BY

Everything is useless in the context that

PLANTING CHURCHES.

Solomon was writing; which was the context of
'under the sun.' 'Under the sun' is a commonly
It is better to participate than to be an observer. used
phrase in the book of Ecclesiastes. Under
Observers often become critical of everything.

the sun refers to our earthly existence under the After being idle for some time, you begin to see influence of the physical sun - Zilch. The earthly all the faults in your church. You will notice the existence that we have is useless. That is the

pastor's mistakes when he preaches. You will reality.

notice his mistakes when he quotes scriptures.

Pastors are supposed to teach and preach the

You will notice when the anointing is not as truth. We need to be oriented toward heaven

strong as it usually is. Before long, you will be and oriented toward the day of our judgment. A

familiar with all the shortcomings of your

church planter is someone who operates by this

church. You will eventually fall into criticism and wisdom. Planting of churches is not vanity

become faultfinding. Demons will find in you a

because it will bring us an eternal reward.

haven.

10. Y

12. PLANT A CHURCH BECAUSE THERE IS A

OUR WORKS WILL FOLLOW YOU INTO

H

TIME WHEN GOD EXPECTS YOU TO BE A

EAVEN.

TEACHER.

When you die, nothing goes with you. I have

conducted many funerals. I have stood over the

There comes a time when you should be a

coffins of people that I have known and loved on teacher of
the Word of God. You should teach

this earth. I have buried people and put them

people, you should give something. "FOR

into the ground. I have seen it repeatedly. No

WHEN FOR THE TIME YE OUGHT TO BE

one takes anything out of this world. Cars

TEACHERS, ye have need that one teach you

remain behind, houses remain behind and

again which be the first principles of the oracles money
remains behind. "And I heard a voice

of God; and are become such as have need of

from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are

milk, and not of strong meat" (Hebrews 5:12).

the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth:

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 54

There is a time when you must become a teacher. If you do not become a teacher when you are supposed to, there is something wrong with your spiritual development. One day we went preaching and there was a young woman in the group who I asked to preach at an openair dawn broadcast. She said: "I don't know how to preach. I have never preached before, I don't know enough of the Bible." Then I told her, "You can preach." I told her to repeat everything I said to her. Before long, she was preaching. She preached a whole sermon that morning. She is still serving the Lord today. You will be surprised at what you can do if you only try.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 55

The Work of Church Planters

8

have to do is sit back, relax and enjoy the ride to **CHURCH PLANTING AND**

heaven. Thank God for the ride to heaven. But

GOD'S JUDGEMENT

upon arrival, questions are going to be asked!

"Did you do the things I asked you to do? Did

"Let this mind be in you... For by grace are ye

you do the good works that I ordained for you?" saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: Jesus will ask.

it is the gift of God: NOT OF WORKS, lest any

man should boast. For we are his workmanship,

THE JUDGEMENT OF GOD

created in Christ Jesus UNTO GOOD WORKS,

which God hath before ordained that we should

God is not going to judge us the way He will

walk in them" (Ephesians 2:8-10). The Bible

judge the rest of the world. He has prepared and makes it clear that our works do not save us. We extra judgment for believers. The Bible talks

are not going to heaven because of our good works. Neither are we saved from hell because of our good works. We are saved by grace. Our salvation is from the Lord. You cannot do anything to earn salvation. You cannot be good enough to qualify for heaven! Our best is not of heaven. This is where the decision to admit good enough. Works cannot and will never you to heaven or not will be taken. But there is another judgment seat for believers.

“As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one” (Romans 3:10). “But we are all as an

1. THE WHITE THRONE

unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and

“And I saw A GREAT WHITE THRONE, and him our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us

that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the away” (Isaiah 64:6). Notice however that the

heaven fled away; and there was found no place

portion of Ephesians that talks about “salvation for them. And I saw the dead, small and great,

not by works' is the same that talks about our

stand before God; AND THE BOOKS WERE

being 'created for good works.” This means

OPENED: AND ANOTHER BOOK WAS OPENED,

that after we are saved, we get into the good

WHICH IS THE BOOK OF LIFE: and the dead

works that Christ has prepared for us. Many

were judged out of those things which were

Christians relax because they know that they are written in the books, according to their works.

saved by grace and not by works. They feel that And the sea gave up the dead which were in it;

they are already destined to go to heaven. All we and death and hell delivered up the dead which

55

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 56

56

/ CHAPTER 8

were in them: and they were judged every man

voice from heaven saying unto me, Write,

according to their works" (Revelation 20:11-13). Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from

The B

Book of Life and the book of works

works

henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and THEIR WORKS DO

It is essential that your name be in the allFOLLOW THEM” (Revelation 14:13). important Book of Life. This determines

whether you will enter into heaven at all. But

Many years ago in 1982, I was in medical

the scripture shows us that there are books that school. I remember going for my first Anatomy

also have the records of all the works we do.

lecture. There was so much to write. We wrote

This is the book of works! This book will be

down a lot of notes. As the professor continued opened. It contains records of our works. It will lecturing, I began to wonder whether I was

show the records of churches that have been

expected to write everything. I asked myself, planted. The dead will be judged out of these “Are all these things important?” The lecturer books according to their works.

continued his extensive and detailed lecture on the Introduction to Anatomy. He taught us different anatomical terms like “pronation,

2. THE JUDGMENT SEAT OF CHRIST

supination, external rotation, internal rotation,” etc.

“Wherefore we labour, that, whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him. For we My notes that day almost filled my notebook.

must all appear before THE JUDGMENT SEAT

During the class, I asked a friend, "Caroline, do OF CHRIST; that every one may receive the

you think we are in the right place?" She said, things done in his body, according to that he

"No, I don't think so." She told me she was hath done, whether it be good or bad"

thinking of leaving the school and I said I was

(2 Corinthians 5:9,10).

also thinking of quitting. We could not imagine seven years of this torture. I thought seven

Believers are going to receive judgment for what years would never come to an end. We could

they do in their bodies. We must work the works

not wait for seven years: it was too long! But of Jesus. The things we treasure are going to

gradually the years came to pass and we

lose value in the moment of death. Everything

finished school. The seven years I thought

that has been gathered and accumulated will

would never come, have come and gone. Now

become a mountain of foolishness. Our
it's been twenty-two years since I went to
accumulated wealth, houses, degrees, clothes
medical school. It's twenty-two years since I
and shoes, will stand as testimonies to our
asked that question.

faithlessness. We never believed in the
resurrection! We never believed that we would

The point I am trying to make is that eternity,
resurrect and live again in eternity. Our

which seems so far, will soon be on us. I thought
accumulated perishables will witness against us

seven years would never come by. Some of us

in that day. They will speak to heaven and

think eternity will never arrive. We do not

declare "he was faithless. He did not obey you.

believe in the phase two of our lives. We do not He did not believe, his heart was on the

believe in phase two of our lives. Our time on treasures of this world!”

earth is short and very soon we will all be in

heaven. We will wonder why we thought we

One day you will wake up and find that you are would live on earth forever!

in heaven. On that day, what will you have in

your hand? Baskets of fruits for the glory of

God, or mountains of foolishness that testify

against you? Dear friend only one thing follows you to heaven - your good works. “And I heard a

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 57

THE WORK OF CHURCH PLANTERS / 57

THE CHURCH IN JERUSALEM AND

6. THERE WAS GREAT UNITY IN THE CHURCH.

CHURCH PLANTING

“And all that believed WERE TOGETHER, and

There were two churches worth taking note of in

had all things common” (Acts 2:44).

the New Testament, the Jerusalem Church and

the Antioch Church.

7. GOD GAVE THEM VICTORY OVER EVERY

PROBLEM

AND

DIFFICULTY

THEY

Characteristics of the Jerusalem

ENCOUNTERED.

Church

For example, Peter and John were released from

1. T

the custody of the chief priest and elders. They **HE JERUSALEM CHURCH WAS THE FIRST**

miraculously escaped from jail by angelic **CHURCH.**

intervention. “Then the high priest rose up, and ...laid their hands on the apostles, and put them

2. T

in the common prison. But the angel of the Lord **HE IMPORTANT PEOPLE WERE BASED IN**

by night opened the prison doors, and brought **THE JERUSALEM CHURCH. EVEN THE**

them forth...” (Acts 5:17-19).

APOSTLES WERE BASED IN THIS CHURCH.

8. THE POWER OF GOD WAS GREATLY

**3. THEY WERE THE CHURCH THAT HAD FIRST
MANIFESTED IN THE CHURCH.
HAND INSTRUCTIONS FROM JESUS TO GO
INTO THE ENTIRE WORLD.**

In the book of Acts, people who lied to the
pastors died instantly. "But Peter said, Ananias, why hath
Satan filled thine heart to lie to the

**4. THEY WERE A VERY PROSPEROUS AND
Holy Ghost, ... Ananias hearing these words
FELL DOWN, AND GAVE UP THE GHOST: and
FLOURISHING CHURCH.**

great fear came on all them that heard these
"Neither was there ANY AMONG THEM THAT
things" (Acts 5:3,5).

LACKED: for as many as were possessors of
lands or houses sold them, and brought the

9. UNLIKE MANY CHURCHES TODAY, THEY

prices of the things that were sold, And laid

them down at the apostles' feet: and distribution **CARED FOR THE POOR.**

was made unto every man according as he had

“... and distribution was made unto EVERY MAN need” (Acts 4:34,35).

ACCORDING AS HE HAD NEED” (Acts 4:35).

5. THERE WAS GREAT GROWTH IN THE

10. BUT THEY DID NOT OBEY THE INSTRUCTION CHURCH.

OF CHURCH PLANTING UNTIL CATASTROPHE

“Then they that gladly received his word were **STRUCK.**

baptized: and the same day there were ADDED

“... at that time there was a GREAT

UNTO THEM ABOUT THREE THOUSAND

PERSECUTION against the church which was at
SOULS" (Acts 2:41).

Jerusalem; and they were all SCATTERED
ABROAD throughout the regions of Judaea and
Samaria, except the apostles" (Acts 8:1).

Perhaps all their good characteristics clouded

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 58

58

/ CHAPTER 8

out the reality that they were a disobedient

Notice Paul's philosophy of life. It is only

church. When one of the most promising young

through tribulation that we will enter the

pastors, probably tipped to be Peter's successor, kingdom of God. "...WE MUST THROUGH

died suddenly, they sat up. What a blow this

MUCH TRIBULATION ENTER INTO THE

must have been to the Jerusalem church!

KINGDOM OF GOD" (Acts 14:22).

Everything was going perfectly until this

happened. Every problem had so far worked

A Personal Experience of God's Judgement

together for good. Somehow every challenge

had been overcome by the power of God - until

Years ago, I had a terrible experience in my

this one. Suddenly, they had a dead pastor on

ministry. Within one year, three of my pastors

their hands. "And they stoned Stephen calling

died mysteriously. The first one died on the

upon God..." (Acts 7:59). This marked a turning

evening of Friday, 27 October 2000. I had a call point in the life of the Jerusalem Church. While from his wife that her husband was ill and in the the church was reeling under this blow, the

clinic. Within an hour I had another call on my

secular world stepped up their persecution.

mobile phone from one of my doctor pastors.

"...And at that time, there was A GREAT

She said, "Bishop, Pastor Charles is dead." I said PERSECUTION against the church that was at

to her, "Do you understand what you are

Jerusalem ..." (Acts 8:10).

saying?" I remember exactly where I was when It was this persecution that made the church

I got this call. I couldn't believe my ears. He finally obeyed God. It is easy to be deceived by

was a perfectly normal person. He had even

peace and apparent success. After all Bible said, had lunch in my house the day before.

"...when they say peace, peace, then sudden

I drove straight to the clinic and there I saw

destruction will come upon them..." (1

his wife of only seven months in tears, sitting

Thessalonians 5:3).

outside the ward. She was scared and did not

even know what had happened. As I walked into

We are not to be led by circumstances or

the room, I saw for the first time, one of my own apparent prosperity. These are not indicators of sons in the ministry, a promising young man,

God's blessing. If peace and prosperity were the just 27 years old, lying dead on the bed.

hallmarks of God's blessing then the Apostle

Paul was the greatest sinner because he

That was one of the most pitiful and saddest
suffered so much.

nights of my life. As I watched his wife weep

over her husband's dead body, I wondered what

Notice how many problems he had in his

we had done to deserve this. At his funeral, we ministry.

"Are they ministers of Christ? (I speak encouraged
ourselves in the Lord and tried to

as a fool) I am more; in labours more abundant,

reassure his wife. I didn't know that within a

in stripes above measure, in prisons more

year I would be back in the business of burying

frequent, in deaths oft. Of the Jews five times

pastors and comforting their widows. Two

received I forty stripes save one. Thrice was I weeks later, I

had another call telling me that

beaten with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I

one of my pastors was very ill. Initially, he was suffered
shipwreck, a night and a day I have

being treated at a private hospital but we moved been in
the deep; In journeyings often, in perils him to the intensive
care unit of a bigger

of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by mine hospital. I
remember battling for his life and

own countrymen, in perils by the heathen, in

running around from place to place, trying to

perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in get various
doctors to attend to him.

perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren; In
weariness and painfulness, in watchings

I ran around with blood samples trying to

often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in save his life. It
was all to no avail. Within a few cold and nakedness" (2
Corinthians 11:23-27).

THE WORK OF CHURCH PLANTERS / 59

a phone call from the hospital - another Pastor

heart that I had backslidden. Many people think

Charles was dead. My heart sunk and depression

it is hard to be sent. But it is even more

set in. All strength was gone as I walked home. challenging
to be the one to send people into

Another promising young pastor was dead

what may be poverty and death. But I am

leaving behind a widow with little children. I

determined to go all out and not to restrain

thought it was all over, but a few months later, myself again
when it comes to church planting.

whilst in South Africa ministering, I had a phone I hear the
voice of the spirit saying, 'send, send, call. I had just walked
into my hotel room in

send.'

Pretoria when my Senior Associate Pastor called

One time the Lord rebuked me. He said I was

me from Ghana. He said. "Pastor Fleischer is training many people but I was not sending

dead." I stuttered; "What... How... When...?" them out. He showed me that I needed to

By this time, I knew there was something

balance my training with my sending. The

wrong.

Jerusalem Church eventually became a church

You see, in a sense, we were just like the

planting ministry but through great difficulty.

Jerusalem church. Many of the characteristics

"And Saul was consenting unto his death. And at

of the Jerusalem Church could be found in our

that time THERE WAS A GREAT PERSECUTION

church. We were blessed, growing, prosperous,

against the church which was at Jerusalem; and

powerful, and as they say 'we had it going on.' It they were all scattered abroad throughout the

was this event that finally brought my attention regions of Judaea and Samaria, except the

to God's plan of church planting for my life.

apostles. Therefore they that WERE

Do not misunderstand me. God had already

SCATTERED ABROAD went every where

used me to establish over two hundred

preaching the word" (Acts 8:1,4).

churches. We were into church planting but I

had become comfortable with what we had

THE CHURCH IN ANTIOCH AND

already achieved. I was scared of moving into

CHURCH PLANTING

new territories. I was not so willing to send people anywhere. I had changed, I had backslidden, and I did not even know it.

“Now there were in the CHURCH THAT WAS AT ANTIOCH certain prophets and teachers; as I was a fearful General, afraid to say to one, Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, “go and he goeth.” I could not bear to send and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had these prosperous pastors and workers to areas been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and that desperately needed churches. My Saul. As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, considerations were now different. The the Holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and

“Jerusalem prosperity” had gotten into my head

Saul for the work whereunto I have called them.

and into my heart. I was thinking of the kind of And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid

life people would have in some of these towns

their hands on them, they sent them away. So

and villages. What schools would their children

they, being sent forth by the Holy Ghost,

go to? Would these young men ever have

departed unto Seleucia; and from thence they

enough money to build houses or buy cars?

sailed to Cyprus” (Acts 13:1-4).

The Lord asked me, whether those were the

considerations I made when I was entering the

ministry. The Lord asked me whether our

church would be where it is today if

considerations of personal well-being and

comfort were what had guided us. I knew in my

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 60

60

/ CHAPTER 8

Characteristics of the Antioch Church

**5. THE APOSTLE PAUL MADE THE ANTIOCH
CHURCH HIS HOME CHURCH.**

1. THE CHURCH IN ANTIOCH BECAME THE

He probably felt more at home in the “Antioch

MOST IMPORTANT CHURCH.

Chapel International” Than In “Jerusalem

Christian Centre”.

In The New Testament. Some disciples from

Cyprus and Cyrene went to Antioch and started

a church there. Initially Antioch was just an

6. THERE WERE MANY PROPHETS AND

offshoot of the ministry in Jerusalem. “Now

MISSIONARY-MINDED PEOPLE IN ANTIOCH.

they which were scattered abroad upon the

persecution that arose about Stephen travelled

The Jerusalem church was not so keen on

as far as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch,

outreaches and missionary work. “Now there

preaching the word to none but unto the Jews

were in the church that was at Antioch certain

only” (Acts 11:19).

prophets and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon

that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen,
which had been brought up with Herod

2. IT WAS IN THE ANTIOCH CHURCH THAT

the tetrarch, and Saul” (Acts 13:1).

BELIEVERS

WERE

FIRST

CALLED

“CHRISTIANS”.

7. THE ANTIOCH CHURCH OBEYED THE VOICE

“And when he had found him, he brought him

OF THE HOLY SPIRIT WITHOUT DELAY.

unto Antioch. And it came to pass, that a whole

year they assembled themselves with the

They boldly sent out their best apostles as

church, and taught much people. And the

missionaries to plant churches. “As they

disciples were CALLED CHRISTIANS FIRST IN

ministered to the Lord, and fasted, THE HOLY

ANTIOCH” (Acts 11:26).

GHOST SAID, SEPARATE ME BARNABAS AND

SAUL for the work whereunto I have called

them” (Acts 13:2). Paul and Barnabas did not

3. THE FIRST RECORDED REVIVAL TOOK

see much power when they were in Antioch. It

PLACE IN ANTIOCH.

was when they moved out that they experienced

signs and wonders. The miracles we read about

Because of this Revival, Barnabas was sent to

in the book of Acts are the miracles that

help. The Church in Jerusalem heard of what

happened when Paul and Barnabas were out

God was doing in Antioch and were happy to

planting churches. The great difference

release Barnabas for the Antioch work. "Then between the Antioch Church and the Jerusalem tidings of these things came unto the ears of the Church was in their response to the command of church which was in Jerusalem: and they sent Jesus. The Antioch Church heard exactly the forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as same command to plant churches as the Antioch" (Acts 11:22).

Jerusalem Church did. May we follow the example of the Antioch Church. May we promptly obey the instruction to plant churches. **4. BARNABAS DECIDED TO GET PAUL TO JOIN.**

There is no need to wait for persecution and trouble before we get involved in church planting.

Fruitfulness and Missions

9

saw that it was good" (Genesis 1:24,25). The

THE IMPORTANCE OF BEARING

Word of God teaches us here that every living

FRUIT IN THE KINGDOM

thing is supposed to bring forth after its kind. Which means that you are expected to give birth

My father was a prominent lawyer and

to something which is just like yourself.

politician. He also owned a number of

Why is this the case? Because that is the

racehorses and a hotel. So you see, he was

natural order God has set on the earth! So if you more or less regarded as a "big" man in society. are a frog, God expects you to give birth to

When I became born again, I would often speak frogs, and not to apes. I believe that is the at length to him about Christ. But the more I reason why I failed to influence my father. Even tried, the more I failed. In fact, as a young raw nature shows that it is almost impossible to student, I realized I was nowhere near his bring forth something that is not like yourself. calibre, not to mention the age difference of about thirty years. So he said to me, "Listen, son, if you want me to receive your message,

1. THE BEST PERSON TO MINISTER TO YOU IS

you better go get a doctorate in Theology from

SOMEONE OF YOUR OWN KIND.

Trinity College (a Bible College), then come

again." And that was that. When my father

We all differ in many respects. We are not the

spoke, it was final.

same. You may come from a certain background
or speak a different language. But God can use

I do not recall seeing any born-again

you to minister to your kind, because you are

Christians who were politicians and lawyers

the one who can easily relate to that particular ever speak
to him about Jesus. However, when

category of people.

those of his colleagues who were Freemasons

came after him, he accepted their message and

Women are good at ministering to women,

became a Freemason.

and elderly men find it easier to relate to other elderly
people. Such people are more likely to

It was not until the Lord showed me some

succeed in putting across their ideas, because

Scriptures in the Bible, that I understood why they are on level ground. Usually, it is only my father had not been able to receive the another businessman who can handle the Gospel from me. "And God said, Let the earth objections of a stubborn businessman and tell bring forth the living creature after his kind, him, "Are both of us not businessmen? And [mark those words] cattle, and creeping thing, what do you have that I do not? I am also a very and beast of the earth after his kind: and it was busy person, but I tell you, it is time to make so. And God made the beast of the earth after Jesus your Lord and Saviour." Or a student his kind, and cattle after their kind;...and God 61

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 62

/ CHAPTER 9

could tell his mates, "Hey look, are we not in the Have you noticed that even beasts bring

same class? Remember that I also have exams

forth their own kind? That's how animals

to write, but I still find time to worship the Lord multiply. And that is how churches grow. When

and get distinctions. Jesus is coming soon,

we stop reproducing after our kind, our numbers

man. Don't be left out."

decrease and we begin to die out.

Are you a banker, a secretary or a farmer?

I can say that I am bringing forth a lot of

Whatever kind of person you are, you have the

doctors like myself, who are becoming pastors.

ability to positively influence the people of your In our church today, there are many of such

kind. If you are a businessman then reach out people. These are my spiritual children, having with the Gospel to other businessmen, because been born due to my personal outreach towards you are best at bringing forth your own kind.

my type. As a result, I am not the only person The same goes for market women, mechanics,

of my kind in the church. There are others just rich men, etc. There are people who will only like me.

respond to someone they have something in

Today millions of Christians carry on through

common with: age group, profession, language,

life looking and praying for material things. We social class, etc. That is why the churches in are not concerned about the Lord's

my country, Ghana are pastored by Ghanaians,

commandment to bear fruit spiritually. So we

and not by the British or the Swiss. Because a

walk through life like trees without fruits. Like local pastor finds it easier to relate to his own women who are unable to bear children, we

people. Now, what does it mean to bring forth?

have nothing to show for our Christianity. But

children are so important that people are not

2. THROUGH OUR CHRISTIAN ACTIVITIES

likely to marry if they realize they will not be **OTHER CHRISTIANS WILL BE BORN INTO**

able to have them. Even loving husbands and

G

wives are likely to seek other partners if they

OD'S KINGDOM.

realize their union cannot produce children.

“For in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through In Africa, it

is generally considered a disgrace the gospel" (I Corinthians 4:15). Paul is saying for women to be childless. It is a known fact

here, "By leading you to Christ through the that some desperate women have extramarital

Gospel, I have given birth to you spiritually.

affairs, and pretend the pregnancy was caused

Through my activities, I have caused you to

by their sterile husbands (until the baby is born exist in Christ."

with Chinese eyes, everybody believes it)! As

Do you realize that we're existing because of

you can see, being childless seems to be a big

the activities of our parents? Now through your problem in our society. But God looks down

Christian activities, other Christians who are

from Heaven and sees that there is a far more

just like you will be born into God's Kingdom.

serious problem than that: The problem of not having spiritual children!

Take for example, the Full Gospel

Businessmen's Fellowship International. You

will notice that most of their members are

professionals in their forties and fifties. Their converts are also people in that age group. One reason why they are still thriving, is their

application of God's principle of bringing forth after their own kind. They reach out to people

who are just like them.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 63

FRUITFULNESS AND MISSIONS / 63

REASONS WHY YOU SHOULD BEAR

If, by your spiritual activity, others just like **FRUIT**

you are brought to the Lord and disciplined, then

this fruit you are bearing shows you are for real!

1. THE FIRST REASON WHY YOU MUST BEAR

But if you have no converts to show for your

FRUIT, IS TO SHOW THAT YOU ARE TRULY

Christianity, then there must be something

BORN AGAIN.

missing. You are not genuine. You are just an

attendee. No wonder some so-called Christians

Oh, I know that you pray aloud and sing the

are not even interested in the Bible or the things praise
songs like everybody else. Some of you

of God. Their only response to the pastor's

are the best dancers and so on. But I have come sermon is
one big yawn! Today, many people

to realize that all church members are not

come to church for reasons other than a deep

necessarily Christians. It is unfortunate, but

desire to seek God. Others just follow a family many who go to church are not born again, and member or a friend into the church. That is why do not even know God. Some years ago we had some people fall away when certain things a patient in the gynaecology department of the happen-because they are really not what they Korle-Bu Teaching Hospital in Ghana, where I claim to be. For this reason, I keep telling the was working. This woman was in her early youth in our church, "If anyone wants to marry twenties, but had never been able to have her you, look at their fruits, and not their pretty period. Now, as a doctor I knew that this was faces or sweet "raps". By their fruits ye shall abnormal. When she was medically know them." In a large church like ours, there investigated and examined, we discovered that are all sorts of beasts mingling with God's

this "woman" was really a man! We found "her" genuine flock of sheep. These are wolves in

to have male reproductive organs. Which

sheep's clothing because when we talk about

explained why "she" was unable to have her witnessing, they cannot even bear witness for

period. So in spite of what "she" looked like on Christ. Let me tell you this, that if something the outside, "she" could never bear children; good has really happened to change your life,

"she" was not a real woman-"she" was a "he"!

you will joyfully go about telling others. No one will have to urge you on. It just happens

That is why some people cannot bear fruit naturally. because they are not real Christians. They are

not genuine. They are like some shops in town

Dear friend, if the only Christianity you

which are supposed to be boutiques and spare

practise is by going to church on Sundays, then

parts shops. Yet, they never seem to be open for I am afraid to inform you that there is more to it business. Each day they claim to be "taking than that (in fact, unbelievers attend church on stock", but that is only a front for the cocaine Sundays too)! Real Christianity takes place

business going on at the back. Be careful, some OUTSIDE the church AFTER Sundays. Each

people are not really what they claim to be. So, weekday must have its share of prayer, worship,

how can I tell whether you are a real Christian

Bible reading and labouring for the Lord. So if or not? Well, that is very simple: "Wherefore by you have always comforted yourself with the

their fruits ye shall know them"

fact that you go to church on Sundays, then I am (Matthew 7:20). We can distinguish genuine

afraid I must discomfort you! Church

Christians from counterfeit Christians by

membership does not prove you are a genuine

looking at their fruit! I can tell, when I see you Christian at all! Here is some sound advice from bringing forth other believers like yourself to the 2 Corinthians 13:5: "Examine yourselves,

Lord. (Other students, businessmen,

whether ye be in the faith." Friend, be for real. housewives, or whatever).

First, be born again. Then show by your fruit

that you are a real, committed Christian.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 64

64

/ CHAPTER 9

2. TO PROVE THAT YOU ARE HEALTHY

People like these are spiritually sick, so they cannot bring forth any fruit-just like barren

The second reason why some Christians do not

women, but the Bible instructs us in 2 Peter 1:5 bear fruit is

because they are not healthy. They 8 to add to our faith, virtue... knowledge... are not normal, productive Christians, because

temperance... patience...godliness...brotherly

there is a spiritual sickness somewhere.

kindness...charity. But I thought it was enough Sometimes when a woman (a real one) is unable

for Christians just to remain in the Faith? What to give birth, it is due to an illness-like infertility. do we need all these extras for? For if these

And some causes of infertility are the blocking

things be in you, and abound, they make you

of the fallopian tubes, inability of the ovaries to that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful... 2

release eggs, destruction of the womb due to an

Peter 1:8. If these things be in you...they make earlier abortion and so on. All these are health you...! Notice here that Peter lists a number of reasons, which prevent childbirth.

qualities which immunize us from becoming

In the same way, when Christians are unable

barren and unfruitful in the things of God. That to give birth and be fruitful, it is often because is why some Christians are unfruitful-because

there is a disease in their Christian life. Though they have not added these godly attributes to

they are born again, they are spiritually sick.

their faith. The cancer of sin has made them

One such sickness is laziness (some people are

unhealthy Christians. Unhealthy people

simply too lazy to labour for the Lord)! Another everywhere are not productive.

is pride.

However, the main reason why a lot of

3. TO SHOW THAT YOU HAVE OVERCOME THE

Christians are not productive is because they

CHOKERS OF THE WORD

are living in sin. Indeed, nothing affects fruitful Christian living like sin does. During his days as

“And the cares of this world, and the

a hotel manager, one of my associates recalls

deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other

seeing a Christian girl who came to sleep with a things entering in, choke the word, and it

male lodger at this hotel. After they were

becometh unfruitful” (Mark 4:19).

through with whatever they were doing (your

My dictionary gives the meaning of the verb

guess is as good as mine), this young lady just

"to choke" as: "to block, or obstruct a passage or came out of the hotel room shouting in tongues!

process". That is exactly what happens to some What a shame! Really, it is unfortunate. But

Christians. They become so occupied with other

there are many more like her, who indulge in

things that they no longer have time for the immorality of every kind, and this kills their things of God. Read the text again, and notice ability to witness. I mean, how can you, after that even the normal, everyday cares of life can doing what you just did, speak to him to give his retard your spiritual progress.

life to Jesus?

The demands of your job, for example, or the

Some people have such bad, non-Christian

pressures of academic work, or the challenges

habits that they cannot even muster the courage

of bringing up little children can make you

to share the Gospel. It is all a question of

unfaithful.

character. I remember a certain charismatic

Christian who smoked so much that it became a

Unfortunately, many Christians allow the problem in his office. Everybody complained blessing of marriage to choke the Word, and about it, including his boss. Now, if somebody they end up no longer being useful to God. "But like this tried to preach to others, nobody would Pastor, I'm pregnant now and..." Look, as a take him seriously. He probably would not even doctor I can tell you that pregnancy is not a try, anyway!

disease. In fact, some Christians are so mindful Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 65

FRUITFULNESS AND MISSIONS / 65

of the cares of this world, that all they have to make matters any better! When the final exam

offer are excuses: "But Pastor, my children...my results came in, I had a distinction, while some school...my business..."

of my popular athletic colleagues "bombed" What about the Lord's work? Really, if you

miserably. You see, they missed the point.

are too busy to be involved in winning souls,

Instead of concentrating on the primary goal of

then you are simply too busy! As God blesses

graduating with good grades, they were

and promotes us in this world, He does not

distracted into sports, not studies. They were

intend that it should keep us from doing His

mistaken because they did not set their

work. We must rather overcome these potential

priorities right.

chokers and continue being fruitful in His

Now, I believe that as Christians we must be

vineyard. Oh, I am looking forward to the day

steadfast and unmoved, no matter what is
when the church's regular drummer will still be
happening around us. We must have a vision
playing the drums, though he would have
because without a vision, we will be distracted
become the Minister for Foreign Affairs; when
from time to time.

women will rise up to be pastors, despite the
Even as a pastor I do not preoccupy myself
fact that they have to raise four kids at home;
with too many "political" meetings (we are when ushers will
still be at it, even when they
talking about inter-church politics here). I
have become multimillionaires. When the cares
actually determine to stay away from such
of this world will not choke the Word!

meetings. This is because I want to remain
focused on the vision of winning souls.

4. TO SHOW THAT YOU HAVE OVERCOME THE

The Church of God is the only institution in

DEMONS

AND

DISTRACTIONS

IN

THE

this world charged with preaching the Gospel,

CHURCH

casting out devils, and upholding the truth of

God's Word. We should therefore not deviate

As God's people plant churches, Satan also

into party politics, inter-church politics, trading, assigns
demons to distract church members

or secular education. "Therefore, my beloved
from fulfilling the Great Commission. Every
brethren, be ye steadfast, unmoveable, always
church has its share of them. These evil spirits
[not sometimes, but ...] abounding in the work
cause church divisions and strife-in fact,
of the Lord,..." (I Corinthians 15:58). Here God
anything to hinder the purpose of God!

is telling us as individuals, students, workers, As if that was
not enough, many dubious

and as a church, to remain committed to our
people creep in quietly, as the churches grow.
objectives, come rain or shine.

They lie, cheat, steal and murmur. To fall into Have you
noticed that the principle of always

their company will entice you into wrongdoing.

sticking to one thing, is applied by those who

But more importantly, moving with such people really make a lot of money?

can distract your attention from the real purpose of being a Christian.

Take a successful company like Unilever, a prominent manufacturing company in Ghana

When I was in school, I was despised by some (my country). For generations, they have been

of my mates because I never participated much

steadily producing and making money in Ghana,

in athletics. I chose rather to concentrate on my regardless of the numerous political changes.

studies (after all, that was why I was there in the Governments come and go, but (as they say in

first place); but looking at the way some people their Key Soap commercial) "the tradition goes trained for the athletic events, you would think on."

that was the main reason why they were in

school. Their fans who cheered them on did not

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 66

66

/ CHAPTER 9

And that is one principle that we, as

that will make you pregnant. Do you want to be

Christians, must learn-to remain focused, to

a fruitful Christian? Then you must engage in

carry on, to be undistracted. However, for some the activity
that makes you fruitful-witnessing, Christians the only
tradition that goes on, is

teaching, helping and getting active in the

their constant distraction from important issues. things of
God!

You really should hear them, as they murmur,

Some people say, "But Pastor, I'm the quiet complain and
gossip: "But why does the pastor type, I don't want any

trouble. I just prefer to drink water halfway through his sermon?" "How mind my own business." "I don't want to preach come I am never allowed to sing a solo in the

to my business partner, he'll think I'm 'some

choir?" "Have you heard about that sister? I way'."

hear she broke up with her "beloved" in order to marry so-and-so because he's got a US visa." And with such excuses we remain totally idle

"Pssst. Have you seen the pastor's wife's shoes?

in a vineyard that is ripe for the harvest. So how They must be from Hong Kong." "I hear that can we switch from being mere spectators to

church has a lot of money." "Ei, I hear Rev. active participants? "...break up your fallow

Sackey is going to Zambia." "What about Pastor ground:..." (Hosea 10:12).

Eddy? I hear he..." On and on it goes.

Fallow ground is that which has been left

Multitudes are perishing, and there is much

dormant. Idle! Untouched! Unused! And here

work to be done. But our attention is diverted to the Lord is telling us to break up (cultivate) our insignificant things. Now, as a member of any

fallow ground. That is, to utilize our untapped church, there are bound to be a whole lot of

potential. Today there are a lot of genuine, but things which can distract you. But the real issue dormant Christians in the Church. They are

is to win souls and make disciples for Jesus.

gifted with talents which can enable them to

Period. If only we remain steadfast and

perform even better than those who are already

unmovable by keeping our focus on the Great

engaged in serving the Lord.

Commission, we cannot fail to bear fruits.

However, they just sit there, doing nothing,

while a few labourers do their best to fulfil the **5. TO SHOW**

THAT YOU ARE AN ACTIVE

Great Commission. So it appears as if only a few
CHRISTIAN

are called, but I am convinced by the Word that
many are called. Many men! Many women!

Gynaecologists know for a fact that many

Many young people! Every single Christian has

childless couples are not sexually active. They a role to play
and until you get involved to the just lie by each other like
wawa and odum logs

point where you are actually bearing fruit, you

in an articulator truck headed for a harbour!

cannot call yourself an active Christian.

Some married women actually want children,

As you begin to use your talents and gifts in

but do not want to have sex. They "commit" love the service
of the Lord, you will find yourself

only about once a month, and then turn around

becoming more and more active. Your regular to complain that they cannot have children. Christian activity will yield results, and your That is how it is with some people. They are fruits will definitely begin to show.

Christians alright, but because they are not active, they have no children-no converts, no fruits. Just look around, and you will observe

6. TO SHOW THAT YOU ARE MATURE

that passive Christians bear no fruits. Another reason why you must begin to bear Do you want to be pregnant and have fruits after your own kind, is to show that you children? Then you must engage in the activity are maturing. A Christian without converts is

FRUITFULNESS AND MISSIONS / 67

immature. It shows that you are not fully

Which means to stay, or be planted. To be

developed. You are not of age. You are unripe.

resident. To remain in Christ. To continue in

We see the same thing in the physical, where a

the things of God. You see, you have to abide in girl who is
say, five or nine years old cannot give the same place for
some time in order to become

birth. This is because she is not yet mature or productive in
that very place. After all, every

full-grown. After you are born again your main

tree has to be nurtured over a period of time

aim must be to grow, so that you can move from

until it can bear fruits on its own. No mango

childhood to adulthood. From immaturity to

tree can bear fruits after just one year.

maturity.

For example, many of the pastors and elders

But there are a whole lot of Christians who

in our church have been abiding here for a long

remain in the infant stage. By the time they

time-abiding Christians who have developed

ought to have grown to the point where they

into fruitful leaders. It is only by staying here to also teach others, they still have need for

be watered and tended, that they have grown to

somebody to follow them up and so on. To

become useful in this very place. But a lot of

them, the church service is like some drama on

Christians do not allow themselves to get to this TV. All they remember about the sermon are

point, because whenever they are planted, they
the jokes. An immature Christian runs around
uproot themselves. Today they are here.
from church to church and from one programme
Tomorrow, there. One day they are involved in
to the other, looking for excitement. He is
this, the next time it is something else. A tree looking for the
latest thing in town.
that is often transplanted will never, ever grow to its full, fruit-
bearing potential.
If a famous evangelist were to start a church
across the street, they would immediately drop
Older people are usually more stable in what
everything and fly there! Listen, are you looking they are
doing. They seem to have a certain
for something new? Then let me tell you, there
"staying anointing". Have you noticed that the is nothing
new under the sun. Do not be an airy

members of the older Christian denominations

Christian, blown about by every wind of

will seldom, if ever, switch to another

doctrine. Such people are shallow and childish,
denomination? I mean, I have met older people

tossed to and fro, but a stable Christian knows who have
made it plain to me that though they

what he is about, and does not allow anything

do understand our "born-again" message, they to sway
him. He is stable. This is maturity! The will never change. Of
course, that's a negative mature tree says, "I will not be
moved. I will attitude, but there is a positive aspect of
staying remain planted here, and focus on growing, till I in
one place, which the younger generation

bear my fruits." Church of God, it is time to grow must learn.
My initial efforts to reach other

up! It is time to show by our fruits, that we are medical
students were unsuccessful. They just

mature. "When I was a child, I spake...I

ignored me, but as I continued in the Lord's
understood...I thought as a child: but when I
work, I began to succeed. This is because you
became a man, I put away childish things" (I
get stronger and stronger as you abide. Today,
Corinthians 13:11).

the very doctors and medical students who
ignored me are responding to the Gospel. Are
you having problems trying to affect your peers?

7. IT SHOWS YOU ARE ABIDING.

Just keep at it. Continue in the good work. With

"...the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except time they will
begin to respond.

it abide...He that abideth in me and I in him, the Dear
Christian, God wants you to have a

same bringeth forth much fruit:..." (John

restful spirit. Be stable in church. Be

15:4,5). Jesus is saying here that you and I

permanent. Abide. Make a quality decision to

cannot bear fruit, except we abide in Him.

be planted in a Spirit-filled, Bible-believing

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 68

68

/ CHAPTER 9

church. Then decide to remain rooted until your lot of
ridicule and suspicion. Sometimes people fruits begin to
show. "Those that be planted in treat you spitefully,
because they assume you

the house of the LORD... shall still bring forth are jobless
with nothing better to do. I endure fruit in old age;..." (Psalm
92:13,14).

the shame, because of the unspeakable joy of

winning souls for the Lord! You will never know this joy until
YOU begin to bear fruit and see it **8. BEAR FRUITS IN
ORDER TO HAVE JOY.**

growing.

“Lo, children are an heritage of the

LORD...Happy is the man that hath his

9. SO THAT YOU WILL NOT BE ASHAMED

quiver full of them:...” (Psalm 127:3,5). Here

we understand that he who has many children is

One of the most common verses engraved on

a happy man. However, children do not come so

many tombstones in our cemeteries is taken

easily. In fact, when you consider the many

from Revelation 14:13. “...Blessed are the dead painful and embarrassing things that happen at

which die in the Lord from henceforth...that

the labour ward, it makes you wonder, "Why do they may rest from their labours...".

women want to have more children?" First of all, Now notice: It did not say, "Blessed are those there is the shame of exposing themselves to

in the choir," or "Them that die in the church." total strangers. Then there is the agony of

Friends, it is a matter of being in the Lord, not labour itself. The pelvic bones actually move to just in the church! But the text ends with a very allow the baby to come out. Sometimes when it

important revelation: ...and their works do becomes necessary to cut the women, their follow them. Look, when you die you cannot screams confirm the terrible pain they suffer.

take anything along with you. No, not your car, Really, it is not a small matter. When I first your money, or even your clothes.

observed a delivery, I had a renewed respect for women. After death the only thing which can follow

you are your works. That is, the fruits you have So why do they do it over and over again?

borne in your Christian life. The disciples you Jesus explained: "...she remembereth no more

have established in the Lord, your Christian
the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the children.
world” (John 16:21). After the baby is born,
there's a joy that women feel, which I cannot
As I pointed out earlier on, it is considered a
possibly explain. Only those who have
great shame to be childless in our society. Now,
experienced it can explain it to you, but there's concerning
spiritual children, we learn that:
a supreme joy after childbirth. A deep
“Happy is the man that hath his quiver full of
fulfilment after having brought forth someone
them [children]: they shall not be ashamed...”
they can call their very own. It is this joy that (Psalm 127:5).
makes them go through it again and again.
Very soon you are going to stand before the

In the same way, there is a joy you will never

judgement seat of Christ. Are you going to

experience till you lead others to be born again stand there, empty-handed and ashamed? Or

into the kingdom of God. For someone to be

will you bear your fruits now, so that your works born again and stabilized in Christ under my

can follow you? Think about it.

ministry, is a joy I cannot adequately express.

The Bible says, "Happy is the man who has his quiver full of such children." This is what keeps me going in the ministry, in spite of all the

situations I face as a minister. Apart from often being away from my family, I have to endure a

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 69

FRUITFULNESS AND MISSIONS / 69

10. TO PRESERVE YOUR OWN KIND IN THE

CHURCH

In the seventh chapter of Genesis, God commanded Noah to enter the ark with his wife, his three sons, and their wives. In addition, he was to take with him, male and female counterparts of every kind of beast. Why was God so interested in preserving a sample of every kind of animal in the ark? It was to keep life going on the earth after the flood. Take a look at verse three: Of fowls also of the air by seven, the male and the female; to keep seed alive upon the face of the earth. The Helen Spurrell Translation of The Old Testament puts it this way: "...to preserve the species..." (Genesis 7:3). By so doing, God has ensured the survival of each type of animal to this day, because He knew that Noah could never give birth to any of the other animals. He could only reproduce his own kind-human beings.

This same principle applies spiritually.

Bearing fruit after your own kind will ensure

that your particular "species" continues to exist in the church. When the Lighthouse Chapel was

founded, about half of the small congregation

was made up of student nurses. This ratio was

sustained for some years.

However, at a point, the student nurses

slacked in their outreach towards their own

kind. So as they continued to graduate and to be transferred outside the city, their representation in the congregation diminished. Today, you will not find so many nurses in our church-because

they failed to preserve their own kind.

For this same reason, many churches which

used to be the cutting edge of Christianity are

nowhere to be found today. How sad!

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan

Barrenness in the Church

10

FIVE SIGNIFICANT

HEBREW

DIAGNOSING BARRENNESS

WORDS

When barrenness is taken away, fruitfulness is always the result. Barrenness is the number

1. “AQAR” - (GENESIS 11:30; JUDGES 13:2,3;

one cause for a lack of church planting in the

GENESIS 25:21; 1 SAMUEL 2; 5;

modern Christian church. But God wants us to

DEUTERONOMY 7:14)

be fruitful. God wants us to plant churches. In order to be fruitful you must understand what

This word means “the destruction or removal of

barrenness really is. Some pastors are barren.

generative organs”. It also means 'To have nonNo matter what they do, their ministries never functioning organs; to be barren or sterile. It is flourish. This is the problem God wants to deal used in reference to people like Sarah, and the

with in our churches.

mothers of Sampson and Rebecca.

In the next few chapters, we will be studying

“There shall nothing cast their young, nor be

the concept of spiritual barrenness and how it

BARREN (AQAR), in thy land: the number of thy

affects church planting. Barrenness is the

days I will fulfill” (Exodus 23:26). Churches or number one cause for a lack of church planting

individuals suffering from “AQAR” barrenness

in our generation. There are a lot of activities are deficient

in the generative aspects of

and a lot of programmes but there is little or no ministry. This means they are deficient in the

church planting.

outreach and fruit bearing aspects of church life. They are unable to give birth to other churches. As we study, God will reveal to us the causes

Such churches have many activities but

of barrenness in our lives, churches and

programmes that generate new churches are

ministries. There are several Hebrew and Greek

absent. Every minister must consider the

words that are translated “barren” or

outreach aspect of his ministry. Do you have

“barrenness”. These words throw light on the

crusades? Do you plant new churches? The

subject of spiritual and ministerial barrenness. absence of crusades, breakfast meetings,

Let us consider each of these words as witnessing campaigns and church planting, definitions of barrenness.

shows a deficiency in the generative aspect of your ministry. Barren people also receive the Word and probably have the tapes. They may even be involved in other activities of the church. They are seen at prayer meetings and become “fat” spiritually.

70

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 71

BARRENNESS IN THE CHURCH / 71

However, such people will not be involved in

3. “MELECHAH” - (2 KINGS 2:19; PSALMS

church planting, evangelism or soul winning.

107:34; JEREMIAH 17:6)

They have a deficiency in their spiritual generative organs.

This word means “a salted land, a desert or a barren land”. It speaks of “no produce” and “no life”. The land is dead to any kind of seed.

2. “SHAKOL” - (LEVITIVUS 26:22; 2 KINGS 2:19, D

People suffering from “MELECHAH” are

EUTERONOMY 32:25)

spiritually salted lands. In spite of what you pour This means “to miscarry, to suffer abortion, to

into them, they are unable to bear fruit. They

be bereaved of children, to be barren, to cast

are incapable of germinating seeds.

your young, to make childless and to be

A cursory glance at every congregation will reveal several "salted lands" staring at you. beasts among you, which shall rob you of your Mercy and atonement! They have been in the children, and destroy your cattle, and make you church for many years and have heard many few in number; and your high ways shall be sermons. They have been anointed and prayed DESOLATE (SHAKOL)" (Leviticus 26:22). Such for specially, but still cannot bear fruit. Much is churches or ministers cannot keep the souls that poured into them but little can be expected from God gives them. As you can see, they constantly these salted ones. cast their young and suffer abortions. Such ministers cannot sustain the growth and are

There are also salted churches. No matter
unable to continue in the things that God gives
the input, the church does not grow. No new
to them.

churches are planted from that church. Until
the salted land is healed, there will be no fruit. Many
churches receive large numbers of

“And the men of the city said unto Elisha,
visitors and even converts. You must work on
Behold, I pray thee, the situation of this city is keeping
these converts. You must make sure
pleasant, as my Lord seeth: but the water is
that your visitors come again. I always pray
naught, and the ground BARREN (MELECHAH).

over my members. "Lord when they go, let them And he
said, Bring me a new cruse, and put salt
come back to church. As they come back, let

therein. And they brought it to him. And he
them come with more people." This kind of
went forth unto the spring of the waters, and
prayer counteracts 'SHAKOL' barrenness. I pray
cast the salt in there, and said, Thus saith the that each
member becomes a minister and that
LORD, I have healed these waters; there shall
each minister gives birth to a church. Another
not be from thence any more death or BARREN
reason why such churches are unable to break
LAND. So the waters were healed unto this day,
out is that they attack their young leaders. They according
to the saying of Elisha which he
kill fresh blood. The leaders do not allow
spake" (2 Kings 2:19-22).
mavericks to flourish around them. The
anointing on all of us is greater than the

A pastor who is a salted land does not give anointing on one person. You must allow fresh rise to other pastors of his own kind. He leaders and pastors to be released under your remains in the church he pastors, but cannot ministry. The fastest growth always occurs bring forth other pastors. Break out of the when there are multiple ministers working salted state and start to think of birthing many together. more churches. I remember the story of a church that could not grow. No matter what happened and no matter who preached, there was no break through. One day a visiting pastor was waiting on the Lord and he had a vision.

/ CHAPTER 10

Way up in the ceiling he saw a demon sitting

5. “TSIYAH” - (ISAIAH 41:18; PSALM 63:1)

above the congregation. This evil spirit had

greatly affected the church for many years. God This word speaks of being “parched and

had opened the pastor's eyes to see the “salt”

barren”. It speaks of “a drought, a dry land and that was making the church barren. He dealt

a wilderness”. “I will open rivers in high places, with the evil spirit and commanded it to leave.

and fountains in the midst of the valleys: I will After that experience, the church began to grow

make the wilderness a pool of water, and the

in leaps and bounds. I believe there are real

DRY LAND (TSIYAH) springs of water” (Isaiah

salted situations that need the healing hand of

41:18). This kind of church is often dry of the God. I see God removing the saltiness from

Spirit. It is a wilderness devoid of worship,

your life, church and ministry!

prayer and the lifting up of hands. Such

churches and individuals are very secular and

logical in their approach to life and the ministry. 4.

“OTSER” - (PROVERBS 30:16)

Spiritual dryness and the lack of worship is a

true cause of barrenness.

This Hebrew word means “to inclose, to hold

back and to maintain”. It also means “to close

Introducing new worship songs will often

up, to restrain, and retain’. In addition, it means fight against this kind of barrenness. Sometimes

“to shut up, to withhold and to stop”. “The

changing your worship leader will lead to a

grave; and the BARREN (OTSER) womb; the

major change in your church. Changing your

earth that is not filled with water; and the fire choir leader and the type of songs your choir

that saith not, It is enough" (Proverbs 30:16).

sings can greatly affect your church. Perhaps if the choir were to sing songs about soul winning

People suffering from this kind of barrenness

and reaching the lost, church planting would

hold back intentionally. They know a lot, but

begin. Do not wait forever to make the changes

they hold back and refuse to be fruitful. Pastors you need to make.

with 'OTSER' barrenness have the finances and

the anointing to plant churches. However, they

give their strength to other things like

TWO SIGNIFICANT GREEK WORDS

orphanages, schools and social work. Some of them are more concerned with being politically

1. “STEIRAS” - (LUKE 1:7, 36; LUKE 23:29; GALATIANS 4:27)

church planting is restrained. Such people can do many things for the Lord but are restrained

“And they had no child, because that Elisabeth and hold back their talents. These are usually

was BARREN (STEIRAS), and they both were experienced in the Lord who could do much

now well stricken in years. And, behold, thy more for Jesus. Often they have decided to

cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son

give their strength and talents to other things. in her old age: and this is the sixth month with In your congregation, you will notice people who her, who was called barren” (Luke 1:7,

36). This are leaders of Old Boys Associations or even word means 'to be stiff and unnatural'. It speaks political groups. They have time for politics, of sterility and barrenness. "Stiffness" speaks of soccer, MBA's, PhD's and other activities.

people who are unyielding and disobedient to

However, when it comes to the work of God,

the Word of God. Anyone who is disobedient to

they are inclosed and restrained. They are

the word will be barren. Such people love to

reserved when it comes to prayer and worship,

look distinguished and diplomatic. Sometimes

but vocal when it comes to discussing politics

they pretend to be spiritual but in reality they and other issues. These are the people suffering are not.

from "OTSER".

BARRENNESS IN THE CHURCH / 73

Churches often have these unspiritual and

One way to diagnose barrenness is to look at

stiff people sitting in the front row. This can how the dictionary defines it. If you apply these prevent growth and induce the 'STEIRAS'

definitions to your church, you will know

atmosphere that does not allow growth. You

whether you are barren or not. God will show

will notice that growing churches are full of

you if a spirit of barrenness is in operation. Let lively, exuberant and excited people dancing and us now look at the dictionary definitions of

praising the Lord. It is time to remove the 'deep barrenness and see how they apply to ministry.

freezers' from the prominent positions we have

given them. The church is not a 'who is who'

Twenty Definitions of Barrenness

parade.

1. To be barren means to be unfruitful.

2. “ARGOS” - (2 PETER 1:8)

2. To be barren means to be sterile.

3. To be barren means to be childless, heirless

This word means “inactive, unemployed lazy
and issueless.

and useless”. It also speaks of “being idle, slow and barren”. Surprisingly, laziness is one of the 4. Barrenness means you are non-productive.

principle causes of unfruitfulness in ministry.

5. To be barren means to be deficient in

Lazy people are inactive in church. Their
production.

laziness makes them useless to God. “For if
these things be in you, and abound, they make

6. Barrenness means you are not conceiving at
you that ye shall neither be BARREN NOR
all or producing at all.

UNFRUITFUL (ARGOS) in the knowledge of our

7. A barren person is someone who produces
Lord Jesus Christ" (2 Peter 1:8).

in very small quantities.

Unfortunately the church is made up of

8. A barren land is a wasteland.

masses of spiritually inactive people. To break this type of
barrenness, it is important to preach 9. Barren trees do not
produce the normal

about diligence. It is important to teach the
fruit.

congregation that they must win souls for the

10. Barrenness speaks of bleakness.

Lord.

11. To be barren is to be depleted.

DIAGNOSING BARRENNESS IN THE

12. To be barren is to be deserted.

CHURCH

13. Barrenness speaks of dryness.

14. A barren thing can be described as not

It is important to diagnose barrenness when it
being copious.

exists in the ministry. The diagnosis of a
problem often leads to the solution. Even in

15. A barren land is a scanty land.

medicine, 80% of our problems are solved when

16. Barrenness is sometimes dullness.

the diagnosis is made. Many ministries are
operating under a spirit of barrenness. Many

17. A barren individual does not produce after

pastors are unaware that they can have a

his kind.

greater level of fruitfulness. In this chapter, I 18. Barrenness speaks of wanting or needing

will show you some signs you must look out for

the power of conception.

in the ministry. If Jesus were standing by you, He would say these words to you. "Herein is my

19. Barren places are impoverished.

Father glorified, THAT YE BEAR MUCH FRUIT;

20. Barren places are un-tillable.

so shall ye be my disciples" (John 15:8).

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 74

Let us now look at the symptoms of

16. If there is no growth in the length and depth barrenness within the church context. Examine

of your prayer or no prayer at all.

your ministry and see whether barrenness

17. If there is no increase in challenges and exists.

mountains to overcome.

Signs of Barrenness in the Church

18. If there is no challenge and inspiration to a greater vision.

Barrenness can be said to exist in a church if any of the following exist:

19. If there is no growth in understanding.

1. If there is no growth in the number of your

20. If there is no growth in fellowships and church members.

branches.

2. If there are no converts or, no growth in the Now that you have diagnosed the problem,

number of converts.

receive the prophecy of the Lord for your

ministry. Believe that these words are coming

3. If there is no growth in church attendance.

to pass in your life. "SING, O BARREN, thou

4. If there is no growth in the number of full

that didst not bear; break forth into singing, and time staff.

cry aloud, thou that didst not travail with child: for more are the children of the desolate than

5. If there is no baptism or, no growth in the

the children of the married wife, saith the

number of people baptized.

LORD. ENLARGE THE PLACE OF THY TENT,

6. If there is the absence of healings and

and let them stretch forth the curtains of thine miracles.

habitations: spare not, LENGTHEN THY CORDS,

and strengthen thy stakes; FOR THOU SHALT

7. If there is no growth in the number of

BREAK FORTH ON THE RIGHT HAND AND ON

leaders in the church.

THE LEFT; and thy seed shall inherit the

8. If there is no increase in the knowledge of

Gentiles, and make the desolate cities to be

God.

inhabited. FEAR NOT; FOR THOU SHALT NOT

BE ASHAMED: neither be thou confounded; for

9. If there is no growth in the depth of

thou shalt not be put to shame: for thou shalt

relationships.

forget the shame of thy youth, and shalt not

10. If there is no growth in the number of

remember the reproach of thy widowhood any

visions and dreams given by the Holy Spirit

more. For thy Maker is thine husband; the

or none at all.

LORD of hosts is his name; and thy Redeemer

the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole

11. If there is no programme to send out

earth shall he be called. For the LORD hath

missionaries or, to increase the number of

called thee as a woman forsaken and grieved in

missionaries sent out.

spirit, and a wife of youth, when thou wast

12. If there is no growth in the finances of the refused, saith thy God. For a small moment church.

have I forsaken thee; but WITH GREAT MERCIES WILL I GATHER THEE. In a little

13. If there is no increase in the number of wrath I hid my face from thee for a moment; but scriptures you know.

with everlasting kindness will I HAVE MERCY

14. If there is no growth in your experience in ON THEE, saith the LORD thy Redeemer” the ministry.

(Isaiah 54:1-8).

15. If there is the absence of or, no growth in You see, because I am bearing fruit after my the outreaches of the church.

own kind, there are many medical students and

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 75

BARRENNESS IN THE CHURCH / 75

doctors in our church. There are several doctorpastors in the ministry with me now. Some of them are even in full-time ministry. I have

preserved my own kind! Now YOU too can begin

to make converts of people who are just like you. This is your contribution to the growth and

continuity of the church.

Dear friend, just think about the increase we

would have, if only the church of God would

apply God's prescribed method-Individual

Christians bearing fruit after their own kind. As we all begin to operate in this way, we will

surely experience a higher success rate in our

personal evangelism, resulting in growth on all

sides for the Body of Christ.

Dear friend, this is your time to bear fruit

AFTER YOUR OWN KIND.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 76

Fighting Different Kinds of Barrenness

11

PRACTICAL STEPS

FIGHTING THE BARRENNESS

OF OLD AGE

1. DO NOT TRANSFER THE DUTY OF OUTREACH AND CHURCH PLANTING TO ANYONE ELSE.

“Abram married Sarai, but she was not able to
have children” (Genesis 11:30 Contemporary

The pastor must lead the congregation to win

English Version). "Now Sarai Abram's wife bare the souls and bear fruit. According to Genesis him no children: and she had an handmaid, an 16:1-2, Sarah shifted the responsibility of child Egyptian, whose name was Hagar. And Sarai bearing to someone else. This was an attempt to said unto Abram, Behold now, the LORD hath overcome the barrenness she was experiencing. restrained me from bearing: I PRAY THEE, GO She tried to overcome barrenness in the wrong IN UNTO MY MAID; it may be that I may obtain way.

children by her. And Abram hearkened to the voice of Sarai. And Sarai Abram's wife took Hagar her maid the Egyptian, after Abram had

2. DO NOT REJECT THE PROPHETIC WORD.

dwelt ten years in the land of Canaan, and gave

“Therefore Sarah laughed within herself,

her to her husband Abram to be his wife. And he

saying, After I am waxed old shall I have

went in unto Hagar, and she conceived: and

pleasure, my Lord being old also?” (Genesis

when she saw that she had conceived, her

18:12). Prophetic messages can make a

mistress was despised in her eyes” (Genesis

difference in your ministry. Believe in the Lord 16:1-4). We all know the story of Abraham and

and you shall be established, believe in His

Sarah. You could consider Sarah as a type of the prophets and you shall prosper. Sarah laughed

church. You could also consider her as a type of when she heard the prophecy about Isaac.

minister. Sarah could be likened to a pastor who Receive the visitation of God for your life

is not bearing as much fruit as he ought to.
through revelations, dreams and the spoken
Sarah could be likened to a wilderness kind of
word. Years ago, I received a message from a
church in which there is no life.
prophet. He saw me carrying a flaming torch
and leading many people. He gave this message
to me in 1980. Twenty-four years have gone by
and this prophecy remains in my heart as a true
vision.

76

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 77

FIGHTING DIFFERENT KINDS OF BARRENNESS / 77

It encouraged me to do the work of God as a
student. It encouraged me to persist in the

FIGHTING FAMILIARITY

ministry even after school.

Familiarity is the greatest block to the anointing. It cuts off the flow of the anointing that is

3. BELIEVE IN GOD, HIS PROPHETS AND IN

needed for church planting and church growth.

THE PREACHING OF HIS WORD.

Ministry is a spiritual thing and unless spiritual principles are obeyed, the ministry dries up and

“And God said unto Abraham, As for Sarai thy

barrenness results. Michal is a type of barren

wife, thou shalt not call her name Sarai, but

ministry. Michal suffered from familiarity

Sarah shall her name be” (Genesis 17:15). Walk

toward her husband. She paid for it by

in your calling. You must overcome the greatest

becoming barren. Many people have become enemies of the faith walk. Walking in fear and barren in ministry because they became too intimidation will not lead to fruitfulness in familiar with the man of God. "David went ministry.

home so he could ask the Lord to bless his family. But Saul's daughter Michal went out and **4. T** started yelling at him. "You were really great

AKE THE PRACTICAL STEPS THAT LEAD TO

today!" she said. 'You acted like a dirty old man, **FRUITFULNESS EVEN IF IT LOOKS LIKE**

dancing half-naked in front of your servants

SOMETHING FOR YOUNGER PEOPLE.

"slave girls" David told her, "The Lord didn't

"For Sarah conceived, and bare Abraham a son

choose your father or anyone else in your family in his old age... And Abraham called the name

to be the leader of His people. The Lord chose

of his son ... Isaac" (Genesis 21:2,3). Decide to me and I was celebrating in honour of him. I'll

be youthful, zealous, emotional, exciting,

show you how great I can be! I'll even be

energetic and adventurous again. This will

disgusted to myself. But those slave girls you

break the spell and curse of barrenness over

talked about will still honour me". Michal never your ministry.

Sarah had sex with her husband

had any children" (2 Samuel 6:20-23

at the age of ninety. No matter what prophecy

Contemporary English Version).

is spoken over your life, there will always be

some practical things you have to do. Isaac was

SEVEN THINGS EVERYONE SHOULD

not supernaturally conceived as in the case of

KNOWABOUT FAMILIARITY

Christ Jesus. He was conceived by the normal method of sexual intercourse. Sarah had to

1. Familiarity means to know someone or undress and act like an energetic young lady something very well and in such a way as to with a youthful husband. Abraham and Sarah cause you to lose your admiration, respect were forced to engage in sexual happiness in and sense of awe.

their nineties. Can you imagine a ninety year old, menopausal woman acting like a pretty

It also connotes a sense of becoming youthful bride again? Some ministers act and

presumptuous, where a person is too

think like people that are too old. Some amount confident in a way that shows a lack of

of youthfulness is needed in the ministry.

respect.

Youthfulness is necessary for fruitfulness.

2. Familiarity was the cause of Michal's

barrenness.

3. Familiarity is still the cause of spiritual

barrenness in Christians today.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 78

78

/ CHAPTER 11

4. Familiarity is the greatest block to receiving **FOUR GROUPS THAT OFTEN**

God's power from God's men.

SUFFER FROM FAMILIARITY

5. No matter how great the gift of God, it is neutralized by familiarity.

1. COLLEAGUES

Jesus was the greatest healer and teacher, Usually it is people who know you closely who yet his anointing was neutralized by the suffer from familiarity. When I started my presence of familiar people. "And he went church as a medical student, very few of my out from thence, and CAME INTO HIS OWN colleagues were able to receive from me. They COUNTRY; and his disciples follow him. And knew me too well and would say in their hearts,

when the sabbath day was come, he began

"Is this not Dag? We know him and we know his to teach in the synagogue: and many

class. We saw him struggling at an exam last

hearing him were astonished, saying, From

week. We know when he passes and when he

whence hath this man these things? and

fails! How can this lanky boy call himself a

what wisdom is this which is given unto

pastor?"

him, that even such mighty works are

wrought by his hands? IS NOT THIS THE

CARPENTER, the son of Mary ... And they

2. RELATIVES

were offended at him. AND HE COULD

Relatives also suffer from familiarity. They

THERE DO NO MIGHTY WORK, save that he

would say. "Is this not Azoyzoy's (my father's laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and

nickname) son? We carried him when he was a

healed them" (Mark 6:1-3,5). This scripture

baby." They ask, "Do you remember me? I shows us that Jesus could not perform

carried you when you were two years old." They miracles in His hometown. They knew Him

say, "I knew your father very well." With this too well to receive Him as the Son of God.

background, how can such people receive me as

They had questions about His parents, His

a man of God?

family and His background.

6. Moses who commanded a pillar of fire by

3. PASTORS' WIVES

night and a pillar of cloud by day could not

impress his own sister Miriam.

Pastors' wives often suffer from severe

She criticized him about his marriage and familiarity. Just like Michal, when everyone is suffered for it. My heart is often closed to

impressed, they are not impressed with their those who are familiar towards me. I simply

husbands. They say things like, "I know you", do not flow towards them. I can virtually

"No one knows you better than I do", "I am the sense the questions in the hearts of people

only one who can tell you certain things!" "I am suffering from familiarity.

not one of those people who give you praise and

affirmation in the office!", "If people knew how 7. Familiarity carves out a road of ministry for you really were, they would be surprised", "No anointed people.

one knows what you are really like." In a sense, It directs

them away from their colleagues,

they are right about all these things, but the fact friends and family. It leads them towards

is that they are also victims of familiarity!

the non-familiar, the poor the forgotten and

neglected ones. This is where the outsiders

4. CLOSE FRIENDS AND ASSOCIATES

come in. They often come in to replace

people that have become too familiar with

These people also experience familiarity. They

the anointed one.

have been around you for so long and they have

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 79

FIGHTING DIFFERENT KINDS OF BARRENNESS / 79

seen your vicissitudes. It is easy to slip and slide
circumstances, the person is susceptible to the

into familiarity. Sometimes it would be better

spirit of familiarity.

not to know someone closely in order not to

It takes spiritual discipline not to become

develop an air of familiarity. Familiarity breeds familiar. I have noticed in my life and ministry disloyalty. Familiarity created Judas. Judas is how people become over familiar when given

referred to, as "mine own familiar friend".

the slightest chance. Let me just remind you of

When people are familiar, they lose their respect the definition of familiarity.

and they cross boundaries they should never

cross. Familiarity makes people say things they Familiarity means, "to know someone or

should never say.

something very well and in such a way as to

cause you to lose your admiration, respect and

When Michal spoke against David, she stood
sense of awe. It also connotes a sense of
in the shoes of a rebel fighting and opposing
becoming presumptuous, where a person is too
God's anointed. She became a critic of "the man confident
in a way that shows a lack of respect. after God's own
heart". David had built a

"One day, a young lady was having a problem in
tabernacle but she was not impressed. God
her marriage.

called him 'a man after mine own heart' but she, a mere
mortal, despised him. Imagine that God

Her husband said to her, "I am going to report is impressed
but you are not impressed. Isn't it you to the Bishop".

amazing? Familiarity often stems from jealousy

She retorted, "I don't care. He also has

and carnality. Michal was jealous of the girls
problems".

who seemed to appreciate David's ministry. She disliked the fact that David seemed to be I smiled when I heard this. I knew that it was impressed with these young whippersnappers. only familiarity that was rearing its head. "Then David returned to bless his household. Perhaps I was wrong to have allowed this person And Michal the daughter of Saul came out to to spend a few nights in our home. meet David, and said, HOW GLORIOUS WAS On another occasion, another relative who THE KING TODAY, who uncovered himself to had spent a few days with our family was having day in the eyes of the handmaids of his servants, some problems. After counseling this relative, as one of the vain fellows shamelessly

she seemed to have understood what I had uncovereth himself!" (2 Samuel 6:20). When shared with her. She thanked me and seemed to Miriam criticized Moses, she no longer saw him be blessed. Unfortunately, I later heard that she as God's anointed. She moved into the flesh and had said that I was a man of knowledge and not became a disloyal rebel. "And Miriam and Aaron experience. What she was saying was that I had spake against Moses because of the Ethiopian no experience in the kind of problem she had woman whom he had married: for he had and that my advice was therefore theoretical. I married an Ethiopian woman" (Numbers 12:1). thought to myself, "Today, I have become a man Judas was the highest kind of traitor. He paid of knowledge without experience. It is only

the ultimate price for allowing himself to be
because I allowed this person to relate closely to deceived
by familiarity. "Yea, mine own
my family and I, that she had the nerve to make
familiar friend, in whom I trusted, which did eat such a
comment." Sometimes it is better to
of my bread, hath lifted up his heel against me"
know someone from afar so that you can
(Psalm 41:9).

continue to receive from his ministry. When you
I have had different people becoming close to
are too familiar with your pastor, you can
me at different times in my life. Circumstances
mistakenly see him as a man of knowledge
can sometimes cause people to associate closely
without experience.
with the man of God. Under these

/ CHAPTER 11

Assessing Familiarity Levels

receive from him. But right here, there are students who do not bother to cross the road

In your relationship with a man of God, are you and come to church".

becoming familiar? The following signs will help you determine to what extent you are familiar.

You see, familiarity breeds contempt.

Remember that familiarity is the highest kind of Familiarity is all about knowing someone very

anointing killer. It has the highest form of well. This causes you to lose your admiration neutralizing power of God's gift.

and respect.

TWELVE SIGNS OF FAMILIARITY

2. YAWNING

1. O

Yawning is often a sign of boredom. A familiar

FTEN SITTING AT THE BACK OF THE

person is presumptuous and arrogantly assumes

CHURCH.

he knows what is coming. Often, people who

Familiarity is when you are no longer intrigued

yawn during the preaching of the word are

and excited about the pastor and his preaching.

saying, "I know this sermon, I know what is You do not bother to come near anymore.

coming. I know his line of thought. This man has Familiar people just sit at the back and observe nothing new to say, Forgive!

from a distance.

Once I attended a Kenneth Hagin conference

3. SLEEPING DURING PREACHING

in Tulsa, Oklahoma. When I came into the hall,

the ushers tried to give me a seat at the back. I Sleeping occurs when we are tired. But

thought to myself, "How can I sit at the back sometimes it occurs as a result of monotony and

when Kenneth Hagin is preaching. I want to be

boredom, when the man of God fails to intrigue

as near as possible!" I negotiated with the usher you anymore, you may find yourself sleeping as

and even made a friend. I told him, "Sir, you he preaches.

don't know where I have come from." I

continued, "I have flown thousands and

4. NOT BUYING OR LISTENING TO TAPES

thousands of miles to be here today. I need to be as near

as possible. There is no way I can go

Someone who listens to preaching tapes has not

upstairs or even to the back." He seemed to become familiar with the pastor's voice. He sees understand and eventually I had my way.

it as an opportunity to be continuously blessed

Unbelievably, I managed to sit on the second

by the pastor when he is not around. Have you

row. I was so excited when Kenneth Hagin

asked yourself why you do not buy tapes

walked by my seat as he preached.

anymore? The answer may be familiarity.

When you are familiar, seeing a man of God

nearby or from afar makes no difference. Later

5. NOT BUYING AND READING BOOKS

on, I had a discussion with the principal of their **WRITTEN BY YOUR MAN OF GOD.**

Bible School. I asked him if they had any problems with their students. To my surprise, I notice how people come from afar to buy my books. There are times people have travelled He said to me. "There are some students who many miles to acquire and devour large quantities of my books and tapes. Amazingly my these." He lamented, "This is a great prophet own church members often pass by these same and people come from all over the world to books and tapes and instead call for two meat

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 81

FIGHTING DIFFERENT KINDS OF BARRENNESS / 81

pies and a bottle of Coca Cola. Familiarity

7. DISCUSSING THE FAMILY ISSUES OF THE

causes you to lose your sense of wonder and

MAN OF GOD.

intrigue.

“Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the **6.**
DISCUSSING THE BACKGROUND OF THE

brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and

Simon? and are not his sisters here with us?

MAN OF GOD.

And they were offended at him” (Mark 6:3). By

Every man of God basically, is a 'man'. Since he doing this,
you are cutting yourself from

is a man, he goes through what all men go

receiving God's miracle for your life. When Jesus through.
No man that God ever chose had a

went to his hometown, there was a long

perfect life. He has a past! He has a family. He discussion

as to who he really was. Someone has failings. He has an imperfect marriage. He said, "I know that boy, he is my nephew. He and has challenges just like every one else. It's easy his father have repaired my wardrobes and to pick on any aspect of his natural life and cupboards for many years". Jesus could do very neutralize him. Discussing the man of God in a few miracles because of the high level of natural way is a sure sign that you have lost familiarity and doubt in the city. Do not let your sense of fascination for him. This is the familiarity cut off your blessing. surest way to cancel out the effect of the anointing on your man of God.

8. FAULT-FINDING AND MAGNIFYING FAULTS

“Thumos” and “Ekplesso”

Whenever you think of the great men of God you respect, you do not often think of their faults. When Jesus preached in His hometown, the

When there is a visiting preacher, no one

scripture says in Luke 4:28, “when they heard

considers whether he is impatient or easily

these things, they were filled with wrath.” The angered. No one thinks of whether this man is in word “wrath” in Greek is the word “THUMOS”.

debt or whether he has an extravagant lifestyle. This means incipient displeasure fermenting in

All we do is to receive the ministry of this man the mind, it speaks of fierceness, indignation (as of God. However, these are thoughts that occur

if breathing hard) and wrath. The familiar

to us about men of God that we are familiar

people were angry with Jesus' sermon. But

with. We think, "He must be angry today, this when He

preached in Galilee according to Luke

man is not patient." As he preaches we say to 4:32 "they were astonished at His doctrine".

ourselves, "We understand what he is saying; The word "astonished" is the Greek word

why does he not progress to the next point?" I

"EKPLESSO" which means to be amazed

remember years ago, I had a church member astonished and struck with terror.

who really enjoyed my messages. She

recommended me highly to many people who

Notice that there are only four verses

later joined the church. However as time went

between THUMOS and EKPLESSO. Notice also

by, she became familiar with my preaching and

that THUMOS took place in Nazareth, Jesus'

me.

hometown. EKPLESSO took place in a city of

Galilee about two hundred kilometers from

One day after church she said to me, "I think Jesus' hometown of Nazareth.

you went over last week's point for too long." She continued, "There was very little time for the new points that you brought up." A few

weeks later, she made another remark, "The

repetition in your preaching is too much." After this I noticed the frown on her face each time I Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 82

82

/ CHAPTER 11

preached. This lady eventually stopped coming

natural you will see weakness, dishonour and

to church. She might have been right but what

corruption. "So also is the resurrection of the

she did not realize was that, I was preaching to dead. It is sown in CORRUPTION; it is raised in

people who came to church this week and
incorruption: It is sown in DISHONOUR; it is
missed the next week. I virtually had a new
raised in glory: it is sown in WEAKNESS; it is
crowd every week. I might have had my faults,
raised in power” (1 Corinthians 15:42,43).

but God has worked through me in spite of

The anointing for ministry is transferred from
them. Have you removed the log in your own
one man of God to another. The anointing for
eye? Why are you concentrating so hard on the
church planting is transferred from one person
speck in the pastor's eye? Familiarity has made
to another. Elisha had an exemplary

you critical.

relationship with Elijah. He called him 'father' and served him for many years. He did not lose

9. EVALUATING AND RATING MEN OF GOD.

regard for the anointing because of his closeness. He was the beneficiary of a double

Democracy in its essential nature, calls on us to portion of one of the greatest anointings.

evaluate our leaders constantly. This is what

Not every one suffers from familiarity. Some enables us to vote for the right person.

people are able to stay close and still have a high Unfortunately, many are deceived when they

regard for the anointing. I have people around

think that this same practice of evaluation must who have seen my human 'weakness',

be brought into the church.

'dishonour' and 'corruption' for many years and

I was coming home one day after church

yet they maintain a sense of awe, fascination

when someone asked a question in the car. He

and respect for the presence of God upon my

asked, "How did you find the sermon?" The car life. That is what Elisha did for many years and was quiet for a moment then someone said, "I he received the double portion of the anointing

think he did well, I will give him 70%." Then an that was on the life of Elijah. Do not be deceived older man said, "No, no, no. He deserves about by the apparent weakness of God's men. The

49%." Someone asked "Why 49%, the message weakness is God ordained. It is intended to filter wasn't too bad?" I mused to myself, "This poor off unworthy recipients of the grace of God.

pastor is being assessed by his congregation." Jesus taught us to appear weak in the face of

arrogant and aggressive people. Turn the other

cheek simply means do not fight. It could even

10. NOT BELIEVING THE MAN OF GOD'S

mean act weak! Do not mind if they think you

ADVICE.

have no power. Is it not a 'weakling' who would subject himself to more humiliating slaps? Is it When you regard someone highly, you cherish

not a weakling who would allow himself to be

whatever advice he has to offer. As familiarity

cheated of his clothes? But this is the Lord's sets in, it becomes more and more difficult to

instruction to us. "But I say unto you, That ye accept advice. Every time advice is given there

resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee

is a reason not to follow it.

on thy right cheek, TURN TO HIM THE OTHER

ALSO. And if any man will sue thee at the law,

11. HAVING NO REGARD FOR THE ANOINTING

and take away thy coat, LET HIM HAVE THY
CLOAK ALSO. And whosoever shall compel thee
When you become familiar, you no longer relate
to go a mile, GO WITH HIM TWAIN. Give to him
with a man of God spiritually. The fact that he is that asketh
thee, and from him that would
even anointed does not occur to you. All you see borrow of
thee turn not thou away” (Matthew
are natural things. If your eyes are on the
5:39-42). “Now Elisha was FALLEN SICK OF

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 83

FIGHTING DIFFERENT KINDS OF BARRENNESS / 83

HIS SICKNESS WHEREOF HE DIED. And Joash
ELISHA, HE REVIVED, AND STOOD UP ON HIS
the king of Israel came down unto him, and
FEET” (2 Kings 13:20,21). You can even be dead

wept over his face, and said, O my father, my

and anointed! Believe it or not, the lingering father, the chariot of Israel, and the horsemen

anointing on a dead prophet raised someone

thereof. And Elisha said unto him, Take bow and

from the dead. It is easy to be deceived by the arrows. And he took unto him bow and arrows.

natural weakness of God's servants.

And he said to the king of Israel, Put thine hand upon the bow. And he put his hand upon it: and

Elisha put his hands upon the king's hands. And

12. NOT HONOURING AND APPRECIATING YOUR

he said, Open the window eastward. And he

MAN OF GOD.

opened it. Then Elisha said, Shoot. And he shot. And he said, The arrow of the LORD's

As you get used to your pastor, it is easy to take deliverance, and the arrow of deliverance from

him for granted. We often neglect those with

Syria: for thou shalt smite the Syrians in Aphek, whom we are familiar. I remember one pastor

till thou have consumed them. And he said, Take who had never been honoured by his

the arrows. And he took them. And he said unto congregation. His church was constantly

the king of Israel, Smite upon the ground. And blessing a particular honoured visiting preacher. he smote thrice, and stayed. And the man of

When this visiting preacher came to hold a

God was wroth with him, and said, Thou

convention, the crowds would gather and the shouldst have smitten five or six times; then

people would express their appreciation for the hadst thou smitten Syria till thou hadst

visiting minister. They would bring money and

consumed it: whereas now thou shalt smite

gifts to honour this visiting minister. But the Syria but thrice”
(2 Kings 13:14-19).

church would never honour its own pastor. The

deception here is that the visitor is the one who Elisha was
sick but anointed. He was dying

is sent from God to them. But the reality is that but he was
still anointed. His weakness,

their own familiar pastor is the one who labours dishonour
and corruption were apparent to all.

over them with love. I teach my church

He performed his last miracle on his death bed

members that it is biblical to honour and give

and God moved mightily. One of the highest

gifts to the man of God. This is not to enhance kinds of
deception is to look on outward

the lifestyle of the man of God but it is to honour
appearances and pass judgment. “...for the

God's gift and to kill the spirit of familiarity. LORD seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh

on the outward appearance, but the LORD

looketh on the heart" (1 Samuel 16:7b). This is

THE KEY OF INTERCESSION

what leads to racism and prejudice of which we

are all guilty. Mercy and forgiveness! How often **AND**
CHURCH PLANTING

we judge people by what we see on the outside.

Our error will be exposed shortly.

Following are examples of ministries that were
transformed as a result of intercessory prayer.

Dead But Anointed

1. T

"And Elisha died, and they buried him. And the

HE CHURCH PLANTING MINISTRIES OF

bands of the Moabites invaded the land at the

PAUL AND BARNABAS

coming in of the year. And it came to pass, as

“Now there were in the church that was at

they were burying a man, that, behold, they

Antioch certain prophets and teachers; as

spied a band of men; and they cast the man into

Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger,

the sepulchre of Elisha: and when the man was

and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had

let down, and TOUCHED THE BONES OF

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 84

been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and

3. THE MINISTRY OF ELIJAH

Saul. AS THEY MINISTERED TO THE LORD,
AND FASTED, the Holy Ghost said, Separate me
Elijah's ardent prayer as he bent over asking for Barnabas
and Saul for the work whereunto I
rain, remains the most well known example of
have called them. And WHEN THEY HAD
fervent prayer. "And Elijah said unto Ahab, Get
FASTED AND PRAYED, AND LAID THEIR
thee up, eat and drink; for there is a sound of
HANDS ON THEM, THEY SENT THEM AWAY. So
abundance of rain. So Ahab went up to eat and
they, being sent forth by the Holy Ghost,
to drink. And Elijah went up to the top of
departed unto Seleucia; and from thence they
Carmel; and HE CAST HIMSELF DOWN UPON

sailed to Cyprus" (Acts 13:1-4). The ministries THE
EARTH, AND PUT HIS FACE BETWEEN HIS

of Paul and Barnabas were born out of

KNEES, And said to his servant, Go up now, look
intercession. The greatest church planters of

toward the sea. And he went up, and looked,

the New Testament times were born as they

and said, There is nothing. And he said, Go

ministered unto the Lord and fasted. A praying

again seven times. And it came to pass at the

church will always lead to new ministries and

seventh time, that he said, Behold, there ariseth church
growth. The way out of barrenness is the

a little cloud out of the sea, like a man's hand. way into
church planting. It is the way into

And he said, Go up, say unto Ahab, Prepare thy

evangelism. I believe that fervent prayer will

chariot, and get thee down, that the rain stop

almost always lead to fruitfulness in a minister's thee not.
And it came to pass in the mean

life. A prayerful church almost always becomes
while, that the heaven was black with clouds

fruitful. Churches are planted and ministers are and wind,
and there was a great rain. And Ahab

sent out when real prayer begins.

rode, and went to Jezreel. And the hand of the

Lord was on Elijah; and he girded up his loins,
and ran before Ahab to the entrance of Jezreel”

2. THE MINISTRY OF HANNAH

(1 Kings 18:41-46).

Hannah is a good example of a barren ministry.

This is the classic example of fervent prayer

Hannah is one of the great examples of someone
that was spoken of by James. I see you praying

who broke out of the power of barrenness and

fervently to release the rain of God's blessing on became very fruitful. The great key that

your ministry! Look at the example of Elijah as Hannah demonstrated was again the key of

he prayed to God for rain. Elijah's prayer

intercession. Evangelists and missionaries are

released the rain of God. When the rain comes,

always born out of intercession. Hannah was in

there will be new plants. All the new churches

serious trouble. She desperately needed a

are waiting for the rain. The new things that

breakthrough. She didn't just doodle and

God has in store will be released through the

dawdle. To "doodle and dawdle" means to "hang rain. "Ask ye of the LORD rain in the time of the around, loiter, to waste time and to make wavy

latter rain; so the LORD shall make bright

impressions." She was dead serious about what clouds, and give them showers of rain, to every she wanted from God. Dear pastor, fervent one grass in the field" (Zechariah 10:1). prayer will make you give birth to a new dimension in ministry. Intercession will always

4. THE MINISTRY OF JACOB

lead to new spiritual children. "Now Hannah, she spake in her heart; only her lips moved, but "And Jacob was left alone, and there WRESTLED her voice was not heard: therefore Eli thought A MAN with him until the breaking of the day" she had been drunken" (1 Samuel 1:13). (Genesis 32:24). Jacob's all-night wrestling prayer yielded tremendous results. Jacob was blessed and so was his seed. Several thousand

FIGHTING DIFFERENT KINDS OF BARRENNESS / 85

years have gone by but the fruit of this fervent forth thine
hand to heal; and that signs and

prayer is evident for all to see. Israel still stands wonders
may be done by the name of thy holy

as one of the most favored nations on the earth. child
Jesus. And when they had prayed, the

place was shaken where they were assembled

together; and they were all filled with the Holy **5. THE
MINISTRY OF MOSES**

Ghost, and **THEY SPAKE THE WORD OF GOD**

“Then came Amalek, and fought with Israel in

WITH BOLDNESS” (Acts 4:23,24,30,31).

Rephidim. And Moses said unto Joshua, Choose

God heard their prayer and look at the

us out men, and go out, fight with Amalek:

results. When a church begins to pray fervently tomorrow I will stand on the top of the hill with there are always results. The Word of God is

the rod of God in mine hand. SO JOSHUA DID

preached when prayer goes forth. Churches are

AS MOSES HAD SAID TO HIM, AND FOUGHT

planted when the Word of God is preached. It is WITH AMALEK: and Moses had said to him, and

important to stress that fervent prayer is what

fought with Amalek: and Moses, Aaron, and Hur

makes the difference. Sometimes, I look at

went up to the top of the hill. And it came to

people who claim to be having a prayer meeting.

pass, when MOSES HELD UP HIS HAND, THAT

Some of them are sleeping and others are just

ISRAEL PREVAILED: and when he let down his

whiling away time. How would you feel if

hand, Amalek prevailed. But Moses' hands were someone fell asleep whilst talking to you? You heavy; and they took a stone, and put it under would think that he is either disrespectful or him, and he sat thereon; and Aaron and Hur very uninterested in you.

stayed up his hands, the one on the one side, and the other on the other side; and his hands were steady until the going down of the sun”

7. THE MINISTRY OF JESUS CHRIST

(Exodus 17:8-12). Moses' burning prayer for

Jesus prayed passionately for the will of God to victory over Amalek, is another example of

be done in His life. “Who in the days of his

fervent prayer. Amalek is a type of demonic

flesh, when he had offered up prayers and

force that fights against God's church from
supplications with strong crying and tears unto
behind.

him that was able to save him from death, and

The constant attacks by Amalek will distract the was heard
in that he feared" (Hebrews 5:7). The church planting drive
of every ministry. It is

evidence of this was when He began to sweat

important to rise up in the ministry and deal

blood. Fervent prayer always works. The

with Amalek spiritually.

ministry of Jesus was a great success! Two

thousand years after these prayers, churches

are still being planted. Books are still being

6. THE INTERCESSION OF THE JERUSALEM

written. Songs are being composed about

CHURCH

Christ. More people are volunteering their lives to the service of our great God. You will have

The New Testament Church prayed fervently for great success in your ministry when you learn the power of the Holy Spirit to be upon their how to pray fervently. Whenever you don't know leaders. "And being let go, they went to their what to do, do what Jesus did. Jesus shouted own company, and reported all that the chief when He prayed! Jesus prayed until He was priests and elders had said unto them. And

sweating! Read it for yourself! "And being in an when they heard that, they lifted up their voice agony he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat

to God with one accord, and said, Lord, thou art was as it were great drops of blood falling down God, which hast made heaven, and earth, and

to the ground" (Luke 22: 44).

/ CHAPTER 11

THE KEY OF COVENANT MAKING

THE KEY OF THE ANOINTING AND

AND CHURCH PLANTING

CHURCH PLANTING

God is a covenant keeping God. There is a little A church planter must seek to be anointed with

understood revelation on how to move the hand

the Holy Spirit and his power for effective

of God, which I call the key of covenant making. ministry.

Hannah made a covenant to give her child to the

Rebecca was anointed to break out of

Lord. There is no need for anyone to make a

barrenness into fruitfulness. "And they blessed covenant before you give your child for the

Rebekah, and said unto her, Thou art our sister, service of the Lord. However initiating a

be thou the mother of thousands of millions, and covenant with the Lord can provoke Him to

let thy seed possess the gate of those which hate bless you supernaturally; Hannah provoked God

them" (Genesis 24:60). I prophesy the anointing

to open her womb and to release her children to

of Rebecca over your life and ministry! Say it

her. She promised Him the first child even if it over and over to yourself and believe that the

was the only one.

grace for fruitfulness and church growth are

Jacob was another person who covenanted to

released in your life and ministry. It shall surely the Lord and by that invoked a great blessing on come to pass. It shall surely come to pass at last!

his life. “And Jacob vowed a vow, saying, If God
“And they blessed Rebecca...”

will be with me, and will keep me in this way
that I go, and will give me bread to eat, and
I bless you to become endued with power for
raiment to put on... then shall the LORD be my
ministry!
God” (Genesis 28:20,21).

“... Thou art our sister...”

A final example of someone who covenanted
I declare that you are my brother and
to the Lord was Jephthah. “And Jephthah
colleague in the ministry of the Lord Jesus
vowed a vow unto the LORD, and said, If thou
Christ. We are working together for the Master. shalt
without fail deliver the children of Ammon We have the

victory over the enemy. No weapon

into mine hands, Then it shall be, that

formed against us will prosper.

whatsoever cometh forth of the doors of my

house to meet me, when I return in peace from

One may put to flight a thousand, but two of

the children of Ammon, shall surely be the

us shall put to flight ten thousand.

LORD's, and I will offer it up for a burnt

"...be thou the mother of thousands of

offering" (Judge 11:30,31). Covenant making is

millions..."

a special kind of prayer in which you engage the Lord in a legally binding agreement. Many

May you be endued with the power for

people become unfaithful when He honours

ministry! May you become the father and
them in the ministry. The Lord is looking for
mother of thousands and thousands of spiritual
faithful people who will remain true to His
children! May you have great increase! You will calling as
the years go by.

see thousands of thousands coming to the Lord
in your ministry! You will experience the things Perhaps a
prayer of commitment from you to
that God has prepared for you!

always be faithful to the call of God will release the grace of
God that you so desire upon your

“...And let thy seed possess the gate of those
life. If you will not be faithful to God why will which hate
them”

He give you His precious anointing? All those
who made these covenants kept them and the
Lord also kept His side of the covenant.

FIGHTING DIFFERENT KINDS OF BARRENNESS / 87

May you have victory over Satan and demons!

May you conquer towns, villages and cities for

Christ! May the battle always be in the gates of your enemy and never in your own gate!

As you read this chapter receive the blessing

of Rebecca! I prophesy the anointing of Rebecca over your life and ministry! Say it over and over to yourself and believe that the grace for

fruitfulness and church growth are released in

your life and ministry. It shall surely come to pass! It shall surely come to pass at last!

A PProphetic W

Word

Stand and fight, for it is the last battle on this earth. The gates of hell have been opened wide

but heaven has also released its forces. We shall surely win for the captain of the host is Jesus. Many are wounded but many are still strong!

Rise from the ashes! Let the wounded join in to fight for the last time. We can win says the

Lord! We shall win says the Lord! Your scars

shall become the reason for your honour in the

resurrection. In that day, the wounds of battle shall make you an honourable warrior. Greater

and greater is the glory that awaits my faithful servants! Your glittering crowns, your beautiful mansions, your precious stones and your

unspeakable rewards are piling up for eternity.

Fear not for I have determined the time and the

hour of your victory!

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 88

The Doctrines of Sacrifice and Obedience in Church Planting

The price of glory is the same for everyone!

PLANTING OF CHURCHES

The scripture says that unless a corn of wheat

AND SACRIFICE

disappears into the ground and dies, it will be alone.

“And Jesus answered them, saying, the hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.

The Missionary

Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat FALL into the ground and DIE, it abideth

The corn of wheat symbolizes the missionary.
alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much

And the missionary is the one who will be sent

FRUIT” (John 12:23,24). Sacrifice is the missing out to

plant the churches. To be alone means to ingredient for church planting. This master key
be fruitless. It means to be without members or
will take the average ministry from barrenness
followers. This dying process in the man of God
to fruitfulness. Sacrifice is the key that will will eventually
bring out much fruit. Jesus
transform a reverend minister from an official
would not have borne the fruit He did if He had
with a title, to a truly fruitful minister. It will not died on the
cross. He would have been
make a church grow from a single church to
alone in heaven with His Father. He could not
chain of churches. It will make a pastor move
have saved us if He had not died and gone to
into church planting. The readiness to die is a hell. To win
followers for Himself and His Father, missing ingredient in
many good churches.

He had to fall in the ground and die.

Many of our churches will remain small until we

The corn of wheat has to fall into the ground

have people who are ready to sacrifice. There

and die. When the seed falls into the ground, it comes a time when what is needed is sacrifice.

disintegrates and decomposes. This is what we

Failure to sacrifice always results in barrenness. call dying. The seed actually goes through a

A lot of churches have reached the borderline.

process before it comes out as fruit. That can

Many ministries can do more but they don't. It's only take place when it disappears and dies.

because they don't want to sacrifice. They do not The need to "die" is the most important truth to lack information or knowledge. Many people

grasp. There are many sincere leaders who

know what I know. If you have read my books,

know many things. They have heard much and you must have some knowledge. However, think they are high up in God. Knowledge knowledge is not enough! You will not have the unfortunately breeds pride. "... we know that fruits I have even if you have the knowledge that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, I have. For you to have what I have, you must but charity edifieth" (1 Corinthians 8:1). The pay the price. There is a price for everyone to kingdom is more than a school of history and pay. doctrines. It is more than acquiring numerous certificates of Bible knowledge. Knowledge

88

without this process of dying will yield nothing. **THE
MAKING OF A CHURCH**

Have you noticed that some of the most learned
PLANTER

and scholarly Bible expositors are very
ineffective at real ministry? In fact sometimes, the more
scholarly they become the more

1. THE FALLING PROCESS

faithless and godless they are. A single corn will Falling into
the ground speaks of a period in a

become a big tree with many fruits only if it falls man of
God's life in which he is unknown and

into the ground and dies.

hidden from the view of the general public. It

also speaks of a period of rejection, negative

The Secondary School of Ministry

response, refusal, denial and denunciation in his It is time to send your young men out. It is time life. Church planters and missionaries will go

to release those who have been trained into the

through this experience many times. Don't

fields of ministry. The Lord has constantly led

worry; isolation, rejection and separation are

me to send my best people out. One day, a

part of real ministry. Concerning John the

Senior Pastor who had several junior pastors

Baptist, the Bible declares that he was hidden in under him asked me; "How can I improve the

the wilderness until the time of his showing

quality of my pastors?" I said, "Send them to the unto Israel. Every pastor must realize that God

'secondary school' of ministry." I told him, "Most has a time in his life when he must be hidden.

of the pastors under your care are still in the

Do not be in a hurry to be exposed since 'primary school' of ministry and they have been premature exposure leads to destruction. Jesus there for many years." "Instead of releasing Christ was hidden for thirty years before he was them into the next stage of ministry, you have exposed to public ministry. His appearance in kept them with you and that has destroyed them the ministry surprised those who didn't know spiritually." I explained, "Instead of these ones that a seed had been in the ground for thirty becoming pastors of hundreds of people, some years. of them have become guitarists, singers and Moses experienced this falling into the ushers in your church. They never moved on in ground. He was utterly rejected by his brethren ministry."

when he first tried to minister to them. He

I continued talking with this pastor, "it is very ended up in the wilderness for forty years. After difficult to send away people you are used to. It years of rejection and isolation, he was ready to is difficult to send away people you love. You minister. Joseph had this same experience of

even risk destroying your relationship with them falling into the ground. His visions and dreams as they may develop a spirit of rejection." I were utterly rejected. Then he himself was

explained; "There are pastors who are very

utterly rejected and dispensed with. He found

honoured and happy to be overseeing thousands

himself working as a slave and then as a

of people today. But when I sent them away

prisoner in Egypt. After several years of

from me to begin these churches, they were

separation from his brethren he was finally

often sad and felt rejected. I had to counsel and ready for a

great ministry.

affirm my love towards them many times." I These are just a few examples of this pattern

continued encouraging my friend to send out his

of falling into the ground. I tell you, no true

best people. I explained again, "Unless they go minister is truly accepted until he has been

through the experience of the dying seed, they

rejected. I have experienced this falling into the will never really bear fruit. They will prance

ground myself. When I started out in ministry I around you and busy themselves with many

was utterly and totally rejected by the ministers activities in church, but actually, bear no fruit." of my day. One minister that I had a good

relationship with refused to minister to our

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 90

/ CHAPTER 12

group anymore. When I asked why, he said, "I went through a period of utter rejection and don't sow amongst thorns anymore." He and I continued the ministry work in virtual other pastors claimed that I was not called by separation from most of the ministers I had God and had no business starting a church. known. God then taught me to minister through They felt I was a medical student who should lay people. You see, most of the ministries at concentrate on his schooling. They told my that time were based on full time workers. Don't assistant not to associate with me because it be worried when you are not accepted or was dangerous to stay with someone who was wanted. Don't be upset when no one invites you.

not called by God.

Your day of “showing forth” will come! Today, I told another minister with whom I had a

am accepted and even respected by some of

good relationship, that I had started a church. I these great pastors who initially despised me.

received an instant rebuke and was questioned

Perhaps they had no choice but to accept me.

as to which Bible school I had attended. I was

After all, I am here even if they don't want me. discouraged and I went away with my “tail

“And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, between my legs”. To emphasize the rejection,

and was in the deserts till the day of his

this pastor decided to hold a campaign right

shewing unto Israel” (Luke 1:80).

where our church was meeting. He held a big

programme and showed a very powerful video

2. THE DYING PROCESS

of his national and international programmes. It was one of the best presentations of that

When the seed falls to the ground, it

ministry I had ever seen. Our church looked like disintegrates and decomposes. It utterly

a group of lame ducks and dwarfs after this

changes in its character and appearance. By the

presentation. A powerful invitation was then

time God is finished with you, your appearance

made to me to join this ministry.

will be different. Your character will be utterly transformed. Allow the dying process to

After they had left, I asked myself, "Who

continue. Except the seed dies, it abides alone. would want to be with us when there are such

Unless these qualities are allowed to develop,

powerful and established ministries in the city?" your ministry will not develop.

After that programme, we felt demoralized and discouraged. It was obvious that we were a

a. D

Developing A

A PPersonal R

Relationship W

With G

God

group of struggling students attempting to do

During this period of alienation, many important ministry work. I also remember an incident

spiritual traits will be birthed in the man of God. when I met one of these great pastors of an

A personal relationship with God is one of the

established church. It was at a wedding being

most important things that you will learn when
held on the university campus. I went up to him
people reject you. Every true minister derives
to say hello and he said, "Oh, hello Dag" Then his strength
from the Lord directly: You see,
he paused, looked at me and said, "Pastor!" As many will
come in that day and say, "I cast out
I stood before him, I felt in my heart that he was demons in
your name and I did great works in
mockingly referring to me as a pastor.
your name". But the Lord will say, "I never
I almost asked him "Sir why are you mocking knew you".
This goes to say that every minister
me?" "Why do you call me 'pastor' when you must be very
particular with his relationship
don't believe that I am a pastor?" I don't know with the Lord.
Rejection stops the horizontal
how those words never came out of my mouth.

(human) relationships and leaves you to develop

Dear friend, I tell you, that the only thing I felt the vertical (God) relationship.

at that time of my ministry was rejection and intimidation.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 91

THE DOCTRINES OF SACRIFICE AND OBEDIENCE IN CHURCH PLANTING / 91

b. D

Developing H

Humility

5. "And he said, O my Lord, send, I pray thee,

The rejection by man is intended to make you

by the hand of him whom thou wilt send"

develop humility. Humility is the highest

(Exodus 4:13).

mantle a minister can wear. The more humble

6. And Moses ...said, "Lord, ...Why is it that a minister, the higher his standing before the thou hast sent me?" (Exodus 5:22).

Lord! One of the common deceptions in the

7. And Moses spake "... the children of Israel church is that the larger your church, the higher have not hearkened unto me" (Exodus 6:12).

your standing before the Lord. That is not the case; Jesus made it clear that the greatest

8. And Moses said "... I am of uncircumcised pastor will be the most humble and childlike lips" (Exodus 6:30.)

amongst us. "And said, Verily I say unto you,

9. And Moses cried unto the LORD, "... They Except ye be converted, and become as little

be almost ready to stone me” (Exodus 17:4).

children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven” (Matthew 18:3).

10. And Moses said unto the LORD, “Wherefore hast thou afflicted thy servant?” (Numbers

John the Baptist's humility was evident. He 11:10).

made it clear that he was not worthy to unlace the shoes of Jesus. He deferred to the Lord and

11. And Moses said, “the people are six hundred stated that Jesus must increase as he decreases. thousand footmen” (Numbers 11:21).

How many pastors today want others to increase Joseph after being a prisoner for some years while they decrease? “He must increase, but I did not think of vengeance when he saw his must decrease” (John 3:30). The humility of

brothers. He could see through it all that God
Jesus was evident. He humbled himself and
had meant it for good. Joseph had become so
became obedient even to the death of the cross.
mature in the things of God that he felt his
Moses lost all confidence in himself. The
brothers had done nothing wrong. In fact he felt Bible calls
him the meekest man on earth.
his brothers were used by God. After going
Wouldn't you be meek after forty years in the
through all that I have been through, I have
wilderness as one of the ten most wanted men
come to love and appreciate the people who
in Egypt? When you read about the call of
once rejected me. I feel that God used them to
Moses, you see how Moses had zero confidence

train me in the ministry. I bear none of them a in himself. He was a great person but his

grudge and I value their ministries greatly. Even opinion of himself was genuinely very low.

the bitterest of experiences have worked out for Notice Moses' own assessment of himself.

my good.

The Eleven Complaints of Moses

3. BEARING MUCH FRUIT

1. And Moses said unto God, "Who am I?"

Bearing fruit is a very spiritual thing. Most men (Exodus 3:11).

of God think that if you have a large church, you 2. And Moses said unto "... What shall I say

have borne much fruit and are pleasing to the
unto them?" (Exodus 3:13).

Lord. However you will notice that Jesus was

3. And Moses answered "... They will not

pleasing to His father even before He preached
believe me ..." (Exodus 4:1).

His first sermon. "And lo a voice from heaven,
saying, This is my beloved Son, IN WHOM I AM

4. And Moses said "... I am not eloquent, ... I
WELL PLEASED" (Matthew 3:17).

am slow of speech, and of a slow tongue"
(Exodus 4:10).

You don't have to have a church for the

Heavenly Father to say, "This is my beloved son Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 92

92

/ CHAPTER 12

in whom I am well pleased." You don't even have **David
Livingstone's Example**

to be a pastor. You don't have to write a book,

you don't have to preach a sermon to hear the

*“At twelve years of age, he showed an anxiety

words, "This my beloved son in whom I am well about his spiritual welfare. At twenty he was

pleased."You don't need to be famous to hear the converted. It was a natural stepping stone from words, "This is my beloved son in whom I am the Christian home to membership in the

well pleased." Jesus was not famous when this church. His folk were worshippers at the

happened. This scripture shows us that

Hamilton Church. Two of the elders instructed

pleasing God is not based on our work per se.

him in the doctrines. For five months he walked Our fruits are actually gifts that are given by the regularly from his home in Blantyre to his little Lord.

church in Hamilton to be taught by and be

prayed with by one of the elders. After this he Have you ever wondered at the immense fruit

was duly allowed to become a communicant
that Christ Jesus bore? Have you ever wondered
member.

how thousands of churches have been planted
as a result of His three years of ministry? Two

It was then he made the decision to

thousand years have gone by and He has more
consecrate himself to the service of Christ in

fruit than He has ever had. What did He do that some form
of missionary effort. After graduation brought about so
much fruit?

in medicine and theology, he applied to the

London Missionary Society. Could he come

He did six things: just three years of

down for an interview? He had no money for his

preaching, teaching and healing, living a life of fare. Two
friends helped him. The necessary

humility, obedience and the sacrifice on the

probation period in the London school over, he

cross. Significant among these things was His

was ready for his life task.

sacrifice on the cross as this opened the door for our salvation. Your obedience and sacrifice to

China was his choice; but the Opium War had

the Lord will give rise to many churches.

closed the door; his heart was turned to Africa, and to that continent he sailed, and landed at

Cape Town in 1849. What did he look like as he

Spend and Be Spent

set sail? Moderately tall, slim in build; a wiry, If you are a senior pastor, don't be afraid to send closely knit frame suggesting great powers of

out the best that you have. God gave His Son

bodily endurance. He gave as his reason: "when and today He has millions of sons. If God has

first I felt the expansive benevolence of the
called you to plant a church don't be afraid to
gospel in my heart, it became an interesting
die. Unless you die, you will never bear much
question to me; how can I spend the remainder
fruit. It is time to spend and to be spent for the of my days in
bringing my fellowmen to the

Lord. Spend your best leaders and workers on
enjoyment of the same happiness and peace?" the harvest
fields of the world. Allow yourself to How can I spend my
years? ..."SPEND AND

be spent for Jesus. This was David Livingstone's BE
SPENT" the missionary ideal was constant in philosophy.
He allowed himself to be spent so

all his years. Preaching and teaching,
that unsaved tribes and peoples could be

Livingstone was also a physician to the sick. He
discovered and evangelized. I quote from an

had a genius for friendship with these Africans. interview

that he had before he died.

"Love begets love" was his motto. His hands were never idle; bricklayer, carpenter, stonemason

man and general director of the social economy

of his settlements he passed his days in intense action."

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 93

THE DOCTRINES OF SACRIFICE AND OBEDIENCE IN CHURCH PLANTING / 93

The sacrifice of great men like David

REASONS WHY OBEDIENCE IS

Livingstone brought about a great expansion of

BETTER (GREATER) THAN

the church into Africa. Truly there is no other **SACRIFICE**

way than the sacrificial way laid down by Christ Jesus. The true church is perpetuated by

1. IT IS GREATER TO OBEY WITHOUT FULLY

sacrifice!

UNDERSTANDING, THAN IT IS TO SACRIFICE.

The greatest blessings in my life and ministry

OBEDIENCE AND CHURCH

have come from obeying God rather than

PLANTING

sacrificing to Him. Most of the time, it is not easy to understand the implications of what you

are doing. As I write this textbook, there are

“And Samuel said, Hath the LORD as great

things the Lord has asked me to do that I don't

delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, as in understand.

obeying the voice of the LORD? Behold, TO

OBEY IS BETTER THAN SACRIFICE, and to

The reason why we do not understand is

hearken than the fat of rams” (1 Samuel 15:22).

because of our level of growth or our stage of

We often think that the person who sacrifices is maturity in the Lord. I believe that we will

greater than the one who obeys. The word

never fully understand what God has asked us to

sacrifice brings to us, terrifying images of

do until we begin to do it. Notice this scripture. suffering and loss. Obedience seems to be a

It shows us that it is when you do the will of God much milder and less demanding option. In

that you know His will. "If any man will do his fact, our human analysis would rate sacrifice

will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be above obedience any day.

of God, or whether I speak of myself" (John 7:17).

Once again, God's ways are not our ways and

His thoughts are not our thoughts. He makes it

How could I understand the impact of full

clear that to obey is better than to sacrifice. The time
ministry when I was a lay pastor? Many lay

word "better" means "greater, to be preferred, people think
they understand what full time

an improved version, superior, enhanced, more

ministry is. But I know that they do not

acceptable, more favourable, higher quality,

appreciate what it is all about. Many lay people augmented
and more desirable"! This verse

think they are serving God just as well as

therefore means that it is greater, to be

anyone else. It is only in obeying God that I

preferred, superior, more acceptable, more

found the importance of full time ministry.

favourable and more desirable, to obey than to

sacrifice.

2. IT IS BETTER TO OBEY A COMMAND THAT

Why is obedience to be preferred to sacrifice?

YOU WOULD NOT NATURALLY DO, THAN IT

When we sacrifice we often know what we are

IS TO SACRIFICE.

doing and why we are doing it. We know we are

going to suffer and we know the reasons for the

When the Lord directed me into the healing

sufferings. Why is it more desirable, favourable ministry, I did not fully understand the effect

and more acceptable to God when we obey?

that it would have on my ministry. Until then, I The following reasons will explain why

had operated mostly as a teacher and preacher.

obedience is a greater thing compared to

Naturally speaking I am a more calculating and

sacrifice.

logical person. It was not natural for me to
move by the spirit or minister things that are
spiritual. It is one of the most difficult things I
Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 94

94

/ CHAPTER 12

have ever done and I am ever grateful for people I
remember the sound of his frightened and

who helped me cross that barrier. Today I have

pleading voice. "Doctor, please help me." seen many
miracles in the ministry. I can say it When I think of my
Jesus and how He calmly

is the one thing that has made a great difference
approached His own gruesome death, I only

in my present ministry.

marvel. When I think of how Jesus prayed for

"Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove

God to take the cup away, I appreciate His

this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but

obedience to His father. Dear friend, it is not thine, be done" (Luke 22:42). It is very

natural to walk toward your own death. It is not unnatural to give yourself to be killed by wicked natural to do things that will hurt and destroy

men. One of the most frightening experiences

you. To obey is better than to sacrifice!

of mankind is to know that you are going to die. There are many commands of God that will

I have had patients who died shortly after being go against your natural mind or way of thinking. told that they were terminally ill. If you think It is time to obey. There are people who give

about it, you would know that it is a terrifying extra offerings to the Lord because they are

experience. I remember a lady who had

living in disobedience. These extra sacrifices

leukemia. She thought she had some kind of
are intended to compensate for their lives of
fever and was being treated for that. Even
disobedience. Watch carefully every Sunday
though she had a deadly illness she looked and
and you will see many disobedient Christians
felt quite well. One morning, on a ward round, paying large
amounts to the Lord, hoping that
she asked one of my doctor colleagues where
these offerings will close the eyes of Jehovah.
she could get her drugs. My colleague pointed

Mercy!

across the road and said, "Oh, you can buy these cancer
drugs from the Burkett's tumor
department across the road." The lady was

3. IT IS BETTER TO OBEY INSTRUCTIONS YOU

silent! She was shocked! Up until this time, she **DO NOT**

AGREE WITH, THAN IT IS TO

had not been told that she had cancer or any

SACRIFICE.

such illness. This lady was so frightened that

her condition deteriorated rapidly. I am sorry to
Disobedience often sets in when you do not

say that within a few hours, this lady went into agree with
the instruction given you. When God

a coma and died.

instructs us to forgive an obviously rebellious

The knowledge of approaching death is one of

person, we may not readily agree. With time,

the most terrifying ordeals for any man.

you discover that forgiveness is greater than

Mercifully, God rarely shows us our day of

revenge. Whenever you are wronged, there is a

departure. I always remember the blood shot

very self-righteous feeling that makes you want
eyes of a thirty-year-old man who was dying of
to correct and pay back. It is not easy to ignore chronic
renal failure on a medical ward. He
this feeling!

knew there was something terribly wrong with
Great blessings have come my way as a result
him. One morning as I attended to him, he
of forgiving the people that wronged me. It is
gripped my hand and said, "Doctor, please help not always
easy to agree with God's style of
me. I want to go to Germany. I have a brother
doing things. "And it came to pass ... that God
there who will help me get medical attention." I
... said, ... Take now thy son, thine only son
was scared because I was only a medical

Isaac, whom thou lovest, and get thee into the

student, and I didn't know what to do. I looked land of
Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt

downward and saw his urine bag filled with

offering upon one of the mountains which I will

blood and I knew that only God could save him.

tell thee of. And Abraham rose up early in the

I always remember the terror in that man's eyes. morning,
and saddled his ass, and took two of

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 95

THE DOCTRINES OF SACRIFICE AND OBEDIENCE IN CHURCH PLANTING / 95

his young men with him, and Isaac his son, and

pastoral work to be done, it is you I call on". I clave the
wood for the burnt offering, and rose

explained; "That is why I called you to come up, and went
unto the place of which God had

along with me on this trip. I knew you would be

told him" (Genesis 22:1-3). I am sure that
able to get away from work at short notice." Abraham didn't
agree with the idea to kill his
Then I dropped the bombshell, "But you are in only son but
he did what the Lord asked him to
disobedience!" I continued, "You are disobeying do.
God." His smile began to fade. I explained, "The reason
why you are so active, so zealous and so
sacrificial is because you are trying to

4. IT IS GREATER TO OBEY HUMBLING

compensate for disobeying God. God has called
COMMANDS, THAN IT IS TO SACRIFICE.

you to serve Him in full-time ministry but you
are on the run." He was shocked. "I never Many of God's
commands humble us. You could
thought about that," he said. "It never occurred say that the
number one characteristic of God's
to me that I was just compensating for my

instruction is that they humble you. They often disobedience."

make you look foolish in the eyes of men or in your own eyes. When the Lord led me to be a

A few months later, this young man gave up

full time minister, I looked foolish in the eyes of his job and obeyed the call to full time ministry. other doctors. When I receive offerings or do

May God open our eyes to see if you are

fund-raising, I look foolish in my own eyes and

disobeying Him and trying to compensate! Oh in the eyes of many people.

how we love to compensate for our

disobedience! We don't want to humble

I planned to make great sacrifices to the Lord

ourselves before the Lord. We don't want to look when He called me into full-time ministry. I told foolish before anyone. We want to do our own

Him, I would give large amounts of money from
thing and make a convenient sacrifice to
the hospital that I would set up. However, the
compensate. And being found in fashion as a
Lord told me that He did not want my sacrifices, man, he
humbled himself, and became obedient
but rather He wanted me to work for Him.

unto death, even the death of the cross.

One day I called one of my lay pastors and
Phillippians 2:8.

asked him to come for a ride with me to Kumasi;
a city about 250 kilometers from Accra in

Ghana. "Will you come along" I asked. "It would **5. IT IS
BETTER TO OBEY INSTRUCTIONS THAT**

be a privilege to ride with you," He said "I will **DON'T
REQUIRE YOUR WISDOM THAN IT IS**

slip away from work and join you." As we drove **TO**

SACRIFICE.

along, and chatted, I told him something that

surprised him. I said, "You are a very hard

"Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in

working young man." I continued; "You are your purses, Nor scrip for your journey, neither always doing extra things for the Lord." You two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: for the see, this young man was an architect, and in

workman is worthy of his meat" (Matthew

spite of his job, he was constantly working in the 10:9,10). How will I live if I don't provide for church. I told him; "You run around the city myself silver and gold? Walking with the Lord

doing anything that needs to be done. You are

requires that you put aside your own reasoning

one of the most sacrificial and dedicated pastors and trust in His wisdom. To work for God

I have ever worked with." He smiled gratefully!

requires faith. When you see the measly

I continued; "You have done so many offering baskets with jingling coins, going architectural jobs for the church and never around from pew to pew, you wonder, "Can I charged a penny. Whenever there is any extra survive on these collections?" Is this how God will sustain a full time pastor?" Years ago, I Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 96

96

/ CHAPTER 12

visited a church in Europe. The American

Most important things are not urgent.

missionary pastor had a thriving congregation.

Important things are often unattractive and

As I sat in his office, I got to talk about the

uninviting. It is difficult to be faithful with what finances of the

ministry.

God considers important.

I told him proudly, "I am not the kind of pastor For instance, prayer without ceasing is one of

who depends on offerings." I continued, "I work the most important things for us to do. Yet we

as a doctor and do private business. I don't need lack a sense of urgency when it comes to prayer. anyone's money." He looked at me quizzically In times of trouble, you often cannot have faith. and said; "I see the wisdom in what you are While you are in the trouble you will feel like

doing but God's wisdom is higher than yours." calling on God but fear and anxiety will grip

He explained, "God has a plan and a pattern by your heart. It is almost impossible to pray under which He is building His church. Your plan and

those circumstances. Then you will realize how your idea will never be superior to His plan." important it was for you to have prayed. I have God's way is simple! 'They that preach the

been there in the darkness of life when all

gospel must live off the gospel" (1 Cor. 9:14). He theories on faith no longer worked. Have you said to me; "You are depriving your ever wondered why Jesus did not pray when He congregation of a blessing which they receive was arrested? It is because He had finished when they bless the man of God." I selfpraying before the crisis began. righteously thought to myself; "I don't need any When Jesus approached the tomb of Lazarus, of those offerings." However, after that He wouldn't have said a single prayer before conversation I began to consider that I could not raising him from the dead. He explained that be wiser than God. God must know how to build the only reason He was praying was so that His church better than I do. Today, I preach the those around would know that He had a father. gospel and I live off the gospel. I humbly

To preach the gospel and to win the lost is a very depend on the method of sustenance that God

important instruction. But often there is no

has designed for pastors. I am not better than

sense of urgency to fulfil that command. The

any of God's servants. Instead of sacrificing

fact that you don't feel any pressure does not

extra time, doing business and other

mean that it is not important. Pressure does not moneymaking deals, I give myself wholly to the

always signify the importance of a command. It

money-making ministry of the Word and prayer.

is a great thing to obey the Lord even when we

It is better to obey than to sacrifice.

are not under pressure to do so.

6. IT TAKES GREATER FAITHFULNESS AND

7. THE CONSEQUENCE OF OBEYING OR

**DILIGENCE TO PERFORM DUTIES THAT DO
DISOBEYING ONE LITTLE INSTRUCTION CAN
NOT APPEAR URGENT OR IMPORTANT.
BE SO GREAT THAT NO SACRIFICE COULD**

“Go ye therefore, and teach all nations,

EVER COMPENSATE.

baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son,
and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them

Look at the mess we are in because Eve

to observe all things whatsoever I have

disobeyed the Lord. When the Lord God asked

commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway,

her the question in the Garden of Eden (what is

even unto the end of the world. Amen”

this that thou has done?)

(Matthew 28:19,20). “Pray without ceasing” (1

He was asking: What are these wars that you
Thessalonians 5:17).

have brought into the world?

What are these sicknesses that you have

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 97

THE DOCTRINES OF SACRIFICE AND OBEDIENCE IN
CHURCH PLANTING / 97

created? What is this perversion that you have

Something had changed: the position, which

introduced into the world?

was formally occupied by the enemy, had been

What are these cancers and HIV that you

taken up by their own troops.

have unleashed on mankind?

However the lieutenant was so zealous and

Who are these Saddam Hussein, Adolph

eager to fight that he did not listen to the radio Hitler and Stalin characters that you have given operator. He was so bent on getting into the

birth to?

battle that he didn't listen. In the story, the radio operator was struck by a bullet as he

What are all these funerals and deaths that

pleaded with his lieutenant to listen to the new you have released?

message. But to no avail. He eventually died

What is this fear and self-preservation that is

before he was able to relay the message. The so dominant in the world?

lieutenant finally opened fire and pounded what

he thought was the enemy position. Soon after

What is this barrenness and pain to women

that, he received word that his own soldiers had that you

have initiated?

suffered many casualties due to the pounding he

What are these hospitals that you have given

had given them. It was told him that he had

us a need for? Who are these handicapped,

killed many of his own. This man was later

blind and lame people that you have produced?

court martialled.

Little did Eve know what she was releasing in

From this story; we see how important it is to

that one act of disobedience. She could not

obey rather than to sacrifice. The young

imagine how much hurt and suffering she was

lieutenant wanted to fight at all cost. But the bringing into the world. This is the one thought greater thing to do at that point was to hold his that keeps me in the ministry. I think about all fire and not to get involved. Could it be that

the people who would perish if I were to disobey there are times that we are just to hold our fire?

God. Think about Jesus. Think about all the

God is like the general who sees the whole

people who were saved through His ministry. By

picture. He knows when to sacrifice and when

one act of obedience, He has rescued millions

not to, He knows when to fire and when not to

from the throes of hell.

fire. I have learnt that to obey is better than to sacrifice. God has asked us not to do things that Perhaps if He had stayed on for eighty years,

we would have traditionally done. Could it be

preaching in every country, He wouldn't have

that there will be times that it is more important had the fruits He has today. There is nothing like not to preach, than it is to preach because that obedience in the eyes of God. "To obey is better is what God says?

than to sacrifice. Therefore as BY THE

OFFENCE OF ONE judgment came upon all men

The Apostle Paul said he had been given

to condemnation; even so BY THE

different commands by the Lord. At times, he

RIGHTEOUSNESS OF ONE the free gift came

had been commanded to be full and at other

upon all men unto justification of life” (Romans times, he had been commanded to be hungry.

5:18). This is the most important truth you

Paul was intent on obeying the Lord. If the

must learn about obedience. I remember the

instruction was hunger, he was prepared for it;

story of a lieutenant in the army who had

if the instruction was fullness, he would obey! “I received orders to fire his artillery at a certain know both how to be abased, and I know how to

target, which were some miles away. As they

abound: every where and in all things I AM

prepared to fire, the radio operator had a

INSTRUCTED BOTH TO BE FULL AND TO BE

message for the lieutenant to hold his fire. He HUNGRY,
both to abound and to suffer need”

ran to his officer to tell him the new order.

(Phillippians 4:12).

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 98

98

/ CHAPTER 12

a. T

The D

Disobedience oof SSaul

CHILDREN OF ISRAEL: ONLY IN GAZA, IN

Saul was a classic example of one who thought
GATH, AND IN ASHDOD, THERE REMAINED.

he was wiser than God and could compensate

So Joshua took the whole land, according to all

for his disobedience. No sacrifice, no matter how that the
LORD said unto Moses; and Joshua

big is acceptable to God if it is done in

gave it for an inheritance unto Israel according
disobedience. Read the Bible. There are many

to their divisions by their tribes. And the land sacrifices that
God is not pleased with. God is rested from war" (Joshua
11:18-23).

not against sacrifice, but He wants your

It is very interesting to note the three groups

obedience first. "TO WHAT PURPOSE IS THE

of people that Joshua left alive: Gath, Gaza and
MULTITUDE OF YOUR SACRIFICES UNTO ME?

Ashdod. Each one of these three groups of

saith the LORD: I am full of the burnt offerings people gave birth to a significant enemy of the

of rams, and the fat of fed beasts; and I delight people of God. The Lord foresaw this and that

not in the blood of bullocks, or of lambs, or of he is why he gave that instruction. Theses cities

goats" (Isaiah 1:11).

became the breeding grounds for future

enemies. The city of Gath produced Goliath.

b. T

The D

Disobedience oof JJoshua

Delilah who was a thorn in Samson's flesh was

Joshua had a clear mandate from the Lord to

from Gaza. The god Dagon, into whose temple

wipe out all the heathen nations in the Promised the Ark of the Covenant was taken, was in the

Land. It was explained to him that disobeying land of Ashdod. These enemies lived to fight this command would result in these very God's people and no one has ever forgotten nations becoming a snare onto the Israelites. about these three evil agents.

“But if YE WILL NOT DRIVE OUT THE INHABITANTS of the land from before you; then i. Goliath of Gath

it shall come to pass, that those which ye let “And there went out a champion out of the remain of them shall be PRICKS in your eyes, camp of the Philistines, named GOLIATH, and THORNS in your sides, and shall VEX YOU OF GATH, whose height was six cubits and

in the land wherein ye dwell” (Numbers 33:55).

a span” (1 Samuel 17:4).

However, Joshua left the heathen in three key cities. He obeyed God everywhere except in

ii. Delilah of Gaza

Gaza, Gath and Ashdod. Read it for yourself.

“Then went SAMSON TO GAZA, and ...

“Joshua made war a long time with all those
loved a woman in the valley of Sorek, whose
kings. There was not a city that made peace
name was Delilah” (Judges 16:1,4).

with the children of Israel, save the Hivites the iii. Dagon of
Ashdod

inhabitants of Gibeon: all other they took in
battle. For it was of the LORD to harden their
“And the Philistines took the ark of God, and

hearts, that they should come against Israel in

brought it from Eben-ezer unto Ashdod.

battle, that he might destroy them utterly, and

When the Philistines took the ark of God,

that they might have no favour, but that he

they brought it into the house of Dagon, and

might destroy them, as the LORD commanded

set it by Dagon. And when they of Ashdod

Moses. And at that time came Joshua, and cut

arose early on the morrow, behold, Dagon

off the Anakims from the mountains, from

was fallen upon his face to the earth before

Hebron, from Debir, from Anab, and from all the

the ark of the LORD. And they took Dagon,

mountains of Judah, and from all the mountains

and set him in his place again" (1 Samuel

of Israel: Joshua destroyed them utterly with
5:1-3). May the Lord save us from our own
their cities. THERE WAS NONE OF THE
modern day cities of Gath, Gaza and

ANAKIMS LEFT IN THE LAND OF THE

Ashdod!

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 99

THE DOCTRINES OF SACRIFICE AND OBEDIENCE IN CHURCH PLANTING / 99

Perhaps, by your disobedience, you are giving

SMOKE OF THE INCENSE, which came with the

birth to future enemies of God. A sacrifice will PRAYERS
OF THE SAINTS, ascended up before

not prevent the emergence of future enemies.

God out of the angel's hand" (Revelation 8:4).

Obedience will.

3. THE PRIEST MINISTERS TO THE LORD AND OBEDIENCE IN THE PRIESTLY

NOT FOR THE LORD.

MINISTRY

“For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices...” (Hebrews 8:3).

When pastors become priests, substantial churches are born. Satan's number one

4. T

ministry is to accuse pastors of evil. He stands **HERE IS A NEED FOR PERPETUAL INCENSE**

before the throne of God and points out our

(UNCEASING PRAYER) TO BE OFFERED UNTO

mistakes to us and to the Lord. This ministry of **THE LORD.**

accusation is so intense that the most

appropriate title for the devil today is 'the

“And Aaron shall burn thereon sweet incense

accuser of the brethren'. While this ministry of every

morning: when he dresseth the lamps, he

accusation is going on, the ministry of

shall burn incense upon it. And when Aaron

intercession is carried out by the priests of the lighteth the lamps at even, he shall burn

Lord. It is only the ministry of the priest that incense upon it,
A PERPETUAL INCENSE before

counteracts the effects of the accuser. The

the LORD throughout your generations.”

accuser is like a prosecutor.

(Exodus 30:7,8).

If the prosecutor gets his way, judgment will

be meted out. If the priestly ministry doesn't go **5. A**

PRIEST SINS WHEN HE DOES NOT OFFER

on, the accuser will succeed. There are seven

THE INCENSE OF PRAYER.

things that every church planter should know

about the priestly ministry.

“Moreover as for me, God forbid that I should

SIN AGAINST THE LORD IN CEASING TO PRAY

for you: but I will teach you the good and the

1. WE ARE PRIESTS UNTO THE LORD.

right way” (1 Samuel 12:23).

“But ye are a chosen generation, A ROYAL

PRIESTHOOD, an holy nation, a peculiar people;

6. THE PRIEST IS ABLE TO SAVE (OR CAUSE

that ye should shew forth the praises of him who
SALVATION) BY INTERCESSION.

hath called you out of darkness into his

marvellous light” (1 Peter 2:9). “And hath made

“Wherefore he is ABLE ALSO TO SAVE them to

us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to the uttermost that come unto God by him,

him be glory and dominion forever and ever.

SEEING HE EVER LIVETH TO MAKE

Amen” (Revelation 1:6).

INTERCESSION FOR THEM” (Hebrews 7:25).

2. THE PRAYERS WE OFFER ARE INCENSE TO

7. GREAT MIRACLES HAPPEN TO THE PRIEST

THE LORD.

AS HE PERFORMS HIS PRIESTLY DUTY.

“Let my PRAYER be set forth before thee AS

“There was in the days of Herod, the king of

INCENSE; and the lifting up of my hands as the

Judaea, A CERTAIN PRIEST NAMED

evening sacrifice" (Psalm 141:2). "And the

ZACHARIAS, of the course of Abia: and his wife

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 100

100

/ CHAPTER 12

was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name
came to pass, that, as soon as the days of his
was Elisabeth. And they were both righteous
ministration were accomplished, he departed to
before God, walking in all the commandments
his own house. Now Elisabeth's full time came
and ordinances of the Lord blameless. AND
that she should be delivered; AND SHE
THEY HAD NO CHILD, because that Elisabeth
BROUGHT FORTH A SON" (Luke 1:5-23,57).

was barren, and they both were now well

stricken in years. And it came to pass, that while

HE EXECUTED THE PRIEST'S OFFICE BEFORE

GOD in the order of his course, According to the custom of the priest's office, HIS LOT WAS TO

BURN INCENSE when he went into the temple of the Lord. And the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the time of incense.

And THERE APPEARED UNTO HIM AN ANGEL OF THE LORD standing on the right side of the altar of incense. And when Zacharias saw him,

he was troubled, and fear fell upon him. But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall

bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name

John. And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth. For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb. And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God. And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord. And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years. And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad

tidings. And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season. And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple. And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: for he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless. And it

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 101

Strategies for Practical Missionary

Work

13

In the next two chapters, I will be sharing

THE STRATEGY OF THE

about the tent ministry. As far as I am

TENT MINISTRY

concerned, it is only through the tent ministry

that church planting will be possible on a large scale. One of the greatest keys to extensive church

scale.

planting is the tent ministry. The tent ministry is the sacrifice of pastors and evangelists, who **THE TENT MINISTRY**

labour without being paid for their services. The enormity of the work is such that, without the

Paul left Athens and went to Corinth, where he

strategy of tent ministry, very few churches will meet Aquila, a Jewish man from Pontus. "Not

be planted. Almost every ministry I know has

long before this, Aquila had come from Italy

ground to a halt because of mounting bills, and

with his wife Priscilla, because Emperor

the high cost of maintaining staff. It is virtually Claudius had

ordered the Jewish people to leave

IMPOSSIBLE for the church to employ the

Rome. Paul went to see Aquila and Priscilla and people that are needed for the work of God.

found out that they were tent makers. PAUL

The tent or lay ministry is not popular in

WAS A TENT MAKER TOO. So he stayed with

some circles. In some cultures everybody must

them and they worked together. EVERY

be paid for his services. The organist must be

SABBATH, PAUL WENT TO THE JEWISH

paid! The guitarist must be paid! The sound

MEETING PLACE. He spoke to Jews and

controller must be paid and the pastor

Gentiles and TRIED TO WIN THEM OVER” (Acts

constantly seeks a higher salary for his services. 18:4 Contemporary English Version).

Dear friend, most of the ripened harvest fields

are in the poor regions of the world. How will **1. THE TENT MINISTRY IS ACTUALLY THE LAY**

the poor people of the earth be reached in their **MINISTRY.**

poverty? Most of these people cannot pay for

the services of good pastors and evangelists.

It is the ability to combine secular work with real The ministry of unpaid pastors and evangelists

ministry. The best example of the tent ministry

is the key to continued church planting. Where

was the Apostle Paul's ministry. It is so called the sacrificial nature of Christianity is

because Paul was a tent maker.

compromised, church planting comes to an end.

The church was born on the sacrifice of Christ.

The church grew through the sacrifice of the

apostolic church. Once again, the church will

only expand through sacrifice

101

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 102

102

/ CHAPTER 13

2. IT IS POSSIBLE TO COMBINE SECULAR

presidents; of whom Daniel was first: that the

WORK WITH THE MINISTRY.

princes might give accounts unto them, and the

king should have no damage" (Daniel 6:1,2).

It is a ministry in which you support yourself.

You may ask, "Is this the way that God planned for ministry to be? Does the Bible not teach that **4. SOMETIMES IT IS THE WILL OF GOD FOR**

they that preach the gospel must live of the

YOU

**TO
BE
A TENT
MINISTER
AND**

gospel?” “Even so hath the Lord ordained that

SOMETIMES IT IS THE WILL OF GOD FOR

they which preach the gospel should live of the

YOU TO BE IN FULL TIME MINISTRY.

gospel” (1 Corinthians 9:14). I combined being a medical student with ministry. I know many

In one breath, the right thing to do is to be fully people who are effectively ministering the word

supported by the ministry, but in another breath of God and continuing in their professions. Paul the right thing to do is to support yourself. It is was the great church planter of the New

important that we follow the leading of the

Testament. He was able to accomplish great Spirit at all times. Isn't it amazing that the right things for the Lord whilst he supported himself thing can become the wrong thing (Anomia), with the tent making business. The tent because God said so? Paul declared that he was ministry is even more vital for church planting instructed by the Lord to be both full and today. hungry. "I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: every where and in all things I AM INSTRUCTED BOTH TO BE FULL

3. THE BEST NEW TESTAMENT EXAMPLE OF AND TO BE HUNGRY, both to abound and to THE TENT MINISTRY IS THE APOSTLE PAUL. suffer need" (Phillippians 4:12).

The best Old Testament example is the Prophet

Daniel. Daniel had three jobs:

5. THE TENT MINISTRY WILL BE A PROMINENT

i.

He was a Member of Parliament for the

MINISTRY IN THE LAST DAYS.

Babylonian Province.

Paul's ministry still lives on today. The best way

“Then the king made Daniel a great man, and

some people can help in the ministry is to be like gave him many great gifts, and made him ruler

Paul - secular work during the week and then

over the whole province of Babylon, and chief of

“reasoning in the synagogue with the Jews on

the governors over all the wise men of Babylon”

the Sabbath day”. “And because he was of the

(Daniel 2:48).

same craft, he abode with them, and wrought:

for by their occupation they were tentmakers.

ii. He was the Second Vice President to

AND HE REASONED IN THE SYNAGOGUE

Belshazzar.

every sabbath, and persuaded the Jews and the

“Then commanded Belshazzar, and they

Greeks” (Acts 18:3,4).

clothed Daniel with scarlet, and put a chain of

gold about his neck, and made a proclamation

concerning him, that he should be the third

6. PAUL PRACTISED THE TENT MINISTRY SO

ruler in the kingdom” (Daniel 5:29).

THAT OTHERS WOULD FOLLOW HIS GOOD

EXAMPLE.

iii. He was the Prime Minister during the rule of Darius.

I now place you in God's care. Remember the

“It pleased Darius to set over the kingdom an

messages about his great kindness! This

hundred and twenty princes, which should be

message can help you and give you what

over the whole kingdom; And over these three

belongs to you as God's people. “I have never

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 103

**STRATEGIES FOR PRACTICAL MISSIONARY WORK /
103**

wanted anyone's money or clothes. You know

was obviously no way of making bank transfers

how I HAVE WORKED WITH MY OWN HANDS

to these missionaries. It is important for

TO MAKE A LIVING FOR MYSELF and my

ministers to understand that there are times

friends. By everything I did, I showed you how

when secular work gives you the legitimate

you should work to help everyone who is weak.

basis for being in particular places. I have

Remember that our Lord Jesus said, "More

pastors in certain countries that do secular work blessings
come from giving than from

simply because they need to be able to live in

receiving." After Paul had finished speaking, he that country
legally.

knelt down with all of them and prayed" (Acts

Are we ready to do anything for Christ Jesus

20:32-36) (Contemporary English Version). "For

our Lord? If you have to hold down a secular job yourselves know how ye ought to follow us: for

so that you can live and minister in a strange

we behaved not ourselves disorderly among

land will you do it? Is that asking too much?

you; Neither did we eat any man's bread for

How do you think the Prophet Daniel was able to

nought; but wrought with labour and travail

flourish in Babylon? He maintained his job as a night and day, that we might not be chargeable

Member of Parliament.

to any of you: Not because we have not power,

but to make ourselves an ensample unto you to

follow us" (2 Thessalonians 3:7-9). I am talking **2. THE TENT MINISTRY HELPS YOU AVOID**

about a fruitful and lasting ministry. Paul was

BECOMING A BURDEN.

not a reverend minister who did nothing for God. He was indeed an anointed and powerful “Neither did we eat any man's bread for nought; church planter. It is time for many who are but wrought with labour and travail night and called to follow this good example.

day, THAT WE MIGHT NOT BE CHARGEABLE TO ANY OF YOU” (2 Thessalonians 3:8). There are times when being a full time minister is a

**7. THE TENT MINISTRY CAN BE JUST AS
burden to a small congregation. Sometimes a
FRUITFUL AS FULL TIME MINISTRY.**

particular person in the congregation is burdened by the fact that he has to support you I do not know of anyone who will say that the

all the time. There are times I wouldn't want to Apostle Paul was inferior to any of the other

stay in certain people's homes. This is because I apostles. He laboured more abundantly and

feel that my presence is burdensome to my host.

travelled more extensively. He planted more

churches than any one else did. He was truly an

Once we went out preaching and we got back

effective, anointed and fruitful pastor.

home very late. It was past midnight. Our

hostess came out of her room looking very

HOW TO OPERATE IN THE TENT

sleepy and tired. She said, "Oh, are you guys back?", "what time is it?" she mumbled. We **MINISTRY**

found out that it was about one a.m. "Would you like to eat?" She asked. I thought to myself, "Of **1. WHEN IT IS THE ONLY WAY YOU CAN LIVE**

course I would like to eat. I am starving; I

IN CERTAIN GEOGRAPHICAL LOCATIONS

haven't eaten the whole day". But I muttered **AND DO THE MINISTRY.**

some non-committal and diplomatic answer.

My hostess continued, "I have some fish in

When missionaries were sent from Switzerland

the freezer, I can defrost it and make some

to Ghana two hundred years ago, they had to

stew." I was quiet but she continued, "I have support themselves on the mission field. Many

some rice which I can also prepare". Then she of them became farmers, teachers etc. There

asked again, "would you like me to make the

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 104

food?" I thought to myself, "Should a Christian people who give money develop an attitude

ask someone to defrost fish and boil rice at one because of the size of their donations. It is very a.m.?" I decided that I didn't want to be a burden important for pastors to be free from the

to this dear hostess. I smiled sheepishly and

negative attitudes of church members. The

said, "Oh it is alright". I went to bed on an empty stomach. I was warned "don't be afraid of their stomach. I simply did not want to be a burden to faces". This is because the facial expression on my hostess. I have learnt to carry secret

people's faces often intimidates us. There are

supplies of food with me when I travel so that I times when our being tent ministers eliminates

do not become a burden to people. This is what

the need for people's gifts and donations hereby Paul was talking about. He did not want his

eliminating these bad attitudes. "For though I

ministry to become a burden to anyone.

preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessity is laid upon me; yea, woe is unto me,

if I preach not the gospel! For if I do this thing **3. THE TENT MINISTRY WILL ENABLE YOU TO**

willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, **SURVIVE IN MINISTRY WITHOUT BEING PAID**

a dispensation of the gospel is committed unto
BY THE CHURCH.

me. What is my reward then? Verily that, when

I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of

“Neither did we eat any man's bread for nought;

Christ without charge, that I abuse not my

but wrought with labour and travail night and

power in the gospel. For though I BE FREE

day, that WE MIGHT NOT BE CHARGEABLE TO

FROM ALL MEN, yet have I made myself servant

ANY OF YOU” (2 Thessalonians 3:8).

unto all, that I might gain the more” (1

Corinthians 9:16-19).

Four W

Ways T

That P
Paying P
Pastors C

Can H

Hinder tthe

Ministry

a. Building projects are slowed down or

5. THE TENT MINISTRY ENABLES YOU TO

stopped.

ENTER THE MINISTRY WHETHER FINANCES

PERMIT IT OR NOT.

b. The church cannot buy the equipment it

needs.

“For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing

c. Missionaries cannot be sent out.

to glory of: for NECESSITY IS LAID UPON ME;

yea, woe is unto me, if I preach not the gospel!

d. Immature church members who do not

For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: understand why pastors should be paid

but if against my will, a dispensation of the

certain amounts of money could cause

gospel is committed unto me. What is my

trouble in a new church.

reward then? Verily that, when I preach the

Some people simply do not understand why

gospel, I may make the gospel of Christ without

people who work for God should be blessed. I

charge, that I abuse not my power in the gospel”

advise pastors to keep their lives as private as (1

Corinthians 9:16-18).

possible.

Paul said, "Woe is me if I preach not the gospel." Sometimes we do not have a choice!

4. T

We have to do his will whether there is a salary **HE TENT MINISTRY ENABLES YOU TO BE**

or not. That is exactly how I feel. I do not think **FREE FROM ALL MEN.**

that I have a choice. I am bound to obey God. I

"For though I be **FREE FROM ALL MEN**, yet have

feel that if I do anything apart from preaching

I made myself servant unto all, that I might gain His Word, God will destroy me. I have heard

the more" (1 Corinthians 9:19). Many times

other pastors say the same thing. One pastor

said to me, "Before I was in the ministry, I knew Dag

STRATEGIES FOR PRACTICAL MISSIONARY WORK / 105

that God had called me. At one time I felt that children become rebels. There are many pastors'

God would kill me if I didn't go into the

children who hate the ministry. They feel the

ministry." He continued, "That is why I am in ministry steals their parents from them. Besides full time ministry today."

this, there are many stresses that come to the

pastor and his wife by virtue of the position they hold. He is the focus of every spiritual attack; **6. THE TENT**

MINISTRY WILL ENSURE THAT

many people do not know this. One time, when

YOU PLAY A PART IN THIS GREAT MINISTRY.

Israel went to war with Syria, the Syrian king

gave a very revealing command to his generals

“And this I do for the gospel's sake, that I MIGHT
and to his captains. He said to them; “do not
BE PARTAKER thereof with you” (1 Corinthians
fight with anyone. DON'T FIGHT WITH THE
9:23). Many of us may never play a part in
GREAT AND DON'T FIGHT WITH THE SMALL,
building the kingdom unless we do it as lay
FIGHT ONLY WITH THE KING PERSONALLY.
people. Are all apostles? Are all prophets? Are
“But the king of Syria commanded his thirty and
all evangelists? Are all pastors? Obviously not!
two captains that had rule over his chariots,
But thank God you can support yourself and
saying, Fight neither with small nor great, SAVE
make a significant contribution to the ministry
ONLY WITH THE KING OF ISRAEL” (1 Kings

as a tent minister.

22:31). You can see from this instruction that no target was significant enough except the

7. SOME PEOPLE ARE ABLE TO RELATE

King of Israel himself. The king represents the **BETTER WITH UNPAID MINISTERS OF THE**

leader or the pastor who becomes the focus of the attack.

GOSPEL WHO MAINTAIN THEIR SECULAR JOBS.

When a person takes on the sacrifices of ministry without being paid, he makes a double

God is merciful and He makes a way for all kinds sacrifice. "Am I not an apostle? am I not free?

of people to be saved. There are people who

have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? are not ye have their own impressions of full time

my work in the Lord? If I be not an apostle unto ministers and find it difficult to receive from

others, yet doubtless I am to you: for the seal of them. They find it easier to receive from tent

mine apostleship are ye in the Lord. Mine

ministers who are obviously not in the ministry

answer to them that do examine me is this,

for the money.

HAVE WE NOT POWER TO EAT AND TO

DRINK? HAVE WE NOT POWER TO LEAD

8. T

ABOUT A SISTER, A WIFE, AS WELL AS OTHER

O FLOW IN THE TENT MINISTRY, YOU NEED

APOSTLES, AND AS THE BRETHREN OF THE

TO BE SACRIFICIAL.

LORD, AND CEPHAS? Or I only and Barnabas,

The tent ministry is essentially sacrificial in

have not we power to forbear working? Who

nature. Unlike what many people think, the

goeth a warfare any time at his own charges?

ministry is very tiring and stressful. Even paid who planteth
a vineyard, and eateth not of the

ministers are often called upon to sacrifice.

fruit thereof? OR WHO FEEDETH A FLOCK,

Many pastors do not have a normal family life

**AND EATETH NOT OF THE
MILK OF THE**

because their family life is constantly

FLOCK? Say I these things as a man? or saith

interrupted by the incessant demands of the

not the law the same also? For it is written in the congregation. When it is holiday time, instead

law of Moses, Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth

of the pastor having time for his family, he has of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth God

to attend various church and social functions.

take care for oxen? Or saith he it altogether for No one really cares about it until the pastor's

our sakes? For our sakes, no doubt, this is

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 106

106

/ CHAPTER 13

written: that he that ploweth should plow in

in the little world they have built around

hope; and that he that thresheth in hope should

themselves. Selfishness speaks of selfbe partaker of his

hope. If we have sown unto centredness, self-concern, self-awareness, selfyou spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall help and self-gratification.

reap your carnal things? If others be partakers

A selfish person can never be a servant of the

of this power over you, are not we rather?

Lord. Selfishness makes you think about

Nevertheless we have not used this power; but

yourself but ministry makes you think about

suffer all things, lest we should hinder the

people you don't even know. The Apostle Paul

gospel of Christ. Do ye not know that they which lamented about this phenomenon. He noted

minister about holy things live of the things of that all men seek for their own welfare. He said; the temple? and they which wait at the altar are

" No one cares for the things of the Lord." "For partakers with the altar? Even so hath the Lord

I have no man likeminded, who will naturally

ordained that they which preach the gospel
care for your state. For all seek their own, not should live of
the gospel. But I have used none
the things which are Jesus Christ's"
of these things: neither have I written these
(Phillippians 2:20,21). We are all selfish by
things, that it should be so done unto me: for it nature but
the deeper we get in the Lord, the
were better for me to die, than that any man
less selfish we become. The barrenness of most
should make my glorying void. For though I
Christians is a result of the spirit of selfishness. preach the
gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessity is laid upon
me; yea, woe is unto me,
Who cares if they go to Hell? At least I am
if I preach not the gospel! For if I do this thing going to
Heaven. Who cares if there is a village willingly, I have a
reward: but if against my will, somewhere that has not

heard the gospel? At

a dispensation of the gospel is committed unto
least my family and I are okay. Who cares if
me. What is my reward then? Verily that, when
somebody is sick and lying on the hospital ward?

I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of

At least I am well. Who cares if there is some

Christ without charge, that I abuse not my

dirty old prisoner languishing in jail? At least I power in the
gospel" (1 Corinthians. 9:1-18).

am free! That is the spirit of selfishness at work The tent
ministry will test your Christian

in the church and the Christian. If Jesus were

character. Virtues like self-control and

selfish, He would not have left His throne in

temperance will be tested. When I was a

glory and come to this rotten world.

medical student and doctor on the wards of the hospital, I had to sacrifice my resting times for the ministry.

10. LAZINESS IS ANOTHER GREAT HINDRANCE TO THE TENT MINISTER.

When people were watching TV, I could not afford that luxury. I didn't have time for useless Most people are not prepared to work for anyone socializing and chatting. All my spare time was much less to work without being paid. taken up.

11. USE A LOT OF WISDOM WHEN PRACTISING
9. SELFISHNESS IS THE GREATEST HINDRANCE
THE TENT MINISTRY.
TO THE TENT MINISTRY.

“Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst
Selfishness is the principal reason why many

of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and people do not get involved in the Lay or Tent

harmless as doves” (Matthew 10:16). Because

ministry. Most people are basically self-centred of the intrinsic hatred for God and the ministry, in their outlook of life; they have no concerns for many people would like to pick on someone who

anyone except themselves. They are engrossed

claims to be a pastor. “There was a man of the

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 107

STRATEGIES FOR PRACTICAL MISSIONARY WORK / 107

Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the

in the ministry; you know the needs of the

Jews: The same came to Jesus by night, and

ministry. Tent ministers are a good support

said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a

base for every church.

teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him” (John 3:2).

13. THE TENT MINISTRY FIGHTS IDLENESS IN THE CHURCH.

People often look out for your faults at work or at school. They say things like, 'I am surprised

“For we hear that there are some which walk that a pastor would do that. I never knew that

among you disorderly, working not at all, but are pastors also come to work late.' I remember

busybodies” (2 Thessalonians 3:11). After

when I worked at the Korle Bu Teaching

people have been in the church for some years,

Hospital, the biggest hospital in my country, as they seem to know all your sermons. No matter

a doctor; I never told them I was a pastor. I knew what tricks

you use, they are able to see through that at the slightest opportunity they would use the message and identify where it is coming

it against me. While a student and a pastor, I
from.

never indicated that I was even religious. I didn't want them to know anything about me. It is

I remember preaching a powerful series in

foolishness to go announcing to the whole world

church. People were really blessed. Many

that you are a pastor or a religious leader. Jesus commented on how powerful the services had

said we should be as wise as serpents. What

been. Then I had a note. This note was from a

does it mean to be as wise as a serpent? What

long-standing church member. He wrote, 'Dear

wisdom does the serpent have? It has the

pastor we were tremendously blessed by your

wisdom to exist quietly in the midst of people

message tonight.' He continued, "This is exactly who hate it. The serpent is universally hated

what you preached five years ago. You only and killed on sight, with no questions asked.

changed the title". He went further and

And yet, snakes flourish all around us. There

enumerated the messages from where he are millions of snakes all over the world. How

claimed I had duplicated my current series.

has the snake managed to live and multiply in a

Then to reassure me he said, "We were mightily world that hates it utterly? By discretion,

blessed anyway so keep on doing the good

carefulness, judgment, secrecy, prudence and work".

caution!

You see, it is important that Christians get involved with the ministry otherwise they become critical busy bodies, analyzing and

12. BECOME A FINANCIAL SUPPORT BY

commenting on things that they do not even

ENGAGING IN THE TENT MINISTRY.

understand. "LORD, my heart is not haughty, nor mine eyes lofty: neither do I exercise myself

"I have shewed you all things, how that so

in great matters, or in things too high for me"

labouring ye ought to SUPPORT THE WEAK, and

(Psalm 131:1).

to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how

he said, It is more blessed to give than to

receive" (Acts 20:35).

It is amazing that a large amount of financial support comes from my lay pastors. Many times when there is a special appeal for financial support, it is my lay pastors (tent ministers) who often support me most. When you are involved

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 108

108

/ CHAPTER 13

no help from any of the bigger churches of my

PLANTING A CHURCH

day. Some of them ridiculed me while others even opposed me. There was no help or Many people are afraid of starting a church approval from any man of God.

because they do not know how to pioneer new

work. The art of beginning a church is the art of witnessing, following-up and gathering sheep

2. DO NOT BE DESPERATE FOR IMMEDIATE

together. You do not need to break up someone

SUCCESS.

else's church to begin your own! How would

you feel if someone was building his house next

Do not become financially desperate in the early to yours and decided to break down your house

stages of ministry. Be careful not to become

to get some blocks for his? That is madness!

dependent on the church you are pioneering for

Unfortunately, this seems to be the only way

your financial survival. That is a big mistake! If that some people feel they can start a church.

you do, you will become a desperate man,

From today, do not be afraid of starting out in an clutching at every straw for survival.

honourable way. If God has really spoken to

A small church usually cannot afford to pay
you, it will succeed!

the salary of a pas-tor, much less buy him a car. My advice
to anyone who is beginning a church

1. C

is to find a job and start the church as a lay

COUNTING THE COST

person. When people see that you are not

“For which of you, intending to build a tower,

ministering for financial gain, they will be more sitteth not
down first, and counteth the cost...”

interested in your new church.

(Luke 14:28). Carefully consider the implications Too many
pastors are desperate for more and

of starting a church. It is not going to be easy!

more offerings from their few members.

Not many people want to identify with a small

Sixteen people cannot look after you. Twentything. one people cannot support your upkeep and

I learnt many years ago that there are two

your children's school fees. Don't be a desperate types of people in the world. There are those

pastor! Get a job right now! At the right time, who push the canoe from the sand into the sea.

the church will have more than enough money

Then there are those who jump into the boat

to look after its pastors. I had to invest a lot of when it is safely on the water. When the canoe

my own money to get the church to work.

is on the sand, it is very difficult to push it into Although I am now in full-time ministry, I was

the water. When it is on the water it is safer and not paid for the first five years of the church's many more people jump in. That is why it is

existence. There is another reason why you

easier for a large church to grow.

should not draw a salary in the early stages of a church.
Money will be needed to buy equipment

When I began in the ministry I was despised

and to pay for other expenses like rent. If you and opposed!
Looking back, I am surprised that

siphon out the lifeblood of the church's money, it I was able
to survive the storms of beginning a

will not develop normally.

church on my own. At certain times, I felt like giving up.
Everyone in the world seemed

against me. They called me names and ridiculed

me. When I carried a set of drums from my

room in the medical hostel to a nearby

classroom, I must have looked like a crazy

zealot! "What does this person think he is doing with a few
medical and nursing students?" I had Dag Heward-Mills

eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd

2008/05/14 14:03 Page 109

3. ACCEPTING THE MINIMUM NUMBER FOR

quite a number of people, the beginnings of a
STARTING.

church are like insignificant seeds. But they
can grow, and they will grow.

How many people are needed to start a church?

The answer is in the Bible! Two or three! “For Many of my
pastors are surprised when their

where two or three are gathered together in my
churches grow. They cannot believe that the
name, there am I in the midst of them”

church will work. The beginning looks so

(Matthew 18:20). Some people have criticized
miserable, yet that is how the kingdom of God

me for having two or three people in a church.

is. One day, one of my pastors went to church

Well, such criticism comes from an ignoramus. I and only one person came. He told me that he

would rather hear my dogs barking in the

was very discouraged and depressed. He led

morning than to listen to critical and

that one person in worship. Then he preached

inexperienced scoffers! I do not start my

to that one person. Afterwards he took an

churches with half a section of another person's offering from that one person and then closed

church. If I have one pastor who is ready to

the service. He narrated to me how he went

obey God, all I need to do is to send him and he back home to his apartment in the deepest and

will start the work. The Lighthouse Cathedral

blackest depression of his life. I am happy to tell was started with as few as five people. When I

you that today his church is a Mega Church and

went to Zürich to start a church, I knew only one is still growing.

person. Today that church has several hundred people in it. One pastor who did not know

4. THE NEED FOR PATIENCE.

anybody in South Africa, but was willing to do the work of God, started our church in South

There isn't any tree that grows from a seed into Africa. You do not need more than one person

a large tree overnight. No human being grows

to start a church. I have churches that have only to be six feet tall in one year. No two-year old three people, and I am not ashamed to say it.

grows into an eighteen-year old within six

Do not try to impress anyone, just do the work

months. If you have a hasty spirit, you will not of God!

be successful in starting a church.

Sometimes people are afraid to pioneer a

“He that hasteth to be rich hath an evil eye,

church because they do not know how to do

and considereth not that poverty shall come

basic Christian tasks. What do I mean by the

upon him” (Proverbs 28:22). In fact, when you

basics? The basics are praying, witnessing and

are in a hurry, you are likely to cut corners,

following up converts. If you are truly called of break

someone else's church and criticize those

God then the only person you need is yourself!

ahead of you. You will commit dangerous sins in All

churches which began in this way have

the early days of your fledgling ministry. Do not grown to

become great trees.

expect much within a year. Don't be surprised if The Bible says that the kingdom of God is like

you only have twenty people after two years.

a mustard seed. "...The kingdom of heaven is

The mustard seed will surely grow into a Mega

like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man

Church!

took, and sowed in his field: Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the **5. PRAYING FOR AND RECRUITING PILLARS.**

greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so

that the birds of the air come and lodge in the

Pray for labourers. Ask God to give you helpers. branches thereof" (Matthew 13:31,32).

Then go out and recruit pillars. Jesus called

individuals to follow him. Jesus recruited Simon What does that mean? Whereas an Old Boys

and Andrew. Then He also recruited James and

/ CHAPTER 13

John. "Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee,
years have gone by, the Lord has answered this
he saw Simon and Andrew his brother... And
prayer beyond my wildest imagination.

Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I

I believe in laying a solid foundation of prayer will make you
to become fishers of men" (Mark

and fasting at the beginning of every church.

1:16,17). "And when he had gone a little further The church
is a spiritual entity and not a social thence, he saw James
the son of Zebedee, and

club. It must be established on scriptural and

John his brother... And straightway he called

spiritual foundations. Some useful scriptures in them and they left their father... and went after

praying for church establishment and church

him” (Mark 1:19,20). These people later

growth are: “...Thy will be done...” (Matthew

became pillars in the church. “And when James,

6:10). “Thy kingdom come...” (Matthew 6:10).

Cephas, and John, who seemed to be

“Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for
PILLARS...” (Galatians 2:9). Sometimes you

thine inheritance...” (Psalm 2:8). “...enlarge my

need to travel quite far in order to convince

coast...” (1 Chronicles 4:10). “...increase them

certain important pillars to join your church. Be with men
like a flock” (Ezekiel 36:37). “...for as extra careful that you
do not break down

soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her

somebody else's church in the process of

children" (Isaiah 66:8). "...I travail in birth

building your own. Making an open invitation to again..." (Galatians 4:19).

all is different from coercing people to leave

their church to join you. The very existence of a church is an open invitation. Remember that

7. BEING A MOTIVATIONAL LEADER.

you will reap what you sow (Galatians 6:7). If

you pressurize pillars in another person's church After gathering a few people into a room, you

to leave, it will happen to you one day.

will need to greatly encourage them, including

yourself. People will be thinking in their minds, One important aspect in recruiting people is

"Are you out of your mind? Is this what you call to pray for labourers. Let it be your daily prayer a church?" You must learn to do what David did topic. Ask God for workers and committed

when faced with discouragement. Encourage people. Pray for people who will be loyal to you yourself first. "...but David encouraged himself in everything that you do. Pray for people who in the Lord his God" (1 Samuel 30:6). Then you will support you. "Pray ye therefore the Lord of must encourage the people. Tell them that the harvest, that he will send forth LABOURERS though the beginning seems to be small, the into his harvest" (Matthew 9:38). future is going to be great! "Though thy beginning was small, yet thy latter end should

6. LAYING A FOUNDATION OF PRAYER.

greatly increase" (Job 8:7). Tell them not to despise the small start. Explain to them that the I recommend an average time of prayer and end is always better than the beginning. When

fasting of three weeks or more. Pray for the

they see that you are encouraged, they will be

future of the church. Do not expect results next motivated to continue with the church.

week. The answer to these prayers will be seen

“Better is the end of a thing than the

in the years ahead. When I first came to Korle beginning thereof...” (Ecclesiastes 7:8). “For Bu (the area in Accra where our church is

who hath despised the day of small things?...”

located), I would go at ten o'clock every night

(Zechariah 4:10). Tell them that they are

with four other medical students to the beach to privileged to be founding members of a great

pray. We would pray up until midnight. As I

church. Explain that the foundation of a building stood on the rocks near the seashore, my prayer

is the most important part of a building.

was simply, "Lord, let your will be done. Do Therefore, they are the most important

whatever you want to do with my life." As the members that the church will ever have. Tell

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 111

STRATEGIES FOR PRACTICAL MISSIONARY WORK / 111

them that Jesus always had a special place and

Lead the congregation in inviting people to

reward for the apostles because they were his

church every Sunday. Do not be depressed if

foundational members. "And are built upon the

most of the visitors do not come back. Most of

foundation of the apostles..." (Ephesians 2:20).

them will not stay anyway. God will

Do not make the mistake of rebuking and

supernaturally bring the increase. Pastors must shouting at

them. Do not vent your frustration

realize that there is a spiritual principle of

on your few members. It is not their fault that sowing and reaping. "Whatever you sow is what

the church is small in the beginning stages.

you will reap. ...for whatsoever a man soweth,

Preach faith! Preach hope! Preach stabilization!

that shall he also reap" (Galatians 6:7). If you Preach about a better tomorrow! People love to

sow seeds through invitations and witnessing,

hear that tomorrow will be better than today.

you will reap from it one day.

You must be bold and shameless in your

My experience is that after a crusade or an

preaching. "I say unto you, Though he will not

outreach we initially have very few results.

rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet However,

after awhile we begin to have people

because of his importunity [shamelessness] he
coming from the very place we did the outreach.
will rise and give him as many as he needeth”

Usually they are not the people we witnessed to. (Luke 11:8). In the above passage, the Greek

But God divinely sends them to us from that

word "Anaideia" translated importunity, also place. Use all of the principles of anagkazo.

means shamelessness. The shamelessly

persistent person gets results. Let's face it!

There is some amount of shame in beginning a

9. AVOID THESE MISTAKES.

ministry with a few people. That is why people
despise small beginnings!

Do not hurriedly appoint people to leadership
positions. Allow time to pass before you make

Shamelessness (Anaideia) must characterize

definite appointments. Many of the people who

all that you do when you begin a church.

are with you in the beginning will leave anyway.

Shamelessly invite people to join you on Sunday

Do not be discouraged because of fluctuating

morning. When they see that you are not shy of

attendance. Do not be discouraged because of a

your church, they will be interested in coming.

rotational shift of the members, i.e., half attend Shamelessly

advertise your church. People will

this week, the other half next week. That is how believe

what you say about your church. If you

sheep behave. Take no notice of them!

have an assistant, he must say good things

about the preaching and about the church in

Do not rent an expensive hall. Do not keep

general. All of these things help to create a the church's money in your house or in your good atmosphere for church growth.

personal account. One day somebody will accuse you of stealing, although you may have contributed a lot to the church. Do not count

8. WITNESSING AND FOLLOW-UP

the money yourself but assign people to do so.

This must be predominant in all of your church

activities. You must boldly enter into the houses **10. AVOID THE NON-ESSENTIALS.**

of your city and preach Christ to the people. You must shamelessly lead people to Christ in their

Contrary to what people think, several things

living rooms. Pray for them and invite them to

are not necessary when starting a church. You

church. Stand on the street and talk to passersdo not need a complimentary card or a briefcase by about Jesus Christ. If you cannot shamelessly to build a Megachurch! A constitution is not

do street evangelism, then you cannot be a

vital in the early stages. What is important is to pastor.

have members and a regular congregation. A

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 112

112

/ CHAPTER 13

church logo is not important, neither is a church you are gone. Success without a successor is

flag. Initially, it may not be necessary to register failure! Every pastor must teach leaders

a church. Many countries allow freedom of

because Jesus Christ taught leaders all the time. association and freedom of religion. Just build Pastors must spend more time teaching leaders

the church and fill it with people. Pray for them, than teaching ordinary church members. This is

preach the Word, visit the sheep and trust God!

the pattern set by Christ Jesus. Teaching leaders Since the greater one is in you, you cannot fail!

is your greatest key to true expansion. You will not have anyone to delegate if you have not

trained leaders. Every pastor must teach his

PLANTING A NETWORK OF

leaders because the leaders will never know

what to do unless you teach them.

CHURCHES

Many pastors assume that the potential

leaders around them will acquire vital

Every pastor can expect the Lord to use you to

knowledge by osmosis. People feel that

plant more than one church. After a period you

leadership is for special people who are born
will have a network of churches. These churches
that way. Osmosis is not the key to leadership will have to
be managed. Managing a network teaching is! I have
written textbooks on these
of churches involves training, encouraging and
subjects. As you teach your members these
guiding a team of ministers as they work.
materials, you will be surprised at what they will become.

KEYS TO PLANTING A NETWORK

OF CHURCHES

2. TEACHING ON LOYALTY

1. TEACHING ON HOW TO DO THE WORK OF

The second key to planting a network of

MINISTRY

churches is LOYALTY. Loyalty is essential for
maintaining a network of churches. The

The first key to planting a network of churches
churches you will plant will not be in the same
is the TRAINING of ministers. The congregation
location. It is therefore necessary for people to is a field in
which you plant seeds. If you plant be loyal wherever they
are situated. I have
seeds of leadership and inspire the members to
taught a lot on loyalty. I have also written a
do pastoral work, they will do it. The more you textbook and
other books on this subject. I
teach on how to do the work of the ministry, the recommend
that you read these books, as they
more potential ministers will be released. When will be a
blessing to your ministry.
you teach your leaders, you are actually
teaching many more people. You are also
I once heard of someone criticizing me for
teaching the followers of this leader.

teaching on loyalty. He said, "Why should you teach on loyalty and disloyalty?" He went on to Pastors must know the principle of explosive

say that loyalty is not something that is taught growth: if you want GROWTH, teach your

but is something that people are inspired to do

members, if you want EXPLOSIVE GROWTH,

because of your leadership. I was not surprised teach your leaders! Teaching leaders

that this dear critic of mine had not planted a

establishes authority over the leaders who work

single branch of his church but was criticizing

under you. This is because the authority over

someone who had planted over four hundred

the leaders is demonstrated by your ability to

churches. On another occasion, a dear pastor

feed them. Teaching ordinary members is an

criticized me for teaching on loyalty. However

investment into the church today. Teaching

when his church split, he became an avid reader

leaders is an investment into the future when

of my books and even promoted them to other

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 113

STRATEGIES FOR PRACTICAL MISSIONARY WORK / 113

ministers. Loyalty is a key subject which must

The largest church in the world, pastored by

be taught until the culture of faithfulness and

David Yonggi Cho, belongs to the

loyalty is established!

Assemblies of God Church network.

3. History has shown that belonging to a

3. TEACHING ON CHURCH ADMINISTRATION

network of churches can give rise to very large stable congregations.

Church administration involves the managing of the churches that have been created. It involves It may be the key to church growth for your managing a combination of secular and spiritual congregation.

issues. It involves balancing natural things with 4. Belonging to a network of churches supernatural things.

sometimes eliminates the instability that

Church administration involves the blending characterizes young independent churches.

of hierarchical leadership and a democratic form The institutional stagnation that sometimes

of government. Both of these styles are biblical. develops in a network of churches may be

The Bible has examples of committees being much less of an evil compared to the formed as in Acts chapter 6. As in the case of advantages that come with it.

Paul and Timothy, the Bible also has examples of an autocratic style of leadership with direct

5. In a network of churches, there are tried and instructions being handed down.

tested principles which are passed on to sister churches.

Church administration requires combining the power of God and the wisdom of God. "But

6. In a network of churches, the already unto them which are called, both Jews and existing name serves as publicity and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the attracts people to the churches.

wisdom of God” (1 Corinthians 1:24). Without

This name becomes like a franchise and good church administration everything that you serves as a powerful asset. The good name build will eventually collapse. You need to of a network of churches also has spiritual master church administration otherwise your significance that cannot be quantified.

ministry will be likened to a rocket that shoots out and falls apart shortly after take off.

7. In a network of churches, trained members benefit from an established and respected

THE ADVANTAGES OF A NETWORK

system of pastoral recommendation and

OF CHURCHES

appointments.

8. The network of churches can benefit from

1. History has proved that the networks of each other financially.

churches or branches are very successful.

You are not likely to get financial support

These networks of churches are sometimes outside your network. Through a system of called denominations.

brotherly interdependence, churches are

2. There are several well-known networks of able to accomplish much more.

churches in the world today.

9. Church members readily flow between

These networks are often the most stable and churches belonging to the same network.

established congregations everywhere. The

The network of churches is therefore to keep
Assemblies of God Church, the Church of
members within the fold.

Pentecost, Church of God in Christ are but a few notable
examples of these networks.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 114

114

/ CHAPTER 13

10. Churches within the network easily benefit
from anointed senior ministers of that
network.

They do not have to go through the protocol
or experience the cost of having such ministers. 11.
Pastors within the network of churches can
receive fatherly counsel and encouragement
from seniors.

Pastors of independent churches are usually suspicious and wary of external ministers who parade as fathers. There is little trust because independent churches often compete with one another rather than support each other.

12. Churches within a network operate under a particular spiritual covering.

The same anointing runs through the entire network because it is really one church.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 115

Methods for Effective Missionary

Work

14

attended secondary school, at the age of twelve, **THE “ANAGKAZO”**

I was an unbeliever. That is when I first came

METHOD

into contact with "real" born again Christians. They were all members of the Scripture Union

"...Go out into the highways and hedges, and

(SU). Though they seemed to be true believers,

compel [anagkazo] them to come in, that my

nothing about them attracted me. I remember

house may be filled" (Luke 14:23). I grew up in one evening in particular, when the SU leader

a Christian home and was made to attend

announced at the boarding house that there was

church every Sunday. I must be honest, I found

going to be a meeting of the SU. I thought to

church very boring. I hated the long boring

myself, "Who would ever attend such a boring hymns and I couldn't understand the sermons.

meeting?" These Christians were not attractive. The priests

looked unreal and detached from

They made weak and lifeless announcements

everyday life. I remember sitting through many

inviting us, the unsaved, to join them. As a

boring and lifeless services at church. My main result, it never occurred to me to join this

pre-occupation was to predict the closure of the uninteresting group. I still cannot remember

service. I would count the number of hymns on

how I eventually joined the SU. I believe that

the board and estimate the closing time of the

the Spirit of God worked on me and drew me

service.

there without even knowing it!

You see, the priests and the majority of the

congregation were not born again. They were

PRACTISING “ANAGKAZO”

what you might call traditional Christians. They had inherited a family religion. One day, the

Many Christians are genuine and have a real

unbeliever priest announced from the pulpit

message to impart. But for a message to have

how much beer the whole church had drunk the

any impact, it must be compelling. It must drive right before
at a party. It all came up to about the listener to change! The
message of the Lord

\$1000 worth of beer! The priest went on to say

Jesus Christ must persuade the unsaved to

that one of the members owed him a carton of

make a decision for Christ. That is why I am

beer. Surely, many of these people were just

writing this textbook on what I call "Anagkazo". practicing a
lifeless religion. I can understand Anagkazo simply means
"to compel". It also why many young people do not go to
church

means to necessitate, to drive, and to constrain anymore. It is just one meaningless, lifeless and by all means such as force, threats, persuasion

boring ritual. If the pastor is not a born again and entreaties.

Christian, you cannot expect many members of

Sometimes we need to go back into the Greek

the church to be born again. When I first

in order to understand the original meanings of

115

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 116

116

/ CHAPTER 14

some Bible words. You see, the New Testament

night, there were not so many people around.

was translated from the Greek language and the

Even after inviting those on the street, his party Old
Testament from the Hebrew language.

was relatively unattended. He then decided to
Anagkazo is the Greek word that is translated
invite the sick, the blind and the handicapped.
"to compel".

Imagine that! What an unusual selection of
partygoers! His party was full of the non**The Importance of**
Anagkazo entities of the community - the down-and-outs
of society. I believe this story is symbolic of the In the book
of Luke chapter 14 we read a

Lord Jesus sending us out to invite people to
familiar story where Jesus told of an important

Him. It is also symbolic of pastors sending out person who
held a party for his friends. I want their members to
evangelize the world. I have

you to read this whole portion of scripture so
discovered that every time I embark on

that you will be familiar with the story. "Then evangelizing
the world (inviting many people to

said he unto him, A certain man made a great

a great supper) I encounter the same things that supper,
and bade many: And sent his servant at

this man encountered. However, I believe this

supper time to say to them that were bidden,

man was a success. In spite of everything, he

Come; for all things are now ready. And they all had his
party and his house was full of guests. It with one consent
began to make excuse. The

might not have turned out the way he initially

first said unto him, I have bought a piece of

wanted, but he had his party anyway.

ground, and I must needs go and see it: I pray

thee have me excused. And another said, I have

You see, God is sending out evangelists to

bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: invite the
whole world to know Christ.

I pray thee have me excused. And another said,

Unfortunately, many of those who are invited do

I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot

not respond. The Jews were the first to be

come. So that servant came, and shewed his

invited to know the Lord. But they rejected

lord these things. Then the master of the house Christ in
their hour of visitation. Therefore, the being angry said to
his servant, Go out quickly

Gospel was transmitted on to the Gentiles.

into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring Many of the
elite, who live in large urban

in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, centers,
hear the gospel on television and in

and the blind. And the servant said, Lord, it is churches
many times. However, they do not

done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is

receive but rather criticize preachers. Again,

room. And the lord said unto the servant, Go

the Gospel is passed on to the poor and nonout into the highways and hedges, and compel elite in villages. They willingly receive the Word

[anagkazo] them to come in, that my house may

because they have no other hope but God.

be filled. For I say unto you, That none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my

1. ANAGKAZO IS IMPORTANT BECAUSE A

supper” (Luke 14:16-24).

CERTAIN TYPE OF EVANGELISM IS NOT

This man had the unfortunate experience of

GOING TO WORK IN THIS DAY AND AGE.

spending a lot of money on a big party, inviting important people, only to find out that most of

People are not going to be convinced or

them were uninterested. This man was very

compelled to know God through our little church

surprised about their rejection of his invitation. games. Our "Mickey Mouse" church programs He became angry as he listened to the excuses

and bazaars will not go very far in today's world. of those he had invited. In his anger, he decided We must go out there and drive them to God.

to invite anybody he found out on the street.

Imagine having a party with people you don't

even know! Unfortunately, at that time of the

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 117

METHODS FOR EFFECTIVE MISSIONARY WORK / 117

2. ANAGKAZO IS IMPORTANT BECAUSE MANY

THE PRACTICAL

STEPS OF

OF THE PEOPLE THAT NEED THE GOSPEL

ANAGKAZO

**ARE NOT IN PLACES WHERE THEY CAN
RECEIVE BOURGEOISIE INVITATION CARDS.**

**1. AN ANAGKAZO MAN PREPARES A GREAT
SUPPER.**

If people are going to be touched with the
gospel, a new strategy of going to the gutters,
Anyone who wants to be used by God must
highways and the bushes must be employed.
prepare himself for the ministry. Today, God is Sitting in
church and inviting people has long
using me in the ministry. This has not
been an unworkable strategy for evangelism.
happened without thousands of hours of
preparation. I realize that the sermons I
preached to ten people some years ago, are the

3. DEAR PASTOR, WITHOUT ANAGKAZO, YOUR

same sermons I am preaching to thousands

CHURCH IS GOING TO BE EMPTY.

today. Preaching to a small group of ten people was part of God's preparation for me. So if you Please remember that if this man had not

want God to use you mightily, you must start

employed the strategy of anagkazo he would

preparing now! Take every opportunity you have

have had an empty house. Remember this, "A to do something useful in the church.

pastor without anagkazo will have an empty

Years ago, I remember playing the drums and

church."

the piano in my church. Though I didn't know at the time, that was part of my preparation for

4. WITHOUT ANAGKAZO, MANY CHURCHES

ministry. Today, I know a lot about music and

ARE GOING TO DIE A NATURAL DEATH.

musical equipment. I can discuss intelligently, all details that concern music, worship and

What you must realize is that the membership of expensive equipment. My experience with the a church is very fluid. Many people come and music department has been a valuable asset to many people leave. If you don't have more me.

people coming in than those you are losing, your church will begin to die. If you don't want your church to close down, you must do what Jesus

2. A PERSON WHO PRACTISES ANAGKAZO

instructed - go out and practice anagkazo.

DOES

NOT

KEEP

TO

HIMSELF

BUT

INFLUENCES AND AFFECTS MANY PEOPLE.

5. LIFE IS BECOMING MORE HECTIC AS WE

You will notice that this man in Luke 14 held a

APPROACH THE 21ST CENTURY.

great supper and invited many people. One of

Busy working people are going to have more

the primary reasons evangelism does not

and more excuses. The strategy of anagkazo

happen is because Christians keep to

will help you to overcome these excuses. Let me

themselves. You cannot keep to yourself if you

now take you through what I call the practical

want to be an effective witness for the Lord

steps of anagkazo. These steps are derived from Jesus Christ. When you sit on a bus, you can

the story we just read in Luke 14.

decide to be friendly to those nearby. Begin

talking to the people around you. I always try to share the Gospel with people around me. I have

always believed that I have some Good News

about Jesus. He has saved me and set me free.

During my second year in medical school, we

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 118

118

/ CHAPTER 14

lived on the beautiful Legon campus. We were

me, said to me, "I admire your courage! But I transported daily to the other side of town

don't think you got very far." Whether I got very where a teaching hospital was located. This

far or not is not what matters. What is

involved a one-hour bus drive from one end of
important is that I preached the Word. And the
town to the other.

Word always accomplishes something when it is

I remember one day as I sat in the bus, I

preached. "...my word be that goeth forth out of

watched some senior colleagues take out

my mouth... it shall accomplish that which I

condoms, blow them into balloons and fly them

please..." (Isaiah 55:11). You see, any form of in the bus. As
these students shouted and

soul winning in our modern day and age, is

laughed over their lewd jokes, I realized how

going to have to be of the anagkazo type.

confident they were in what they were doing.

Gentleness and meekness will not take you very

We the Christians sat timidly in the bus, looking far.

lame, uninteresting and boring. As I sat there, I decided not to keep to myself. I got the

3. ANYONE PRACTISING ANAGKAZO IS NOT

attention of everyone on the bus and began to

PREPARED TO CANCEL HIS SERVICE.

preach. Although preaching on the bus later

became quite common, at that time it was

unusual. Some of the students were angry and

Every pastor, in going through the normal

others were bored. Some looked out of the

processes of church growth will experience

window in disapproval but I preached on! I

highs and lows. But a pastor with the spirit of decided not to keep to myself anymore. I

anagkazo will never cancel his church service.

decided to be like the man in Luke 14.

He will decide to press on no matter how many people attend.

An anagkazo person does not keep to himself

One of my pastors told me how only one

or herself. I lived in London for a period in

person attended church on a particular Sunday.

1983. I felt stifled by the stiff atmosphere in He said that he had never felt so low. However, England. I was used to preaching anywhere and

he managed to preach to that one soul and do

everywhere. But in England I realized that one

his best for the Lord.

couldn't easily relate to the people around.

Everyone seemed so unfriendly and

I remember there was a time we had a very

uninterested in their surroundings.

low attendance for one of our services. The

Lord told me to do what this man in Luke 14 did One day, while sitting on the top level of a

"Go out there and invite the community to

double Decker bus, the spirit of anagkazo rose

church." I said, "How can I do that on a Sunday?" up in me and I said to myself, "I cannot keep to The Lord replied, "You do it, and you will be myself any longer." I stood to my feet and to the blessed." I continued arguing with the Lord, surprise of everyone on the bus, I began to clap

"What will our Sunday morning visitors think?

my hands to get their attention. I tell you, I may We will drive away people from the church." have looked bold on the outside, but I was quite However, the Lord insisted, "Go out and compel scared on the inside. There were all sorts of

them to come in." I obeyed the Lord. I

murderous looking characters in their seats.

announced to the church that we were going to

But I maintained my cool and delivered a

stop the service, go out into the community and

complete full gospel sermon.

invite them. I said, "We are going to go out to The bus was quiet for a few minutes as they

the community to bring them in." I announced, listened to this young mad man preach. I took

"This is not a gentle invitation. Every single one my seat after preaching and got off at the next

of you must hold the hand of someone you see

stop. One gentleman, who got off the bus with

out there. Physically bring them into the church Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 119

METHODS FOR EFFECTIVE MISSIONARY WORK / 119

building." Some were taken aback. But we did it soon became filled with nurses who had given

it! And we brought in hundreds of "untheir lives to Christ at my anagkazo dawn churchd" dwellers of the community.

That day broadcasts. Dear reader, I want you to
we had several people giving their lives to
understand something, I did not inherit a
Christ. We did this on numerous occasions and
church from anyone. I have often gone to places over a
period, that particular service increased where I knew no
one, and no one knew me. I
in size dramatically. I was not prepared to close have had
to go out and win souls, driving and
down my service because of a low attendance.
persuading people about the Lord, until the
That is what any pastor with the spirit of
room was full.

anagkazo is prepared to do.

5. HE IS NOT OVERCOME BY PEOPLE'S

**4. AN ANAGKAZO PERSON IS NOT PREPARED
EXCUSES.**

TO HAVE AN EMPTY MEETING.

Many people are full of excuses. This anagkazo

A pastor working with the spirit of anagkazo is

man in the Bible (Luke 14) listened to three

not prepared to have any empty church service.

amazing excuses for not attending his party.

Many years ago, as a medical student, the Lord

However, he was not impressed by any of them.

asked me to start a church. I had no members

The first excuse was about testing oxen in the

in my church. Not even one soul to preach to!

night. Everyone knows that no one tests oxen at But I was
not prepared to have an empty church.

that time of the night. The second excuse was

I was still a student when the Holy Spirit

about somebody who had just gotten married.

directed me to the nursing students' hostel. I

But we all know that a dinner would have been

remember that very first day. It was around 5

a nice outing for a newly wedded couple. The

a.m. and still dark. Standing outside the hostel, third excuse was about going to see some land

I clapped my hands and woke them up. They

in the night. Let me ask you a question. Would might have been surprised but that didn't

you not assess a piece of land before you buy it?

bother me. I preached to them about Jesus.

How could you inspect a piece of land in the

After I had finished I did something very bold. I night? Would you even see it clearly? Yet

said to them, "If you want to give your lives to somebody was using this as an excuse for not

Christ, change out of your night clothes, wear

attending the party. Any good minister, who

something decent and come downstairs. We
wants to reach people, must not be
want to talk to you about Christ."

overwhelmed by people's excuses. He must
learn to overcome people's excuses.

That morning several young ladies gave their
hearts to God. Up to this day, many of them are Even as
you minister the Word of God, people
still members of my church. Preaching at dawn
form excuses in their minds. They develop
to people in their beds has been one of my
reasons why they will not obey the Word. Every
favorite methods of implementing this principle
good preacher must learn to preach against
of anagkazo. One morning, I preached at the
people's excuses and ideas. Jesus spoke directly hostel of

public health nurses. A lady threw

against the people's reasoning and excuses.

down a note saying she was a backslider and

And they knew it! "...for they perceived that he

needed help. She wanted us to speak with her.

had spoken this parable against them" (Luke

That morning we ministered to her and God

20:19).

delivered her. She has now been a faithful

member of our church for the last ten years.

Although I started out with an empty classroom,

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 120

120

/ CHAPTER 14

6. KNOWS THAT MANY EXCUSES ARE EMPTY.

8. HE MAKES A WAY AND DOES NOT GIVE AN EXCUSE.

As I said earlier, many excuses cannot be substantiated. A good minister must learn to

Anyone operating with the spirit of anagkazo see through the emptiness of excuses. I spoke (the compelling drive) is able to achieve a lot for to one friend, inviting him to church.

God. One of the ways by which I assess leaders He in turn spoke about how the time was not is to see how they handle the excuses of people. convenient and how he had quite a distance to

You see, I don't even have to ask young pastors travel. I said to him, "You are a successful what problems they have. I know the problems

businessman. Everything you want to do, you they must be having: the problem of some

do. You travel. You get up early on weekdays.
people coming this week and not coming the
You even have time to visit your girlfriend who
next week, the problem of people coming late to
lives a few hundred kilometers away. How come
church and the problem of backsliding
you have no time for God?" I told him, "If you Christians!
They also have the problem of new
really want to do something you can do it." Some converts
not remaining in church, the problem
people do not pay their tithes because they
of not having enough time to pray and the
claim they have no money. Watch how much
problem of not being able to do outreaches.
money they spend on other things. You will
If you are a pastor, shepherd, or cell leader
realize that the problem is not a lack of money, you will have

experienced some of these

but the spirit of greed.

problems. But, dear friend, the Bible teaches us that there is nothing new under the sun. The

problem that you have, I have. What

7. HE KNOWS THAT MANY EXCUSES ARE LIES.

differentiates the successful from the

There are many husbands who blame the

unsuccessful is the ability to overcome excuses.

inadequacies of their spiritual relationships on Notice that the man in Luke 14 was not moved

their wives and vice versa. I remember once,

by any of the excuses and reasons given. He

one of my pastors did fundraising in a branch

made a way out of every circumstance that was

church. During the fundraising, the pastor asked produced by the unwilling guests.

for those who would like to give some money for

I believe in one thing; if you really want to do the purchase of church instruments. A husband

something you make a way, if you do not want to

who happened to be a foreigner was prepared to

do something you make an excuse. I recall when

give a donation. Just as his hand was going up, many young people were unwilling to come to

his wife pulled his hand down. She thought the

church. The young men especially, made all

pastor hadn't noticed. After the service, the lady sorts of excuses. The spirit of anagkazo rose up approached the pastor and said, "You know, the in me and I said, "If they will not come to reason why we didn't give any money is because

church, let us have parties for them."

my foreign husband is so stingy." "I will see what we can do," she added. But that was an outright We organized a party for the young people in

lie. It was actually her husband who wanted to

one area of the city. We made invitation cards
donate something. His wife prevented him.
and distributed them to the youth in the
community. They were very happy and said to
themselves, "This is another opportunity to jam." I
remember that evening in particular, we played upbeat
christian music and danced with
the unbelievers. One of them told me later that he wondered
why they were not being served
with beer. At a point in the party, we switched Dag Heward-
Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 121

METHODS FOR EFFECTIVE MISSIONARY WORK / 121

to slower music and we said we had an
company, different from what I knew. The fact
announcement to make. By that time, many of
is, in order to please God I could not spend a lot the
hardened unbelievers were sitting around.

of time in those circles anymore. There were

To their surprise, I got up and preached the

simply no believers in that group. If you want to Gospel to them. They were surprised but they

please God you will have to move out of your

still gave their lives to Christ. Many were born in the circle and get to know other groups of people. I again that night. I have pastors in the church

know that the rich man in this story would not

who were saved during some of these surprise

normally fellowship with people who live in

evangelistic parties. You see, the Bible says by hedges or who stand on highways. I know that

all means, "save some".

the rich man in this story would not normally

Anagkazo means to compel and to drive

interact with cripples, the blind and the

people to God. An anagkazo person is not

disabled. However, in order to achieve his goal, moved by unfavorable circumstances. We were

he had to interact with people of other social

not moved by the fact that these young men did

backgrounds.

not want to attend church. We made a way

I remember in 1984 when I was a leader of a

around that! Learn to make a way where there's

nice fellowship at the university. We loved each no way. Find a way to overcome every excuse

other dearly and were good company for one

that people place before you.

another (actually, I found my wife in that

group!). Many of the people that I knew in that little group are still my bosom friends up to this **9. HE GOES OUT OF HIS NORMAL CIRCLES OF**

day. However, the Spirit of God impressed upon

LIFE.

me to move out of our little group and go to people we didn't know. I remember, some people Everyone has a circle of friends. The usual thing were not in favor of expanding our nice little is to stay within your circle of friends and clique. "If you bring in more people, we will lose acquaintances. However, anyone who wants to something," they said. "There's something be used by God must move out of his regular about a small fellowship. It's nice to be petite. group. You will notice that the anagkazo man in It's a cute little family." this story was forced to move out of his normal But I led this group into one outreach after circle of life. This is a reality that we must face another, driving and necessitating people to if we want to please God! come to the Lord. I was never tired of preaching. When I was growing up in Accra, I had a

People are not tired of sinning, why should you
group of friends. A sort of elitist company made be tired of
spreading the Gospel? During the
up of children of foreigners and other
second year of the medical school (which by the
bourgeoisie. As a child I traveled first class on way is the
most difficult year), I led this group in intercontinental flights
and interacted mainly
dawn broadcasts every Saturday morning.
with the so-called upper echelon of society. I
Everyone knew about us. They were used to our
stayed in top hotels in international cities with voices which
rang out loud and clear every
my father. My hobbies were swimming and
Saturday morning. "Thank God for our nice
horse riding. You can imagine that in Ghana,
little fellowship," I said. "But we have to go out where I come
from, very few people have such

there and win souls." We must move out of our pastimes.
little circle.

However, there were hardly any christians in

There is a very important revelation I want
these circles. When I got born again, I found
you to catch - people become used to you after
myself moving out of this circle into a very
a while. After awhile, unbelievers are no longer different
group. I moved out into better

impressed with our sermons. If you do not rise

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 122

122

/ CHAPTER 14

up with a new approach, a new anagkazo

10. THE ANAGKAZO MAN IS NOT SATISFIED AS

method, your message will become blunt. As

LONG AS THERE IS STILL ROOM.

we continued preaching at dawn, I realized that

people just turned over in their beds and

A song that I love goes like this,

ignored us. I said to myself, "Our messages are no longer driving people to the Lord." But the There's room at the cross for you.

Spirit of the Lord gave me a bright idea. Since There's room at the cross for you.

the people were now so used to our voices, we

Though millions have come, there's still room

needed to do something new. I decided to send for one.

out a group to stand outside the doors of their

There's room at the cross for you.

rooms. I told the preacher for the morning,

"When you get to the altar call, we will start A pastor must never be satisfied as long as there knocking on their doors." I told him, "Tell the is room in the church. The man in this story

people who are listening to you they are going to sent out his servants simply because there was

hear a knock on their door. If they want to

room. "...and yet there is room" (Luke 14:22).

accept Christ they should open up and we will

come in and lead them to the Lord." The

I believe that every church should arrange

preacher followed my instructions. Suddenly,

more chairs than people. The presence of

those who were ignoring us had to pay

empty pews should motivate the pastor to reach

attention. We were knocking on their doors at 5

out until the house is full. The whole essence of a.m.!

Believe me, many were gloriously born

evangelism is to have a full church. "...compel

again during those morning broadcasts.

[anagkazo] them to come in, that my house may
be filled" (Luke 14:23). Evangelism is not

I vividly remember one brother in particular.

intended to be done in a vacuum. It should be

He would laugh at Christians as they spoke in

related to church growth. All our efforts to lead tongues. He
made fun of the gift of speaking in people to the Lord
should bear fruit. We must

tongues. This is someone who would get drunk

see our efforts filling church buildings.

and lie by one of the many ponds that litter the Whatever the
case, a minister must see that

beautiful campus of the University of Ghana.

there is room at the cross for one more soul.

That morning as my friend the evangelist

preached and said, "Perhaps you are hearing a I believe that if we have this mind, God will

knock on your door. If you want to be born again use us to fill the church. I have never been

open your door and someone will come in and

satisfied with the size of my church. When we

lead you to the Lord", I happened to knock on had ten people, I wanted twenty. When we had

the door of this person. I was surprised when he fifty, I dreamed of a hundred. When God gave

opened the door and welcomed us in.

me one hundred people, I thought to myself,

"What would it be like if I had five hundred He said, "I knew you would come here. Today people?" When the church was numbered in the is my day!" We prayed with him and he gave his hundreds, I thought, "What would it be like if we heart to the Lord that very morning. To this day, had thousands?" I think a pastor will get tired of this man is serving the Lord. I give glory to God preaching to the same few people after awhile.

for all the people that have been born-again as

we have forcefully moved out to speak the Word.

We must be motivated to have a fuller house.

Anagkazo works!

These words keep ringing in my soul, "That my house may be filled!" "That my house may be filled!" Dear Christian friend, never forget that there is still room at the cross.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 123

METHODS FOR EFFECTIVE MISSIONARY WORK / 123

I believe that this teaching on the important

THE "BIAZO" METHOD

subject, biazos can change that. Biazos means to

force one's way into a thing. If Christianity is I also want to share on another closely related

going to spread we are going to have to be a lot Greek word, "Biazos". This is because the more forceful than we are. It is amazing to see revelation of anagkazo is very much linked to

fanatic Muslims who are prepared to die for

the revelation in the word biazo.

their faith. I wonder how many Christians have half the drive that Muslims seem to have.

Biazo is a Greek word found in Matthew 11 that

Should we be surprised if statistics indicate that means "to use force" or "to force one's way into Islam is spreading faster than Christianity?

a thing". This is a quality I find lacking in Whether it is making money, spreading a false

Christian circles. We are forceful about

religion or selling deadly products, the whole

everything else, except God's work. We are

world has become very forceful. That is why I

forceful about our jobs, our girlfriends, our

am teaching Christians about being biblically

marriages and our future. But when it comes to

forceful. Another related Greek word I want us

God's work we become like timid mice!

to learn about is the word "Anaideia". When I observe the commercials on

television, I realize that there are groups of

PRACTISING "BIAZO"

people who are very confident about what they

have to offer. They are so confident that they

"Verily I say unto you, Among them that are

boldly sing catchy songs about how good their

born of women there hath not risen a greater

product is. Alcohol advertisers are some of the than John the Baptist: notwithstanding he that

best in the business. We all know that beer and is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than liquor are some of the commonest killers of

he. And from the days of John the Baptist until young people. Alcohol has broken up more

now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence,

homes, destroyed more marriages, caused more
and the violent [biazo] take it by force”

car accidents, started more wars and fights than (Matthew 11:11,12). Multitudes of nonanything else in the world. Yet, they forcibly Christians are hurtling down a broad street to advertise it. Beer is the cause of many accidents, hell. They sing, they dance, and they wine and leading to the deaths of a countless number of dine. They do not give a hoot about the Gospel people. And yet there are smiling people on we preach! Many of us Christians live in our television, telling us that it is the "Power" we nice little world where we are oblivious to the need. These commercials are being forced reality of sinners going to hell. I once worked as down our throats. We are being forced to a sub-intern at the mortuary of the largest believe things that are not true. Beer is the

hospital in Ghana. Something struck me that I

devil in solution! Yet we are being compelled to want to share with you. Every few minutes a car believe otherwise. This unhealthy product is

would park outside the mortuary. In that car paraded as a good thing.

was the body of a man sprawled in the back

When I think of the forcefulness of people

seat, or even sometimes in the boot (trunk). I

who want to make money at all costs, I realize

would stand at the main door of the mortuary as

that Christians have a better reason to be

people brought in their loved ones and relatives forceful. Why then is it that Christians behave who had died at home or on the street. These

like lame ducks, toothless dogs and helpless

people were so sad and shaken. You must

sparrows?

understand that only a few hours earlier they had been talking to a living person who was now gone forever. They were bringing their loved one to a fridge.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 124

124

/ CHAPTER 14

I noticed that there did not seem to be any
In Matthew 11:12, the Bible tells us that the
particular time of the day when dead people
violent take the kingdom of God by force. What
were brought to this mortuary. As I stood there, does this
mean? The Twentieth Century New
God showed me that people were dying across
Testament puts it this way, "...men using force

the city all the time. Death is not reserved for have been seizing it...”

early mornings or late nights. It happens at

The William's Translation says, “...men are

random. A person who has never stood at the seizing it as a precious prize...”

door of a mortuary will not know how common

death is. How frequently people depart for

The Goodspeed translation says, “...Men

eternity! Just as the Lord spoke to His prophets have been taking the kingdom of heaven by

when they saw certain things, the Lord spoke to storm...”

me when I stood at that door. He asked, "How The Weymouth translation says, “...the

many of these people do you think were saved?" kingdom of God has been enduring violent

"I died for them, I gave up my life for them, but assault..."

are they saved?"

All these scriptures tell us one thing, that the **The Importance of "Biazo"**

Kingdom of God can only be established by
using the principle of "biazo".

Listen to me Christian friend, as I said earlier, people are
hurtling down the road of

destruction. They do not even know that they

2. GENTLE WORDS, NICE SONGS, LAME

are going to hell.

SERMONS AND DOCILE CHOIRS CANNOT

HELP MUCH IN THIS INDIFFERENT AND

UNINTERESTED WORLD.

1. MANY OF OUR CHURCH BAZAARS,

WEDDINGS, FELLOWSHIPS AND NICE CHOIRS

People don't want to know. They are deceived.

ARE NOT ENOUGH TO WIN THE MULTITUDES

They don't care whether Jesus comes today or

TO CHRIST.

tomorrow. "Leave me alone," they say. "To hell with this church business of yours." That is why I remember the story of a war in which the

we need what the Bible calls biazio. Biazio means prisoners were taken to large camps. They were

to use force and to force one's way into a thing. stripped of their clothes and herded into huge

Many people are blinded by the devil. We

gas chambers. As they filed in, their captors

must open their eyes to the realities of heaven

would play beautiful music for the prisoners.

and hell. "...the god of this world hath blinded

They heard the music. How soothing and

the minds of them..." (2 Corinthians 4:4).

refreshing it must have sounded. Surely nothing evil is going to happen to us, they thought. Little did they know that they were

3. “BIAZO” IS MORE THAN PREACHING NICE

about to be slaughtered by the same people who
SERMONS

were playing the music. This is the lot of unbelievers today. They hear the music of the

Apostle Paul did not only give nice sermons. He devil. The melodies and lullabies of this present was actively involved in turning the heads and

world charm them. Because of these things, opening the eyes of unbelievers. I always know they do not know that they are walking to their

when people are ignoring the message. But I own destruction. “...as an ox goeth to the don't want anybody to ignore this important

slaughter..." (Proverbs 7:22).

message - I must turn their heads and open
their eyes.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 125

METHODS FOR EFFECTIVE MISSIONARY WORK / 125

One particular morning, my group in the

let's not preach to ourselves. Let's go out there university
found ourselves in a hall, preaching. and drive them in
(anagkazo and biazo) to the

I realized that the young ladies (it was a ladies Lord.

hall) were just turning over in their beds, some with their
boyfriends. They knew that we would

end our "disturbance" after a short while. The Spirit of God
gave me a quick instruction on how **THE "ANAIDEIA"**
METHOD

to use biazo on that occasion. He whispered,

"Do not preach generally, but call out their room Anaideia is
a Greek word that is used only once

numbers and direct the preaching to individual

in the Bible. It means "to be shameless". It also rooms." I obeyed. I gave each of the dawn speaks of importunity. In the eleventh chapter

broadcasters four or five rooms to preach to. It of Luke, we learn of a man who exhibited

was an amazing experience! The people were so shamelessness in his relationship with God. "I

surprised to hear their room numbers being

say unto you, Though he will not rise and give

mentioned. A voice was coming out in the

him, because he is his friend, yet because of his darkness speaking very specifically to the

importunity [anaideia] he will rise and give him occupants of particular rooms. Everyone knew

as many as he needeth" (Luke 11:8). In 1982, I

they were being addressed personally by God.

was admitted to the University of Ghana, the

Of course, some of them were very angry. And premier university in my country Ghana. I some had their boyfriends sleeping in their cautiously entered this new environment rooms with them. They could not help but hear wondering what lay ahead. One of the first a personal and direct message.

things that struck me was the shamelessness of unbelievers as they went about their lives.

I remember that in response to this one lady ran out of her room, came downstairs, lifted up

PRACTISING “ANAIDEIA”

her hands and said, "I want to give my life to Christ today! I want to be born again!" Some I remember one of the first times I walked into

were outraged, but some were saved. The Bible

Volta Hall, the hall of residence for the ladies in says, ...
blessed is he, whosoever shall not be

the University of Ghana. When we got to the

offended in me. Matthew 11:6. When we have

staircase that led up to the first and second

city-wide crusades, I stand on the platform and

floors, there was a young man and woman

command my church members to go out into

engaged in a prolonged embrace and kiss. I

the community. We don't wait for them to come

know that in some cultures this might not look

to us, we go out there and bring them from their strange.
However in our culture it is unusual

homes.

and out of place. This couple continued in their One day, we
even went to a "Red Light

long embrace and intimate kissing as we passed

District" and brought a group of prostitutes to by them. They could not care less about who

the crusade. I was very happy to see these

was watching them! They were not moved!

prostitutes coming to the altar to give their lives They were shameless! Perhaps they felt they

to the Lord. You see, if we hadn't forced these were in love. When we got upstairs, I told my

women out of their "work places" and to the friends, "It seems people around here are not crusade, they would never have been saved.

ashamed of what they're doing." Then I asked, Most prostitutes do not go to church. They

"Why are we ashamed of what we believe in?

would have just gone about their daily routine.

Why are we ashamed of the Gospel? Why do we

We would have ended up preaching to

go around like timid mice who don't have

ourselves. Christian friends, let's stop playing anything to

offer?"

games. If we are going to preach the gospel,

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 126

126

/ CHAPTER 14

The Spirit of the Lord arose within me and I

1. IF YOU ARE SHAMELESS IN THE WORK OF

said, "If they are not ashamed of their immoral **GOD, YOU
WILL ACCOMPLISH THINGS THAT**

lives, I'm not going to be ashamed of the

OTHERS WILL ONLY DREAM ABOUT!

Gospel." "For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ..."
(Romans 1:16). It is amazing to see

God has shown me that people who are very

homosexuals boldly speak of their abnormal

concerned about their public image cannot

lifestyles. They come on television and speak
achieve much for God.

confidently about the perversion of anal

It takes anaideia, shamelessness, to start a
intercourse. These people forcefully

church. When I discussed with my friend the
demonstrate and fight for their rights. How

idea of starting a church, I remember he looked
come Christians are so quiet when it comes to

at me in amazement. He said, "What if people speaking
God's Word? Many Christians sit in

don't come to the church? We will be so
their offices and allow their unbeliever

embarrassed. People in town will hear that we
colleagues to shamelessly speak of their evil

tried to start a church that didn't work." By deeds. The
sinners around us dominate the

starting a church I don't mean to break away
discussions with unwholesome words. That is
with a large segment of someone else's ministry. why I
believe many christians need what the
I am talking about moving into a room that has
Bible calls anaideia. Anaideia simply means
two or three people and preaching to them. It
shamelessness. The Apostle Paul practiced
takes shamelessness to tell these few people
anaideia. Remember, it was Paul who said, "We that they
are now in a great church. If you are are not ashamed of the
gospel."
not prepared to go through the shame and
ridicule of standing in an empty room and

The Importance of Anaideia

looking odd, you will never achieve great things
"I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give for God.

One pastor told me he was afraid to do him, because he is his friend, yet because of his an altar call (inviting people to give their life to importunity [anaideia] he will rise and give him Christ). What if no one responds? Would you

as many as he needeth" (Luke 11:8). In Luke 11

not feel ashamed? People will think that you are Jesus told us a story of a man who needed three

not anointed and that your message was not

loaves of bread. This man buried his shame and

powerful enough. It is this very train-of-embarrassment and went to his friend's house thought that keeps people away from powerful

at a very odd hour. The master of the house was ministry.

woken up. He might have shouted, "What is

One of my Elders called and told me that for

happening? Are there some armed robbers

the first time someone in the church had

here? Is there a fire? What is going on

responded to her altar call. You see, she had

outside?" The servant of the house probably been shamelessly doing altar calls with no one

replied, "It's the neighbor. He says he wants responding. But with anaideia (shamelessness

some bread for his visitors."

and persistence) she eventually had results!

Dear Christian friend, most of us would not

disturb even our best friends at midnight. How

2. ANAIDEIA WILL HELP YOU TO ACCOMPLISH

much more to ask for something trivial like

YOUR GOAL.

bread! But Jesus' message here is very simple.

If you are not ashamed to press for certain

The shameless man who asked for the bread,

things, you will never achieve them.

eventually accomplished his goal. I remember

when I first began to pray for the sick. I was

very worried about what people would think

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 127

METHODS FOR EFFECTIVE MISSIONARY WORK / 127

about me. Many times whilst standing on stage,

the devil would tell me, "Don't even bother to call out for testimonies, no one will be healed." The devil told me, "Do not disgrace yourself any further. Just end the service here and send the people home." But the Spirit of the Lord rose up within me and I said to myself, "I am not

ashamed. If no one gets healed this time, I will do it again, and again, and again! One day,

someone will get healed." I am glad to say that many have been healed.

After I had qualified from the medical school,

I worked for one year as a medical doctor. At a point, the Lord began to speak to me about

entering full-time ministry. I argued with the

Lord, "I will work and bring enough money to support the church." I continued, "What will people think of me. To leave such a noble

profession and to enter a controversial area." I told the Lord, "No one knows my church! And no one knows me!" "Worst of all, what a shame it is for me to live off people's collection." "That's ridiculous! Why should people contribute their

pennies for my upkeep? I find it degrading," I thought.

However, the Lord told me, "They that preach the gospel must live off the gospel." "Even so hath the Lord ordained that they which preach

the gospel should live of the gospel" (1

Corinthians 9:14). I had to bury my pride as a

doctor and shamelessly enter full-time ministry. Through the revelation of shamelessness

(anaideia), I have gone far in the ministry. I

have achieved things, which no one ever

thought would come out of me. Anaideia

(shamelessness) is the key you need to

accomplish great things for God!

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 128

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 129

SECTION III

Sacrifice and Fruitfulness

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 130

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 131

Preaching and Missions

15

about preaching and teaching, your duty is to

PREACHING, TEACHING

allow God to build faith in you. You must

AND THE PLANTING OF

believe in this humble and 'foolish' method of

CHURCHES

church formation. The highest kind of delusion

is to think that we can do anything better than

Christ did. He said that it is enough that the

Preaching, teaching and healing are the key

servant be as his master. "It is enough for the activities that give rise to the formation of

disciple that he be as his master, and the

churches. Jesus Christ understood that His

servant as his Lord..." (Matthew 10:25).

Father had chosen these little understood

methods to establish the church. Through

I have often wondered what God would do if

Jesus' ministry, millions of churches have

He became a man. There are so many problems

sprung up virtually everywhere in the world.

in the world and not enough solutions. In

Truly this is the hand of God and this is God's

general, we know that God would do good

method of establishing His church. "And Jesus

things and solve people's problems. Here are

went about all the cities and villages, teaching some ideas
about what God could do if He

in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of appeared
on this earth for a brief period.

the kingdom, and healing every sickness and

every disease among the people" (Matthew

NINE ALTERNATIVES FOR GOD IN

9:35).

PLACE OF

PREACHING

AND

The use of much money, administrative

TEACHING

techniques, handing out of gifts and building of schools and hospitals has never produced the

1. Perhaps God would set up several large

same results that the three and a half years of

universities.

Jesus' ministry did. In the next few chapters, I will be outlining the mysteries of preaching,

2. Perhaps God would build the biggest

teaching and healing; the strategy that Jesus

hospital in the world to cater for many sick

Christ Himself used to generate hundreds of

people.

thousands of churches in different nations,

3. Perhaps God would provide potable water

cultures and languages.

for thousands of villages.

Indeed, a lasting church has been born. Two

4. Perhaps God would construct the largest

thousand years is not enough time to quench

hydroelectric dam to provide electricity.

the power of three years of preaching, teaching

and healing. As you read the following chapters

131

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 132

132

/ CHAPTER 15

5. Perhaps God would set up relief centres to

EVIDENCE THAT GOD BECAME A

cater for the refugees and displaced children

MAN

of the world.

6. If God became a man, perhaps He would

1. IF GOD WERE TO BECOME A MAN, HIS

build many orphanages.

ENTRY INTO THIS WORLD WOULD BE

UNUSUAL.

7. If God became a man He would probably set

up great businesses so that He could finance

And sure enough, Jesus was born of a virgin

the work of God.

amidst many unusual circumstances. "Behold, a

8. If God became a man, He would build

VIRGIN SHALL BE WITH CHILD, and shall bring

schools to cater for all children of school forth a son, and they shall call his name going age.

Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us" (Matthew 1:23).

This would reduce illiteracy in the world and greatly improve the lot of many people.

Over 109 prophecies were fulfilled by Jesus' coming into this world.

9. If God became a man, He would join some political parties in order to gain influence to help the world.

2. IF GOD WERE TO BECOME A MAN, HE

Perhaps He would help the world better by

WOULD PROBABLY SPEAK THE GREATEST
being a president.

WORDS EVER SPOKEN.

But God did become a man. God did take on His words would probably never be forgotten.

the form of a man for a brief period. "Let this

This is exactly what has happened. Even though

mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus:

Jesus never wrote a book, or recorded a tape,

Who, being in the form of God, thought it not

His words are still echoing through the

robbery to be equal with God: But made himself

centuries. "For he taught them as one having

of no reputation, and took upon him the form of

authority, and not as the scribes" (Matthew

a servant, AND WAS MADE IN THE LIKENESS

7:29).

OF MEN: AND BEING FOUND IN FASHION AS A

MAN, he humbled himself, and became

obedient unto death, even the death of the

3. IF GOD BECAME A MAN, HE WOULD BE

cross. Let this mind be in you, which was also in **SINLESS AND PERFECT.**

Christ Jesus: ...Wherefore God also hath highly

Sure enough, Jesus was the perfect man. He did

exalted him, and given him a name which is

no sin. "Who did NO SIN, neither was guile

above every name: That at the name of Jesus

found in his mouth" (1 Peter 2:22).

every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and

things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus

4. IF GOD DID BECOME A MAN, HE WOULD

Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father"

OVERCOME THE PROBLEMS THAT HAVE

(Phillippians 2:5-11).

PLAGUED

MANKIND THROUGH THE

How do we know that God became a man? We
CENTURIES.

know for these reasons.

He would conquer sickness and disease. That is
exactly what Jesus did. All kinds of diseases and
sicknesses were banished from the presence of
the Lord. "When the even was come, they

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 133

PREACHING AND MISSIONS / 133

brought unto him many that were possessed

8. IF GOD BECAME A MAN WE KNOW THAT HE

with devils: and he cast out the spirits with his **WOULD**

SPEND HIS TIME DOING THE

word, and HEALED ALL THAT WERE SICK”

MAXIMUM GOOD FOR ALL MANKIND.

(Matthew 8:16).

“How God anointed JESUS OF NAZARETH with
the Holy Ghost and with power: WHO WENT

5. IF GOD BECAME A MAN, HE WOULD

ABOUT DOING GOOD, and healing all that were

CONTROL

THE

ELEMENTS

THAT

HE

oppressed of the devil; for God was with him”

CREATED.

(Acts 10:38).

That is what Jesus did. He exercised power over the wind and the rain. He even walked on the

THE MAXIMUM GOOD

sea that He had created. "And when the

disciples saw him WALKING ON THE SEA, they

Dear friend, let us ask ourselves what activities were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they

Christ engaged Himself in during His brief stay cried out for fear" (Matthew 14:26).

on earth. Was it the building of schools and hospitals? Was it the building of orphanages and providing of electricity and water? The

6. IF GOD BECAME A MAN FOR A BRIEF

answer is NO! We can find out what Jesus did by

PERIOD, HIS VISIT TO THE EARTH, NO

reading the four gospels. In particular, there is **MATTER**

HOW BRIEF, WOULD ALWAYS BE

a scripture that summarizes the activities of

REMEMBERED.

Christ on earth. I want you to read it carefully.

“And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, It would be referred to as the time God visited

TEACHING in their synagogues, and

us. Surely the visit of Christ has never been

PREACHING the gospel of the kingdom, and

forgotten. In fact the entry and exit of Christ are HEALING every sickness and every disease

marked annually by the whole wide world. Two

among the people” (Matthew 9:35). WE CAN

thousand years after the visit of Christ, Easter

SAFELY CONCLUDE THAT THE MOST

and Christmas are still worldwide events.

IMPORTANT AND HIGHEST FORM OF

ASSISTANCE GIVEN TO ANY COMMUNITY ON
THIS EARTH MUST BE PREACHING,

7. IF GOD BECAME A MAN, HE WOULD

TEACHING AND HEALING. Of course I don't

OVERCOME MAN'S GREATEST ENEMY -

think that any of us would purport to be wiser

DEATH.

than God!

The Lord Jesus calmly predicted that He would

die and rise up after three days. He seemed to

1. THE MAIN ACTIVITIES THAT GOD ENGAGED

have no fear of death. He conquered death and

IN WHEN ON EARTH WERE PREACHING,

the grave and hell for us that we might not have **TEACHING
AND HEALING.**

to go there. "But is now made manifest by the
appearing of our Saviour JESUS CHRIST, WHO

These three activities must have been the most

HATH ABOLISHED DEATH, and hath brought

beneficial to the human race. That is why He

life and immortality to light through the gospel"

engaged Himself in them. More good was done

(2 Timothy 1:10).

to this world by the preaching, the teaching and the healing
of Christ Jesus. If there were

anything better or more helpful, He would have

done it. This preaching, teaching and healing

has given birth to thousands of churches. I

/ CHAPTER 15

often marvel when people ask me why I have should do. The wisdom of God is foolishness to left the medical field for the ministry. I suppose men. God has chosen that by the foolishness of they think that giving out medicine is the preaching, man should be saved. "For after that highest form of assistance any human being in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew could render to a community. I agree that the not God, it pleased God BY THE FOOLISHNESS practice of medicine is a very noble and

OF PREACHING TO SAVE

THEM THAT

benevolent activity - what would we do without

BELIEVE" (1 Corinthians 1:21).

doctors? But Jesus has shown us the highest

People used to tell me how helpful I would be

and the best kind of help you could ever give to to the community as a doctor, but I tell you that mankind.

I am of greater benefit now that I am a preacher. I believe the greatest calling upon anyone is the **2. IT IS SAD THAT PASTORS IN THE MINISTRY**

call to preach. The best way we can help

ARE OFTEN PRESSURIZED TO LEAVE THEIR

humanity is to preach, to teach and to pray for

healing. That is why you must pray for the

ROLE OF PREACHING, TEACHING AND

power to preach, for the grace to become a

HEALING.

teacher and for the grace to heal the sick. When Subtle psychological pressure is exerted on

God became a man, He gave Himself to

them until they feel that doing something more

preaching.

secular is more beneficial. The highest form of deception is to think you are wiser than God.

THE POWER OF PREACHING

The ultimate delusion is to think that you can

have a greater impact than Christ did. It is time **1.**

PREACHING ATTACKS THE ROOT OF MAN'S

to understand that preaching, teaching and

PROBLEM.

healing are what the world needs. The world is

waiting for preachers. The world is waiting for

a. T

The R

Root oof aall O

Our W

Woes

teachers. God is raising an army of preachers

The world is full of sinners on their way to hell. and teachers who will do His will. By preaching, No matter how good you are, your sins are

teaching and healing, the Lord Jesus has

manifest to God. Anyone who thinks he is

brought forth thousands of churches, which

righteous before God is suffering from one of

have lasted thousands of years.

the highest kinds of deception. The only thing

that gives us a right standing before God is the **3. THE CHURCH HAS DONE MORE GOOD TO**

blood of Jesus. Unfortunately some teachings in

THIS WORLD THAN THE UN, WHO AND

the body of Christ have led to the deception that we are semi perfect beings who have a right to

THE UNHCR PUT TOGETHER.

be in heaven. Let me give you a few examples

Definitely the church has done more good to

of people I know you respect. You will notice

this world than most governments have. All

that as they got to know God they became more

this good is the result of Jesus' preaching,

humble and even uncertain of their standing

teaching and healing for three and a half years. with God.

I utterly reject the statement of those who say

b. A

Apostle PPaul's EExample

that a church becomes relevant only when it

The Apostle Paul graduated downward in his

gets involved in Social Work. The church

opinion of himself. He moved from being the

becomes relevant when it gets involved in

highest of the apostles to the worst of sinners. preaching
teaching and healing. That is what

This is real growth in humility.

God would have done and that is what we

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 135

PREACHING AND MISSIONS / 135

i. First, he saw himself as not being inferior to d. PPeter's
EExample

any of the apostles

The Apostle Peter was fishing one day when the

“... for in nothing am I behind the very

Lord showed up. When he realized that the one

chiefest apostles..." (2 Corinthians 12:11).

standing by him was Jesus, he was filled with a

ii. He later considered himself as the least of sense of sinfulness and he said, "I am a sinful these same apostles.

man". The presence of God always reveals our deepest corruption. "When Simon Peter saw it,

"For I am the least of the apostles, that am

he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart

not meet to be called an apostle, because I

from me; for I AM A SINFUL MAN, O Lord" (Luke

persecuted the church of God" (1

5:8).

Corinthians 15:9).

e. D

Daniel's EExample

iii. After a while, he stopped comparing himself with the apostles and likened himself to the

Daniel was a holy prophet greatly loved by the least of the saints.

Lord. However when he came into the presence of the Lord, he said 'my comeliness has turned

"Unto me, who am less than THE LEAST OF in me into corruption'. Once again you see a

ALL SAINTS, is this grace given, that I should holy man of God who realizes his sinfulness

preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable

when he is in the presence of God. "And I Daniel riches of Christ" (Ephesians 3:8).

alone saw the vision: for the men that were with iv. Finally, at the end of his life and in one of his me saw not the vision; but a great quaking fell

last letters, he did not bother to compare

upon them, so that they fled to hide themselves. himself to an apostle or a saint.

Therefore I was left alone, and saw this great

vision, and there remained no strength in me:

He had concluded that he was the chief of

for my "COMELINESS WAS TURNED IN ME

sinner. "This is a faithful saying, and worthy of INTO
CORRUPTION." and I retained no

all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the strength.
Yet heard I the voice of his words: and world to save
SINNERS; OF WHOM I AM CHIEF"

when I heard the voice of his words, then was I
(1 Timothy 1:15).

in a deep sleep on my face, and my face toward

c. JJob's EExample

the ground. And, behold, an hand touched me,

which set me upon my knees and upon the

Job was described by God as an upright and

palms of my hands. And he said unto me, O

perfect man who eschewed evil. However when

Daniel, a man greatly beloved, understand the

Job came into contact with the Lord he realized

words that I speak unto thee, and stand upright: that he was actually a very evil person. He said, for unto thee am I now sent. And when he had

"I abhor myself". "I know that thou canst do spoken this word unto me, I stood trembling"

every thing, and that no thought can be

(Daniel 10:7-11).

withholden from thee. Who is he that hideth

counsel without knowledge? therefore have I

All this goes to prove that there is none

uttered that I understood not; things too

righteous, no not one. "As it is written, There is wonderful for me, which I knew not. Hear, I

none righteous, no, not one" (Romans 3:10).

beseech thee, and I will speak: I will demand of It is the presence of this pervading sin that is thee, and declare

thou unto me. I have heard of

destroying the whole world. Sin is the reason

thee by the hearing of the ear: but now mine eye for all the problems in the world. Sin is the root seeth thee.

WHEREFORE I ABHOR MYSELF, and

cause of all our woes. That is why preaching is repent in dust and ashes” (Job 42:2-6).

the most important remedy for the problems of

mankind. Preaching attacks man's problem at

its very root.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 136

136

/ CHAPTER 15

f. T

The R

Relationship between Sin and Death

Death

h. T

The D

Death S Sentence

“Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the
I remember watching a documentary of a young
world, and death by sin; and SO DEATH PASSED
man who had been sentenced to death in
UPON ALL MEN, FOR THAT ALL HAVE
America. It was a sad and moving true story of
SINNED:(For until the law sin was in the world:
this black man who was alleged to have killed a
but sin is not imputed when there is no law.
policeman. He denied ever killing the
Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to
policeman and many people believed that he

Moses, even over them that had not sinned after
was truly innocent. For six long years, legal
the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is
battles raged, as lawyers, family and friends
the figure of him that was to come. But not as
tried to get him off death row. Finally, his
the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through options
ran out and there were no further
the offence of one many be dead, much more
appeals that he could make.
the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is It was an
amazing documentary. They filmed
by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto
this man up until a few minutes before his
many" (Romans 5:12-15).
execution. His family and friends were invited
Death has passed onto all men because of sin.

for a last dinner. They all gathered around and

The sin in our lives leads to death. The Bible

had dinner with him. Finally it was time for

also says when sin is finished it brings forth

them to go and they hugged him one by one till

death. "Then when lust hath conceived, it

no one was left. He was then escorted to a

bringeth forth sin: AND SIN, when it is finished, private
room where he had the opportunity to

BRINGETH FORTH DEATH" (James 1:15).

talk to his pastor and then to his lawyer. Within Death is the
inescapable end for all human

an hour, the execution had been carried out.

beings. The very fact that we die indicates the After the
execution his lawyer and his pastor

presence of sin. Every time you see someone

were interviewed. I remember in particular the

dying, remember that sin has completed its

question his pastor was asked. "What was the work. Death is the only natural consequence of last thing you said to him?" someone asked. The sin.

pastor answered, "I told him that all of us were g. T

The C

Cause oof D

Death

under a death sentence, the only difference is

The presence of sin opens the door to all the

that most of us do not know the day of our

known causes of death including the cancers,

execution." As I pondered over those words, I HIV, incurable diseases, sickness, accidents and thought to myself how true they were. We are

old age. The diseases of this world can all be

indeed under a death sentence. All of us will

attributed to our sinfulness. As you will notice, have to die whether we like it or not. It is just a none of the human attempts at helping mankind

matter of time till the sentence will catch up

have eradicated the presence of sin and death.

with us. It is only Jesus who can deliver us from So preaching is the only solution that offers life this death sentence and give us new life. He

to a human race sentenced to death. "In him

said, "I am the way, the truth and the life." was life; and the life was the light of men" (John This is why preaching is so important. This is

1:4).

what differentiates preaching from all other

No hospital can promise you life. No medical

kinds of human assistance. Preaching ministers

cure can offer you life. The UN cannot solve your life to condemned people! Jesus said, 'the words problem of death. There is a death sentence on

I speak onto you are spirit and life.'

all of us and only Jesus can give us new life.

Jesus said, 'I came that you might have life'.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 137

PREACHING AND MISSIONS / 137

2. PREACHING RELEASES THE POWER OF

3. PREACHING GIVES HOPE.

GOD.

"For whatsoever things were written aforetime

"For I am not ashamed of THE GOSPEL OF

were written for our learning, that we through

CHRIST: FOR IT IS THE POWER OF GOD unto

patience and comfort of the scriptures MIGHT

salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew HAVE
HOPE" (Romans 15:4). Many people

first, and also to the Greek" (Romans 1:16). "HE

come to church with hopeless and discouraging
SENT HIS WORD, and healed them, and
situations hanging over their heads. As the
delivered them from their destructions" (Psalm
'Word of God' comes to them, discouragement
107:20). I once had a visiting preacher from
and hopelessness are driven away. Like chaff
Switzerland who made a remark about my
before a strong wind, discouragement and
church. He said, 'Your church is like a giant
desperation are forced to fly away. The
youth group'. He continued, 'there are so many
preaching of the word of hope keeps men alive.
young people in your church."

I once read about an experiment in which a

Up until then, I had not really noticed that our mouse was put into a deep bucket of water in a

church was full of young people. Initially, I

dark room. There was absolutely no light in this thought it was not a compliment for someone to

room. After about three minutes, the mouse

say that my church was full of young people.

drowned in the bucket. A mouse of similar

However, as time went by, I realized that it took weight and size was put in the same bucket of

the power of God to get young people into

water and in the same dark room. This time, a

church. You see, young people are full of energy little glimmer of light was allowed to seep

and youthful lusts. There are certain desires

through. This second mouse kept swimming for

that are found more in young people. When the

about three days before it finally drowned.

church is full of young people, it is a sign that What was the difference between the two mice?

the power of God is present.

The thin ray of light that the second mouse

The police cannot change young people.

saw gave it so much hope. The hope for survival

Moral codes cannot restrict wild young men.

kept the mouse swimming. This is a wonderful

The fear of going to prison doesn't even seem to story that illustrates how hope can keep a man

inhibit people today. However, I know

alive until his miracle comes.

something that has the power to convert the

most hardened sinner. Is it not amazing that

We hardly talk about hope, but without hope

people who would not listen to anyone - parents, there can be no faith. Faith is the assurance of teachers or advisors

are 'arrested' by the word of the things you are hoping for. As people receive God and are changed forever? Truly, the hope through preaching, faith is built up.

preaching of the cross is the power of God.

From a very early age I have served the Lord. I **4.**

PREACHING SAVES LIVES.

have followed Him with all my heart. What

could make a young man like me give up his

“For after that in the wisdom of God the world

profession and become a preacher? This is the

by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the

power of God at work. Preaching always

foolishness of preaching TO SAVE THEM that

releases power and that power has the ability to believe” (1 Corinthians 1:21). God has chosen

change people. That is why you must be a

that by the foolishness of preaching, people

preacher. This is because preaching has the

should be saved. Preaching saves lives.

ability to release power.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 138

138

/ CHAPTER 15

The Anointing of Jonah

The earlier generations were having 'four

hundred year' birthday parties. They had

In the last days, the anointing of Jonah the

children when they were hundred and fifty years

preacher will be released on men. The

old. Today we are overjoyed if someone gets to

anointing of Jonah was sufficient to convert

the age of eighty. By the time someone is forty, hardened
sinners to the ways of God. Nineveh

he seems to be an elderly person. Why has the
was a city of wicked people and Jonah was
body begun to give up so early? "And it came to
initially afraid of preaching there. The entire pass, when
men began to multiply on the face of
city was eventually converted when Jonah
the earth, and daughters were born to them,
preached. Jonah did not perform any miracles.
That the sons of God saw the daughters of men
He did not slay anyone in the Spirit nor did he
that they were fair; and they took them wives of have
strange manifestations of the Spirit.
all which they chose. And the Lord said, My
However, he had a strong preaching anointing
spirit shall not always strive with man, for that and it was
strong enough to change an entire
he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred city.

and twenty years” (Genesis 6:1-3).

I see that preaching anointing coming upon

900 years was reduced to 120 years because

your life! You shall preach to thousands! Men's

of fornication with the sons of God! Fornication hearts will change when they hear you

shortened the lives of the people by 800 years.

preaching. People will be saved when they

90% of their lives were taken away because of

come under your preaching ministry.

fornication. The Bible declares 'when sin is

finished it brings forth death.' Think about that. **5.**

PREACHING PROLONGS LIVES.

Eight hundred years was cut off because of

fornication.

The book of Genesis shows us that people lived

Do you see how sin shortened our lives? As

much longer than they do today. "And all the

you can see, the problem is spiritual and not

days of Enoch were THREE HUNDRED SIXTY

physical. That is why physical remedies cannot

AND FIVE YEARS: Genesis 5:23. And all the

be the solution for mankind. It is a sin problem. days of
Methuselah were NINE HUNDRED

And the solution is the preaching of Christ Jesus SIXTY
AND NINE YEARS: and he died" (Genesis

and Him crucified.

5:27).

When 'sin is finished', the agents of death i.e.

"And all the days of Lamech were SEVEN

heart disease, lung disease, cancer, sickle cell HUNDRED
SEVENTY AND SEVEN YEARS: and

disease, skin diseases, HIV, tumors, accidents,

he died. Genesis 5:31. As sin increased, life

fight, kidney failure begin to make

became shorter. The Bible is very specific about arrangements to kill us - whether by making the

how God shortened life from hundreds of years

kidney stop, or by causing a car accident.

to one hundred and twenty years. And the LORD

Everyone has a different method by which the

said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, death sentence is carried out.

for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be AN

HUNDRED AND TWENTY YEARS" (Genesis

When Christ came to this earth, He knew He

6:3). It seems life was shortened even further

was dealing with a complex problem. That is

from one hundred and twenty years to seventy

why He didn't just heal everyone. He knew that years. "The

days of our years are THREESCORE

the problem was deeper. He knew why certain

YEARS AND TEN; and if by reason of strength

ailments had fastened themselves onto certain

they be fourscore years, yet is their strength

people. It was not just an issue of being ill. He labour and sorrow; for it is soon cut off, and we knew that there was more to it than that!

fly away" (Psalm 90:10).

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 139

PREACHING AND MISSIONS / 139

When the Lord looked at our situation, He

those that find them, and health to all their

thought of the best way to help us, the best way flesh" (Proverbs 4:20,22). Expose yourself to

to lengthen our lives. God planned the best way

preaching and you will be exposing yourself to

to save us from the things to which we were
many blessings. Jesus came preaching and
bound legally. That is why He came around
teaching. "He sent his word, and healed them,
preaching, teaching and healing. It pleased God and
delivered them from their destructions"
that by the foolishness of preaching, He would
(Psalm 107:20).

save people.

The healings were just signs. When people
came just for signs He told them they were evil. **6.**
PREACHING AFFECTS ALL AREAS OF LIFE.

He taught us that loving signs and wonders
without loving His preaching is an evil thing.
Preaching and teaching solve your problems.
"But he answered and said unto them, An evil

First of all, your spirit is redeemed. You do not and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign;

have to go to hell anymore. Thank God that by

and there shall no sign be given to it, but the

the power of preaching, your soul will be saved

sign of the prophet Jonas" (Matthew 12:39).

from eternal damnation.

Preaching starts churches! God wants more

When preaching has powerfully saved your

preachers! God wants you to preach! Preaching

soul, other areas of your life begin to be affected and teaching will heal your marriage. It will

as well. After the soul has prospered, your

reduce the tendency to fight; it will bring peace. health will be affected by this salvation. Your

Preaching will prevent divorce. Preaching

financial life is also affected after the salvation changes lives!

of your soul. God's Word begins to heal and solve all problems from within. "Beloved, I wish above all things THAT THOU MAYEST PROSPER

THE POWER OF TEACHING

and be in health, EVEN AS THY SOUL

One day Jesus was teaching in the temple and a PROSPERETH" (3 John 2).

demon shouted 'leave us alone.' The word is Thinking naturally, you realize that if a person powerful: it attacks demons directly. "And they decides to do away with fornication, he reduces went into Capernaum; and straightway on the his exposure to the HIV infection and therefore sabbath day he entered into the synagogue, and death. When you hear the Word of God, and taught. And they were astonished at his

decide to marry instead of running around with
doctrine: for he taught them as one that had
different people, you reduce your exposure to
authority, and not as the scribes. And there was many
diseases. Preaching and teaching saves
in their synagogue A MAN WITH AN UNCLEAN
our lives in many ways we cannot even imagine.
SPIRIT; AND HE CRIED OUT, SAYING, LET US
Because of the Word of God, we decide to stop
ALONE; what have we to do with thee, thou
smoking and drinking alcohol. This extends our Jesus of
Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us?
lives automatically by many years. You are at far I know
thee who thou art, the Holy One of God”
less risk from cancer, heart disease, HIV,
(Mark 1:21-24).

gonorrhea and depression when you live in line

Exposing yourself to the teaching of the Word

with the word of God.

brings healing to your life. Jesus did not just

A preaching tape can save your life. I believe

teach people. The people came to hear Him and

in listening to preaching tapes. You will discover after that,
to be healed of their diseases. "But so that the Word you
get from the tape is 'life to all much the more went there a
fame abroad of

who find it and health to all your flesh.' "My

him: and great multitudes came together TO

son, attend to my words...For they are life unto

HEAR, AND TO BE HEALED by him of their

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 140

140

/ CHAPTER 15

infirmities" (Luke 5:15). There are many

Preaching enters quickly but fades quickly.

accounts in the Gospels where people came to

5. Preaching is moving and stirring.

hear Him teach. The reason God is going to

raise you up as a powerful teacher is so that you 6.

Preaching is more outwardly impressive

can affect people's lives. God is going to raise than teaching.

you up as a powerful preacher and teacher. "And

7. Teaching is not as popular as preaching.

he came down with them, and stood in the plain,

and the company of his disciples, and a great

If I were to put a preacher on the left and a

multitude of people out of all Judaea and

teacher on the right, most people would

Jerusalem, and from the sea coast of Tyre and

prefer the preacher.

Sidon, which came TO HEAR HIM, AND TO BE

8. Most people would think that a preacher is a
HEALED OF THEIR DISEASES" (Luke 6:17).

more powerful man of God compared to the
Jesus always taught the Word of God before
teacher.

ministering healing. After teaching the Word,

If the masses were asked to vote, they would

He would heal the sick. He did this because the
probably choose the preacher because he

Word of God attacks the source of your sickness. would be
more impressive.

God reaches to the root cause of your poverty.

As people are exposed to the Word, healing

9. Teachers usually have churches that grow

always comes. "My son, attend to my

steadily.

words...For they are life unto those that find

This is because the truth is taught line upon
them, and health to all their flesh" ((Proverbs
line; and precept upon precept. When
4:20,22).

building a house, the blocks are laid

Jesus said, 'the words that I speak unto you,

systematically until you get an orderly and

they are spirit and they are life, (John 6:63). Life lasting
structure.

comes into you as you hear the word. Thank God

that through the teaching of His word, your

DIRECT EFFECTS OF TEACHING

spirit comes alive. It is important to continue to expose
yourself to the teaching of the word. We **1. THE**

TEACHING OF THE WORD BRINGS

realize that the word whether through

LIGHT.

preaching or teaching, heals us and saves us.

What is the difference between preaching and

Demons abide in darkness. Demons of

teaching?

frustration, early death and poverty abide in

darkness. Pride is a type of darkness. That is

THE DIFFERENCES BETWEEN

why there are evil spirits where there is pride. Thank God, His word is light. "Thy word is a

PREACHING AND TEACHING

lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path"

(Psalm 119:105). When the word is taught, a

1. When the Word comes to us by preaching,

light comes on in our hearts. Demons, which our souls are ministered to.

dwelling in darkness, are forced to run away. As

2. When the Word comes by teaching, our

the word is taught, spiritual illumination takes minds are largely involved in receiving.

place. That is why people can be healed while

teaching goes on. As the word is taught, your

3. Teaching has a more lasting effect than

life is transformed. The devil knows this and

preaching does.

that is why he does not like you to listen to

4. Teaching is sometimes more difficult to

teaching. That is why he does not want you to

assimilate.

have a tape. A tape can change your life forever. Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and

PREACHING AND MISSIONS / 141

One tape can take you to heaven. One tape can
Teaching is powerful. It drives away demons,
turn you into a pastor! One tape can turn you
mental diseases, blindness, uncleanness, pride,
from being a divorcee into a happily married
stupidity, lust, spiritual problems and poverty. person. A
tape can give you stability, turn you The sword pricks the
demons and drives them
from madness to sanity and give you health.
away.

The devil does not like teaching because of the

Since the demons do not want to be hurt by

light it brings. Years ago, when I was doing my the sword of
the word they do all they can to

housemanship at the Korle Bu Teaching

stop you from taking in the teaching. That is

Hospital, I lived in one of the hostel rooms.

why sometimes demons make you sleep in

There was a time that my room was plagued

church, lest you hear the teaching. Hearing

with rats and mice.

comes before healing! "... which came to hear

Every night when I got to my room, I would

him and to be healed..." (Luke 6:17).

put on the lights and suddenly, these rats would race all over the room and toward a particular

hole in the ceiling. It would send shivers down **3. THE TEACHING OF THE WORD IS THE**

my spine because I hated rats (and these were

PLANTING OF THE SEED.

big ones). These rats were having a field day

while I was out and when the lights were off.

The sower soweth the Word, (Mark 4:14). A

But as soon as I turned on the lights, they felt seed is planted when you hear the Word. If the

exposed and fled. So it is with us when the light preacher says, 'you shall be blessed and

of the Word of God comes on in our lives.

prosperous,' a seed is planted in your life. The Demons are exposed and they are forced to flee.

words of a teacher are seeds, which grow and

This is exactly how the Word of God operates.

become mighty trees. The reason why many

The Word throws light on the demons that dwell

people in my church want to be pastors is

and flourish in the darkness of our lives! When because of the seeds I have planted. What you

the light of the word of God is off in your life plant is what you reap. Even in ordinary life the (when you do not go to church, or when there is

things we say about our children come to pass

no word in your life) demons are free to invade

as they grow. As you continue to call your child you.
Demons look for darkness within human

an angel he grows up to have a sweet spirit and

beings. The darkness of unforgiveness,

vice versa.

bitterness, hatred, lust, lying, pride,

As you tell your congregation that it shall be

disobedience, sin or anger. That is why the

well with them and that the Lord is their keeper Bible
enjoins us not to give any place to the

and the shade upon their right hand, these

devil. The presence of these dark areas opens

promises come to pass. The Lord is your helper, the door
for demonic maneuvers and operations.

you shall live and not die, and it shall be well

“Neither give place to the devil” (Ephesians

with you. You shall have the baby you thought

4:27). You shall be free from satanic oppression you would not have!

when you put on the light of the word.

2. THE TEACHING OF THE WORD IS THE SWORD IN ACTION.

“...and the sword of the Spirit, which is the

word of God” (Ephesians 6:17). “For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than

any twoedged sword...” (Hebrews 4:12).

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 142

Preaching the Cross

16

self-preservation. The goals of most Christians

PREACHING THE CROSS VS.

are to get more money, houses, cars, and

PREACHING PROSPERITY

security. Even pastors measure their success by the amount of money they have, and by the size

Some years ago, I read a book by a well-known pastor of the offerings in their churches. The message recognized a prophet in which he described an

of prosperity has become the message of the encounter with the Apostle Paul in a vision. I

church. Church members are postured as was stunned by the account of his reported receivers—"Yes Lord, I receive!" This is the interaction with Paul.

catchphrase of the church!

In this interaction, Paul said to him, "Except
It is time for us to present ourselves before
for in a few places in the world, we can hardly

the Lord as people who have something to give.
recognize the ministry or the message that is
The church must be seen as a group of people
being preached today.” He continued, “When
who sacrifice for the Kingdom and not as a
we served, being in the ministry was the
group of people who only receive blessings. Your greatest
sacrifice that one could make and this
will notice that whenever the church has a
was reflected in the message of the greatest
miracle convention meeting, the attendance is
sacrifice that was made—the cross.”
different from when it is a teaching service, an ordinary
weekday service, or a training camp
Some months later, I was walking on a golf
session.
course in England with a pastor friend of mine.

As we walked and talked, the Lord spoke to me.

Any meeting that calls for some kind of work

He said to me, "Preach about sacrifice." I said, like witnessing or prayer is poorly attended.

"Lord, I do not know anything about sacrifice. I However, the crowds gather when they expect

have never preached about it." Nevertheless, I

to receive miracles. But the church is supposed had to obey Him. I was surprised to learn so

to be a place where we "take up our crosses and

much on this subject and that is why I am

follow Him". Money has never been a measure

writing this textbook.

of God's approval of our lives and never will be. I believe in the prophet's vision of the Apostle The Bible clearly teaches that in the last days, Paul. I also agree that the message and the

some will suppose that gain is godliness.

ministry of the church today are quite different
“Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds,
from that of the early church. The concept of
and destitute of the truth, supposing that GAIN
sacrificing anything to God is foreign to most
IS GODLINESS: from such withdraw thyself” (1
Christians today. The focus of Christianity today Timothy
6:5).
is money, prosperity, establishment, safety and

142

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 143

PREACHING THE CROSS

/ 143

REVISITING

THE ORIGINAL

One of the most painful ways to die is by

MESSAGE OF SACRIFICE

stoning. Out of the stones thrown, a particular

stone will knock you unconscious and kill you.

“Sacrifice” means “giving up something”. It is a However, before you are hit by the stone that

central theme of the Bible. Many of us first

makes you unconscious, all the other stones

heard of the word sacrifice from the Bible. We

thrown at you will give you a lot of pain, torture read about Abraham’s sacrifice, Isaac’s sacrifice and torment. You suffer a lot from stoning

and Jacob’s sacrifice.

before you actually die.

The Bible tells us that Stephen was stoned to

1. THE ISRAELITES MADE SACRIFICES TO

death. “As he was dying, his eyes were opened

G

to see Jesus. But he, being full of the Holy

OD CONTINUALLY.

Ghost, looked up steadfastly into heaven, AND

Throughout the Old Testament, we see the

SAW THE GLORY OF GOD, AND JESUS

Israelites making sacrifices to God continually. STANDING
ON THE RIGHT HAND OF GOD,

You could not think of a prophet of God in the

And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and

Bible without thinking about sacrifices. You

the Son of man standing on the right hand of

could not think of Elijah, without thinking of his God” (Acts
7:55,56). How did Stephen see

experience with the 400 prophets of Baal. Yet,

Jesus? I believe he saw Him with the eyes of his today,
sacrifice is one of the most hushed topics. heart.

Today, the theme of our preaching is prosperity, miracles and blessings.

3. YOUR HEART WILL BE WHERE YOUR TREASURE IS.

2. THE CHURCH TODAY HAS TOTALLY

You see, where your treasure is, that is where

ABANDONED THE ORIGINAL MESSAGE OF

your heart will be. When your treasure is in

SACRIFICE.

Heaven, your heart is in Heaven. When your

The church has become a phantom of the

heart is in Heaven, the eyes of your heart always original church; fearful and powerless. Other

see heavenly things. Let your heart be with

religions constantly demonstrate to us the

God! When your heart is with God, you will be

essence and practice of sacrifice. The message

ready to sacrifice; you will be ready to die for of sacrifice is very relevant for all of us today. what you believe! Not because you have some

The teaching of sacrifice must return to the special calling, but because you believe what church otherwise we will continue to be a you say you believe!

phantom of the real church! “But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither

4. ANYTHING CAN BE GIVEN UP FOR CHRIST.

moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: FOR WHERE

“But Christ has shown me that what I once YOUR TREASURE IS, THERE WILL YOUR

thought was valuable is worthless. Nothing is as HEART BE ALSO” (Matthew 6:20,21). Your

wonderful as knowing Christ Jesus my Lord. I

heart will be where your treasure is. When I

have given up everything else and count it all as became a pastor, the Lord asked me to put a lot

rubbish. All I want is Christ” (Philippians 3:7,8

of my own money into the ministry. The Lord

Contemporary English Version).

made me make many sacrificial donations to

help the fledgling church. You see, when you

“But what things were gain to me, those I

put your money in the church, your heart

counted loss for Christ. Yea doubtless, and I

follows suit.

count all things but loss for the excellency of the Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 144

knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I

for the Lord. God asks you to present your body have suffered the loss of all things, and do count as a living sacrifice! This type of sacrifice is an them but dung, that I may win Christ”

undying sacrifice, something that goes on and

(Philippians 3:7,8).

on. It is unending! One martyr said, “Eighty

and four years have I served the Lord. Why

Paul made many sacrifices for his faith and was

should I deny my Lord at this time? What evil

glad about it.

has He done to me?” Someone with faith will

never deny the Lord!

**5. THERE IS NOTHING LIKE LIVING FOR GOD
WITHOUT PAYING THE PRICE.**

Jesus said that unless a corn of wheat falls into **THE
RELEASE OF POWER**

the ground and dies, it abideth alone. The seed must always die if it is to bear fruit. Some people

“For the preaching of the cross is to them that

want to be pastors without paying the price. Be perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved

honest with yourself and accept the reality of

it is the **POWER OF GOD**” (1 Corinthians 1:18).

sacrifice. In the Foxe's Book of Martyrs, there The cross is the symbol of Christianity.

are several accounts of how people were killed

for their faith. They died in droves. Some were **1. THE
PREACHING OF THE CROSS IS THE**

eaten by lions. I would not like to be eaten by a
PREACHING OF SACRIFICE.

lion. I have been bitten by a lion before and it was not an easy experience. I've seen a lion

It is also the preaching of power. As Christians, having

lunch before and I certainly wouldn't like we should preach about the cross. In fact, we

to be its supper.

should have crosses. I have crosses. I have one

I keep in my room. It is the symbol of Christ, the **6. S**

symbol of Christianity and the symbol of the

OME OF THE EARLY CHRISTIANS WERE

Church! Some of us think that the fish is the

HANGED ON CROSSES.

symbol of Christianity. It is not. The cross is Some thought they were not worthy to be

that symbol.

crucified in the same way as their master Jesus. I remember meeting one of the politicians in

So they asked to be crucified upside down. "By my country. He was one of the most senior

him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise ministers of the government and was attending

to God CONTINUALLY, that is, the fruit of our
a wedding in our church. After the ceremony he
lips giving thanks to his name” (Hebrews
came to my office to meet me. As he sat down,
13:15). “I beseech you therefore, brethren, by
I noticed that he was wearing the emblem of his
the mercies of God, that you present your bodies political
party on his lapel. I was amazed at this A LIVING
SACRIFICE, holy, acceptable unto God
politician’s boldness. He was wearing his party which is
your reasonable service” (Romans
symbol even at a wedding!
12:1).
Even though his party had become unpopular,
he boldly sported this symbol. His party had led 7. **THERE
IS NOTHING LIKE A ONE-TIME**
the country into difficult times but he was not

SACRIFICE THAT YOU MAKE FOR LIFE.

ashamed of it. We must be proud of the cross of Jesus Christ. It is our symbol, and a symbol of In the days of the temple, sacrifices were made

obedience and sacrifice!

to the Lord everyday. It was part of their service and worship to God. It was a daily thing they did Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 145

PREACHING THE CROSS / 145

The Bible tells us in the verse we read, that

even though they could not speak Ghanaian

the preaching of Christ is foolishness to those

languages. One of these missionaries called

that are perishing but unto us, it is the power of Johann Riis translated the Bible into Twi, one of God. Sacrifice releases spiritual power! This

the most widely spoken dialects in Ghana. He

explains why many demonic rituals involve

also translated 6000 Twi proverbs into English.

some kind of sacrifice. Various animals and

Today, there are still Swiss people who speak

sometimes human beings are sacrificed in

fluent Twi. They are descendants of the original rituals, to
release power. Occultists make

missionaries.

sacrifices. People seeking spiritual power are

If I were to send people to certain places for

always asked to sacrifice something. The king of
missionary work, there would be an outcry.

Moab sacrificed his son when he saw that he

That is why there is no power in our ministries. was losing a
battle with the Israelites: "And

There is power only when there is sacrifice! A

when the king of Moab saw that the battle was

lot of power is released, for instance, when you too sore for
him, he took with him seven

fast. This is because a sacrifice is made when
hundred men that drew swords, to break
you fast. Fasting is sacrificing your meals.
through even unto the king of Edom: but they
When people give up something for the
could not. THEN HE TOOK HIS ELDEST SON
ministry, power is released. The early church
THAT SHOULD HAVE REIGNED IN HIS STEAD,
was so powerful. The more they were martyred,

AND OFFERED HIM FOR A BURNT OFFERING

the stronger they became.

UPON THE WALL. And there was great
indignation against Israel: and they departed

However, when the Church was accepted from him, and returned to their own land” (2 officially in Rome, it lost its power. This Kings 3:26,27).

acceptance removed the need for sacrifice and therefore weakened the Church. The power of This sacrifice turned away the approaching the Church is often increased where there is armies. Power was released by sacrificing the opposition and much need of sacrifice.

king's son. This saved the king's life and the lives of his people. Sacrifice will always release power.

POWER RELEASED THROUGH

Learn this principle—sacrifice will always

SACRIFICE

release power. The Israelites made God angry

because they sacrificed their children to idols for **1. THE POWER TO MAKE PEOPLE FOLLOW**

power: “Yea, THEY SACRIFICED THEIR SONS AND THEIR DAUGHTERS UNTO DEVILS, And

There is an aura around anyone who makes shed innocent blood, even the blood of their

great sacrifices. He is respected and held in high sons and of their daughters, whom they

esteem by people around him. People see this

sacrificed unto the idols of Canaan: and the land person doing things that they fear to touch.

was polluted with blood” (Psalm 106:37,38).

This inspires confidence and stirs up followers

to do the same. The former President of Ghana,

Jerry John Rawlings, had many followers. His

2. MANY

PASTORS

**AND
LEADERS
OF**

followers admired and loved him greatly. He

CHURCHES ARE POWERLESS BECAUSE THEY

was not followed because of his PhDs, or his

MAKE NO SACRIFICES FOR THE LORD AND

excellent family background.

HAVE NO INTENTION TO DO SO.

Paradoxically, he did not have much to boast of

in that regard. However, he seemed ready to die

Some years ago, the Church in Switzerland was

for what he believed in.

very powerful. They sent missionaries to Ghana,

/ CHAPTER 16

In May 1979, he attempted a coup d'etat, to

Particularly for the hundreds of civilians

overthrow the government of the day. The

there, Flt. Lt. J.J. Rawlings was a new face.

attempt failed and he was put on trial. But while When he was identified as the first accused, the on trial, he told the court to leave his men alone. principal architect of the mutiny, curiosity ran He said he was responsible for everything that

high.

had happened! The bold and sacrificial

"Mr. President," the prosecutor was

statements of this young man stirred up the

addressing the Court Martial, "the first accused interest and support of many people. Jerry John had for a long time felt disillusioned about the Rawlings, riding on the wave of this support,

injustices in our society, more particularly under became Ghana's head of state and dominated

the Acheampong regime; and so when in July Ghanaian politics for more than twenty years.

1978, the SMC was reconstituted with the

It is interesting to read about his trial and removal of Mr. Acheampong as head of state, what took place afterwards:

Jerry John Rawlings thought things were going

*"Mr. President, the principal architect and

to improve. When he realized that there were ringleader in the carrying out of the mutiny is

no improvements in the conditions of life, he

the first accused, Flight Lieutenant Jerry John

was struck with dismay and lamented over what

Rawlings of the Ghana Air Force Station, Accra.

he termed 'the tarnished image of the Armed

He is a young man aged about 31." That was

Forces'. He regretted that at the time that the

the voice of Director of Public Prosecutions, Mr. military government was due to hand over to a

G.E.K. Aikins at the opening of the trial in which civilian government, the military government

six persons had been charged with "Conspiracy

had done nothing to improve the image of the

to cause Mutiny" and "Mutiny with violence". A

Armed Forces."

seventh accused was facing the charge of

The ovation was spontaneous but controlled.

"Concealment of Mutiny". The date was

The president of the Court Martial was not sure

Monday, 28 May, 1979. The Burma Hall,

whether it was safe for the proceedings to

conference room of the Ghana Armed Forces,
continue. The general acclaim was that J.J.
was crowded, following a newspaper report that
Rawlings had expressed the true feelings of the
a court martial was opening that morning.
junior ranks in the armed forces—what he
There had been quite a level of anxiety not only himself
called the conscience of the Armed
in government quarters but also in the military
Forces.
and civilian sectors.

“Mr. President, My Lord Judge Advocate,
The accused persons were marched in, led
Members of the General Court Martial, briefly
confidently by Flt. Lt. J.J. Rawlings who was
these are the facts upon which these accused

known to quite a number of soldiers present. He
persons have been arraigned before you...this
wore dark glasses and was holding something
state of affairs threw the whole of Accra into a that looked
like a scroll sheet. Second accused
pandemonium during which a number of the
was Leading Aircraftman John Newton Gatsiko;
civilian population ran helter-skelter and some
third accused Leading Aircraftman Sylvanus
fat Makola women succeeded in outrunning the
Tamakloe; fourth accused Cpt. David Baba; fifth
thin ones.”
accused lanky Leading Aircraftman Albert Kwasi
The crowd greeted the conclusion of the
Gbafa; sixth accused Leading Aircraftman
Prosecutor’s statement with laughter—a timely

Daniel Dzibolosu and the seventh accused was
release of the tension that was building up.

Cpl. Ajowiak Ubald.

As the noise settled, the Judge asked the
defense counsel to show up. The team for J.J.

Rawlings was Mr. Adumoah-Bossman, but the

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 147

PREACHING THE CROSS

/ 147

rest of the accused had not been lucky. However when and
where the next meal will come from.

Mr. Adumoah-Bossman pledged that the Bar

"I am going to prove to you today it is no longer Association
would endeavor to find counsel for

a question of the military against civilians, it is the rest.

no longer a question of the Akan against the
On resumption, the accused marched back to
Ewe, the Ga against the Northerner. But a
their seats after consultation with defense
question of those who have against those who
counsel. Jerry was heard barking to the rest to have not—a
question of the vast majority of
'straighten up and march like soldiers'. Despite hungry
people against a very tiny minority of
the anxiety of the crowd, the six other accused
greedy, inhuman selfish senior officers,
persons didn't have much hope. Some seemed
politicians, businessmen and their bank
like blaming Jerry Rawlings for all this.
managers and a bunch of cowardly Lebanese
who will not stay in their country to fight for a Adjournment
was granted for the court to

cause. But who is a fool? You and I.”

resume in two days.

“You and I are the bigger fools for allowing History did not follow the full text of Jerry’s such a blatant abuse of human dignity for so draft speech mentioned by the prosecutor ever long. 22 years after independence, you and I to be read. But, in his own handwriting, as are still hitting our heads on the ground and obtained from my research, he said: leaving it all to God to save us one day. Where ‘Fellow citizens of Ghana, on earth has God come to the salvation of a people without the suffering, starving hungry Now! You listen to me well and good because people taking the law into their own hands?

I am not here to make a speech and I am not

here to waste my time talking. First and

“America has seen her own brand of

foremost, I am not here to impose myself on 10

revolution, France has seen her brand of a

million citizens of this country. But, I am telling revolution.
Britain has seen her brand of a

you today that I am here today in the history of revolution.
Russia, China, Iran, all of them. Only this country to address
myself to military senior the black man in the black African
Continent

officers, all those politicians, all those business goes on
leading his fellow black men like a herd men and foreign
criminals who have used our

of cattle while suppressing them like slaves. Let blood,
sweat and tears—the toils of our

me tell you today that God will not help you, and laboring—
to enrich themselves, to drown in

the big man will not help you because his

wine and women, while you and I, while the

stomach is full, his children's stomachs are full majority of us, are daily struggling for survival, and there is enough for them to go and come as

yes!

they like. "Only you can help yourselves."

"I know what it feels like going to bed with a

On Wednesday, 30th May, the court martial

headache for want of food in the stomach.

resumed. There was something very significant

this time. On the walls of Burma Camp, leading

"Let me give you, the struggling and

to the Burma Hall, posters were conspicuous

suffering masses, just one little warning.

and early arrivals could not miss the message.

Should anyone or group of you dare collaborate

Some were written in chalk:

or help these exploiting pigs to run—this
country will once more bleed than we

“STOP THE TRIAL OR ELSE...”

anticipate.

“IF YOU WANT TO DIE, CONTINUE THIS TRIAL”

“I am not an expert in Economics and I am

“REVOLUTION OR DEATH”

not an expert in Law but I am an expert in

working on an empty stomach while wondering

“THE STRUGGLE WILL CONTINUE”

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 148

148

/ CHAPTER 16

But in no time, the military tore all of them

to follow him. The junior ranks of the army and down, just in

time for the Court to sit. The

many civilians rallied to his support. I am not front-page banner headlines in the daily

saying that the revolution was right or wrong.

newspaper spoke of Jerry fighting against

All I am showing you is that sacrifice releases

injustices. The statement of the Director of

the power that makes people follow you. Let's

Public Prosecutions was given wide coverage,

face it: How many of the democratically elected much to the annoyance of some members of

politicians are prepared to die for what they

government. That explained the huge

believe? Some of them do not even believe in

uncontrollable crowds that milled in the hall this their own speeches. They read speeches that are

time. They cheered openly despite warnings by

written for them and make promises that are not the Court President, Col J. Enniful. The first true. I sometimes marvel at how unreal some of witness, Flt. Lt. J.B. Atiemo, confirmed that the these people are. They rarely speak first accused had declared that he was prepared extemporaneously. Tell me, am I lying? to die on behalf of the rest of the accused. The applause grew wilder.

2. THE POWER TO MAKE PEOPLE BELIEVE

The next morning, the banner headline of the Daily Graphic read: "LEAVE MY MEN ALONE! Have you ever wondered why some people are I'm responsible for everything." The fire caught so unconvincing? No one wants to hear what on. "Here was a real leader," one Corporal they have to say. Have you asked yourself why

Adjei told me later. "In the military, the junior some pastors have very few members

ranks don't like officers who are

(followers)? Many politicians claim to love their cowards...moreover, he was saying something

countries. They talk about their concern for

all of us had wanted to say a long time ago. We their countries at political rallies and news

only needed a leader and we all identified him in conferences. Unfortunately, many people do not

Flt. Lt. Rawlings. Even those who did not know

believe them. Think about Jesus. He never

him before came to love him."

wrote a book and never published an article. He never campaigned for votes or support. In fact, The third sitting of the court was on

He constantly told people not to publicize the

Thursday, 31st May. The defense counsel crossgood things He had done for them. He never examined the first

prosecution witness amidst

travelled more than two hundred miles from His

shouting and clapping in support of the stand

hometown. He never preached on TV or on

taken by Flt. Lt. Rawlings. Before the President radio. He did not build any institutions to His adjourned till Monday, 4th June to enable the

memory! His picture was never on a billboard

Attorney-General's department to find counsel

and He never owned a car.

for the other accused persons, he gave what he

called a final warning to the public gallery 'to Yet, the whole world has gone after Him. Two

desist from any further shouting and clapping'. thousand years have gone by and millions still

He added that he would not hesitate 'to stop the believe in Him. Thousands are converted to

public from listening to the rest of the

Him daily and there are volunteers who are

proceedings’.

ready to die for Him today. What is the reason

for the long-lasting effect of His ministry? The The die was cast. As the accused persons

answer is simple. The sacrifice! The sacrifice of were being marched away, some of the

His life on the cross was the most significant

members of the public waved at them, some

spiritual thing that Jesus did on earth. He

with fists raised.”

preached, He taught and He healed the sick.

When people saw that this 31 year-old man

However, the eternal fruit was borne when He

was prepared to die for a cause, it inspired many gave up His life on the cross.

PREACHING THE CROSS

/ 149

Have you ever wondered why Jesus did not when the anointing walked into the room. The stay around longer than 33 years? When He three of us suddenly knew that someone had was threatened why didn't He travel to Morocco, walked in. Everyone there could feel that He Algeria, Macedonia or Egypt? Why didn't He was standing by us. These things are real. I had preach for a few more years? Were there no never had an experience like that. We have more good works that He could do on earth? more knowledge than we can use, but no What we need to learn here, is that obedience

sacrifice. There is power ready to break forth in and sacrifice will bear more eternal fruit than

our lives the moment we make the sacrifice. You

any other good works we do. This one sacrifice will be surprised at how many people will

for humankind has released so much power into

become committed to your cause when you

the earth. This is why millions from all nations make the sacrifice.

believe and follow Him. This is why Jesus

focused on sacrificing Himself on the cross. The sacrifice on the cross was the key that would

4. THE POWER TO MAKE PEOPLE TAKE YOU

release the power of salvation. No amount of

SERIOUSLY

preaching or teaching could replace what would

be accomplished on the cross.

I once asked some pastors, "You preach the

same messages that I do, don't you?" Then I asked them, "Is the impact of your message

3. THE POWER TO INDUCE COMMITMENT

felt?" They stared at me silently. I continued, "Because you have not given up anything for

"But what things were gain to me, those I

what you believe, people do not take you

counted loss for Christ. Yea doubtless, and I

seriously. You may say the same things that I do count all things but loss for the excellency of the but if you do not pay the price, you will never

knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I

make the impact you need to."

have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ"

Many preachers are not taken seriously.

(Philippians 3:7-8). Many great men and women

Many of their statements are ignored. But have left all to follow Jesus. Kathryn Kuhlman everything changes when someone pays the had to leave her husband. Not many women price. Every situation changes in the moment would be prepared to stay unmarried.

that blood is shed. There was a time when our church was attacked. The people in the

In one of Kathryn Kuhlman's biographies, the community were hostile to us. My young men author talks about how he had asked Kathryn

wanted to fight back and kill the invaders. They about her marriage. He said they were alone in

wanted us to arm ourselves and launch countera room together when he asked about this attacks. But I knew that if someone was killed in chapter of her life. In a rare moment, she began the confrontation, the intensity and seriousness to speak about her former husband and what it

of the conflict would change forever. This is the had cost her to leave him. Suddenly, the power

reason why we did not fight back when our

of God entered the office. The writer described church was attacked.

how he could hardly stand. He said the presence of God came into the room so

Macbeth said , “Blood will have blood!”

powerfully that he had to leave. A sacrifice

Jesus said: “He that comes by the sword will go always releases power. Sometimes even talking

by the sword.” The gravity of every situation about the sacrifice releases the power.

changes as soon as a sacrifice of someone’s life is made. Where there is no sacrifice, there will I once had an uncanny experience when the

be no power. You may have many doctrines and

holy presence of God walked into my office. I

ideas, but you will have no power in your

was in conversation with two other pastors

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 150

150

/ CHAPTER 16

ministry. You should come to the Lord and ask

FOUR EXAMPLES OF OPPOSITION

Him if there is anything He wants from you.

TO SACRIFICE

You must give yourself as a living sacrifice to

Him. There can be no power without a sacrifice.

Sacrifices release the power of God in your life. **1.**

ANTIOCHUS EPIPHANIES

When there is sacrifice, there is power. This

“And out of one of them came forth a little horn, is why

Islamic suicide bombers are making such
which waxed exceeding great, toward the south,
an impact in the world today. You would think
and toward the east, and toward the pleasant
that these terrorist acts would drive people
land. And it waxed great, even to the host of
away from their religion. On the contrary, it
heaven; and it cast down some of the host and
stirs up more commitment. Sacrifice attracts
of the stars to the ground, and stamped upon
more followers. God told me that He called me
them" (Daniel 8:9,10). The Prophet Daniel
to start churches. He has asked me to send
prophesied about a little horn, which rose to
people to the corners of the world to start
defile the temple. This refers to the reign of

churches. The Lord told me that there are

Antiochus Epiphanies. He made himself an

several people who will respond to this call. He enemy of the Jews. He profaned the temple,

told me not to worry about people's lives but to entered the sanctuary, and took away the golden

sacrifice my best sons and daughters on the

altar. He stopped the daily sacrifice and set up harvest fields. I tell you, many have responded the abomination of desolation upon the altar (an and are doing great things for the Lord. God is idol), and called Solomon's temple the temple of going to make you sacrifice. He may change

Jupiter Olympius. This man, a type of Antiyour life and change everything about you. He Christ, did not want God's people to sacrifice to is going to ask you to give up certain things, and their God.

as you do, you are going to see His power.

When you speak, your words will be taken

seriously because of the sacrifices you've made. **2. THE ANTICHRIST**

“And an host was given him AGAINST THE

DAILY SACRIFICE by reason of transgression,

OPPOSITION TO SACRIFICE

and it cast down the truth to the ground; and it practiced, and prospered” (Daniel 8:12). “And

Since sacrifice releases so much power, the

arms shall stand on his part, and they shall

enemies of God have historically fought against

pollute the sanctuary of strength, AND SHALL

the concept of sacrifice. When you make a

TAKE AWAY THE DAILY SACRIFICE, and they

sacrifice to the Lord, it often looks as though you shall place the abomination that maketh

are doing something stupid. You go down in

desolate” (Daniel 11:31). Notice right here

pain but you come up in victory. Not

that, one of the things the Antichrist will do is to surprisingly,

the devil has succeeded in keeping stop the daily sacrifice. He will stop people from believers as far from sacrificing as possible. The sacrificing to God. Get this clear! The enemies Anti-Christ, Pharaoh and Satan himself, all get

of God are against you obeying God and laying involved to prevent you from having any such down your life for Him.

ideas. It is time for Christians to know that The Antichrist will prevail by peace. He will power lies just beyond the cross.

be cast in the mould of Hitler but will be even wiser. He will prosper not by war but by peace. He will win and succeed. He will come in the name of peace; talk about peace, and everybody will think that he is God. But the most

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 151

PREACHING THE CROSS

/ 151

significant thing he will do is to stop people from though we were destroying the lives of young

sacrificing to God. And his power shall be

promising couples. Parents fought against it

mighty, but not by his own power: and he shall

with all their might. Yet, these same parents

destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and

would not mind if the UN gave their children a

practise, and shall destroy the mighty and the

job in a war zone. Recently, I was praying in the holy people. And through his policy also he

presence of God. I was also expecting an

shall cause craft to prosper in his hand; and he important phone call so I had my phone on. (I

shall magnify himself in his heart, and BY
usually do not have my phone on when I am
PEACE shall destroy many: he shall also stand
praying). Then the phone rang. It was one of
up against the Prince of princes; but he shall be my lay
pastors. Immediately after speaking to
broken without hand. Daniel 8:24-25. When
him, I had a vision. I saw the same person
the spirit of Antichrist is at work, it stops you walking in a
hot desert. He was sweating
from sacrificing to God. Antichrist is anti-God profusely and
struggling in the heat of the
and anti-God is anti-sacrifice! One of the devil's shining
sun. I knew immediately that he was
goals is to stop you from sacrificing to God! The distressed
by his secular job. The Lord showed
Antichrist spirit is against your going to church, me that this
lay pastor was not where he was

giving your money, your time and your life to the supposed to be. So I called him and told him,

work of God. That voice in your life is the voice

“Pastor, you are in the wrong place. It is time to of the Antichrist. The Bible says that the

give it all up for Jesus. You are called to serve in Antichrist will come and stop the people from

the house of the Lord. You are a priest.” He

sacrificing to God. I want you to know that

responded, “Bishop, it’s true, I struggle

when God is calling on you to give up something

everyday at work. I know I am lost. I’m

or to do something for Him, the spirit of the

coming.” That was the end of his secular career. Antichrist will tell you not to do it.

Today he is fruitful in full-time ministry.

It was not easy for me to talk to this lay

Desolation in Ministry

pastor. I felt very intimidated because he had a good job that was giving him a lot of money.

“Then I heard one saint speaking, and another

Both Satan and the Anti-Christ were against my

saint said unto that certain saint which spake,

talking to this young man about full-time

How long shall be the vision concerning the

ministry. Your life will be desolate when you

daily sacrifice, and the TRANSGRESSION OF

hold back the sacrifice that you must make for

DESOLATION, to give both the sanctuary and

God! May desolation and barrenness be

the host to be trodden under foot?” (Daniel

removed from your church and ministry!

8:13). The taking away of the sacrifice is

described as the sin of desolation. Desolation

means: destitute, barren, empty, forgotten,

3. JUDAS ISCARIOT

dark, rejected and dejected. The sin of

desolation is what comes when sacrifice is taken

Remember that it was no other person than

away from the church.

Judas Iscariot who criticized the woman with

the alabaster box. This woman poured out her

We cannot build more churches if people are

expensive perfume on Jesus. It was the most

not prepared to sacrifice. People have made

valuable thing she had. Women spend hours

sacrifices for us to be Christians today. They doing their

hair. They know what their hair

made it possible for us to know the Lord. Where means to

them. A woman's hair symbolizes her

there are no sacrificial people, the church is

beauty. Mary sacrificed her beauty and her
desolate. Our church looked very odd when we
valuable things for Jesus. “Then took Mary a
sent out missionaries to Africa. It looked as
pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 152

152

/ CHAPTER 16

anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet
Jesus spoke directly to Satan, as the person who with her
hair: and the house was filled with the was preventing His
sacrifice.
odour of the ointment. Then saith one of his
We can all understand Peter’s love for Jesus.
disciples, JUDAS ISCARIOT, Simon’s son, which
In the natural, the people who love you will

should betray him, WHY WAS NOT THIS

often oppose your decision to take up your cross.

OINTMENT SOLD FOR THREE HUNDRED

Peter did not know that the devil was using him. PENCE,
AND GIVEN TO THE POOR?" (John

Our Lord Jesus exposed the devil for who he

12:3-5). It is true that this woman had been

really was. We all know the story of how Peter

living in sin. However, she gave what was most

rebuked Jesus for suggesting that He would die

precious to her—her hair, her perfume, her

on the cross. Peter did this in the name of love, tears, to
Jesus.

care, and concern for his Lord. What he did not But Judas
Iscaiot, the honourable treasurer

know was that, this love and concern was

of the team (your treasurer is usually the most

actually the voice of Satan trying to prevent

trusted person in the organization) didn't like it. Jesus from sacrificing Himself. I qualified as a Even though it wasn't his alabaster box, his life medical doctor on the 10th of March, 1989.

or his hair that were being sacrificed, he was

After working for a year, I decided to go into full against it. The appearances of people who are time ministry. Many caring relatives were

Antichrist or anti-sacrifice, can be very

against this idea. My father-in-law was so

deceptive. The anti-sacrifice, anti-give-up concerned that he offered to help me get a everything, anti-do-a-lot, anti-give-a-lot spirit posting to another medical department. He felt

is the spirit of the Antichrist. These people

I had lost interest in medicine because I had

often present themselves as being very decent,

been posted to the Pathology (dead people's)

very logical, very organized, and dignified. But Department.
My dear mother-in-law also was

it is still the spirit of the Antichrist.

deeply concerned about my situation. She
constantly spoke about it.

4. SATAN AGAINST SACRIFICE

One day, I said to her, "Please-Teacher (she
was a teacher, so all her children called her

"From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto

'Please-Teacher'), please do not talk about this his
disciples, how that he must go unto

any more. I have decided to go this way and

Jerusalem, and SUFFER MANY THINGS of the

God will keep me." From that time onwards, she

elders and chief priests and scribes, AND BE

never spoke about my decision to quit practising KILLED,

and be raised again the third day. Then medicine. You see, they were concerned about

Peter took him, and began to rebuke him,

my welfare. Wouldn't you be concerned if your

saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not daughter was married to some wild young man

be unto thee. BUT HE TURNED, AND SAID

who did not want to work any more? Of course,

UNTO PETER, GET THEE BEHIND ME, SATAN:

you would be concerned! My mother-in-law

thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest

loved me just like Peter loved Jesus. In the

not the things that be of God, but those that be natural, this is a sign of great concern.

of men" (Matthew 16:21-23). When Jesus

However, in the spirit, it is opposition to the

explained that He had to die on the cross, one of sacrifice. The enemy knew that if I sacrificed

His pastors, Pastor Peter, took Jesus aside and
this treasured and noble profession, power
began to rebuke Him. “Be it far from you.”
would be released for ministry. All I was about Pastor Peter
said. “Never! As long as we are
to do was, to take up my cross and follow Jesus. here, it will
not happen.” Jesus turned and
To take up your cross does not mean to build
addressed the person who was against His
a wooden cross and walk to Mount Calvary. It
sacrifice and said, “Get thee behind me Satan.”

means following the example of Christ Jesus. It Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 153

PREACHING THE CROSS

means sacrificing your life for Jesus. And truly, Jews sacrifice pigs in the temple. These pigs much power for ministry has been released

were the substitute for the real sacrifice. Below since I took that step. As I write this textbook, is the account of King Antiochus.

it has been only twelve years of full-time ministry. The Lord has done so much and I am grateful that He called me to this honourable

KING ANTIOCHUS AND THE PIG IN

work. Ministry is far more honourable than

THE TEMPLE

medicine. In comparison to Christ, everything else is dung.

* "King Antiochus returning out of Egypt, for fear of the Romans, made an expedition against the

city of Jerusalem; and when he was there, in the **Satan's Deception**

hundred and forty-third year of the kingdom of
Jesus came into the world to save sinners. In
the Soloucisdæ, he took the city without
the famous temptation of Christ in the
fighting, those of his own party opening the
wilderness, Satan showed Jesus the kingdoms
gates to him. And when he had gotten
of the world. He said, "I've got a plan. I know possession of
Jerusalem, he slew many of the
your goal is to save the whole world. I have a
opposite party; and when he had plundered it of
plan that will avoid pain. This plan will give the a great deal
of money, he returned to Antioch.
same results. There will be no anguish, no
Now it came to pass after two years in the
torment, and no forfeiting of anything." Satan
hundred and forty-fifth year, on the twenty-fifth continued,

“Just bow down and worship me and

day of that month which is by us called Chasleu, all these kingdoms will be yours.” But Jesus

and by the Macedonians Apelleus, in the

knew better. He said, “The sacrifice must come

hundred and fifty-third Olympiad, that the king

on! I have to suffer. I have to die! I have to pay came up to Jerusalem and pretending peace, he

the price!” Jesus was not fooled by Satan’s easy got possession of the city by treachery: at which plan. Please do not be fooled by Satan’s troubletime he spared not so much as those that free plan. There are no shortcuts or easy-jets to admitted him into it, on account of the riches

the will of God. Sometimes as pastors, we are

that lay in the temple; but led by his covetous

nervy when we call on people to make sacrifices. inclination (for he saw there was in it a great

That is the devil at work! I have learnt not to

deal of gold, and many ornaments that had been

back down. I have learnt to boldly lead people

dedicated to it of very great value), and in order into
sacrificing for the Gospel.

to plunder wealth, he ventured to break the

league he had made. So he left the temple bare, and took
away the golden candlesticks, the

SUBSTITUTE SACRIFICES

golden altar [of incense] and table [of shew

bread], and the altar [of burnt offering]; and did

“And arms shall stand on his part, and they shall not abstain
from even the veils which were

pollute the sanctuary of strength, and shall take made of
fine linen and scarlet. He also emptied away the daily
sacrifice, AND THEY SHALL

it of its secret treasure, and left nothing at all

PLACE THE ABOMINATION THAT

MAKETH

remaining; and by this means cast the Jews into
DESOLATE” (Daniel 11:31). History shows us
great lamentation, for he forbade them to offer
that there were people who opposed the offering
those daily sacrifices which they used to offer to of
sacrifices to God. Not only were they against God,
according to the law. And when he had
God’s sacrifice but they had a substitute. In
pillaged the whole city, some of the inhabitants place of
sacrificing to God, the Anti-Christ will he slew, and some he
carried away captive,
put an “abomination that maketh desolate”.
together with their wives and children, so that
This has happened before. Antiochus made the
the multitude of those captives that were taken
Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan

/ CHAPTER 16

alive amounted to about ten thousand. He also

The Principle of Ongoing Sacrifices

burnt down the finest buildings, and when he

had overthrown the city walls, he built a citadel There is an important principle here: people

in the lower part of the city, for the place was who do not sacrifice to God sacrifice to

high, and overlooked the temple on which

something else! Everybody is sacrificing

account he fortified it with high walls and

something. Everybody will sacrifice something.

towers and put into it a garrison of Macedonia.

But the question is what will be sacrificed, and to whom will this sacrifice be made? This has

However, in that citadel dwelt the impious
always been God's struggle with His people.
and wicked part of the Jewish multitude. From
The Israelites were constantly worshipping
whom it proved that the citizens suffered many
images and sacrificing to idols. They sacrificed sore
calamities. And when the king had built an even their sons
and daughters to other gods and
idol altar upon God's altar he slew swine upon it made
them pass through fire. "But he walked
and so offered a sacrifice neither according to
in the way of the kings of Israel, yea, AND MADE
the law, nor Jewish religious worship in that
HIS SON TO PASS THROUGH THE FIRE,
country. He also compelled them to forsake
according to the abominations of the heathen,
worship which they paid their own God, and to

whom the LORD cast out from before the
adore those whom he took to be gods and made
children of Israel” (2 Kings 16:3). “YEA, THEY
them build temples and raise idol altars, in

SACRIFICED THEIR SONS AND THEIR

every city and village, and offered swine upon
DAUGHTERS UNTO DEVILS, And shed innocent
them everyday. He also commanded them not
blood, even the blood of their sons and of their to
circumcise their sons, and threatened to
daughters, whom they sacrificed unto the idols
punish all that should be found to have
of Canaan: and the land was polluted with
transgressed his injunction. He also appointed

blood" (Psalm 106:37,38).

overseers, who would compel them to do what he commanded.

Today, people are not prepared for their sons and daughters to be in ministry. But these same And indeed many Jews there were who people would love their children to work in risky complied with the king's commands, either environments. In 1 Corinthians 10:20, the Bible voluntarily, or out of fear of the penalty that was declares that the sacrifices the Gentiles make, denounced; but the best men and those of the are made to devils. "But I say, that the things noblest souls, did not regard him, but did pay a WHICH THE GENTILES SACRIFICE, THEY

great respect to the customs of their country SACRIFICE TO DEVILS, and not to God: and I than concern as to the punishment which he would not that ye should have fellowship with

threatened to the disobedient; on which account
devils" (1 Corinthians 10:20). "Amon was two
they everyday underwent great miseries and
and twenty years old when he began to reign,
bitter torment; for they were whipped with rods
and reigned two years in Jerusalem. But he did
and their bodies were torn to pieces and were
that which was evil in the sight of the LORD, as crucified
while they were still alive and
did Manasseh his father: FOR AMON
breathed: they also strangled those women and

SACRIFICED UNTO ALL THE CARVED IMAGES

their sons whom they had circumcised, as the
which Manasseh his father had made, and

king had appointed, hanging their sons about
served them; And humbled not himself before
their necks as they were upon the cross. And if the LORD,
as Manasseh his father had humbled
there were any sacred book of the law found, it
himself; but Amon trespassed more and more.
was destroyed; and those with whom they were
And his servants conspired against him, and
found miserably perished also.”
slew him in his own house” (2 Chronicles
33:21-24).

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 155

PREACHING THE CROSS

/ 155

Do not deceive yourself. Sacrifices are made

gloves and finger. My patient's blood and my
all the time. If you do not do it for one cause, blood were
well and truly mixed together that
you will do it for another. Sacrifices are made night. I tell
you, I heard the voice of God
constantly. The Gentiles do make sacrifices but clearly,
"You can die of HIV in disobedience, as to the devil.
you continue to do your own thing." Doctors are
at risk all the time. I know doctors who have

**EXAMPLES OF
SUBSTITUTE**

contracted the Hepatitis B virus from their work. My pastor
in China, who is also a medical doctor, **SACRIFICES**
told us that the SARS virus started spreading

1. T
from the hospital he worked in. He told us that **HE**
SACRIFICE OF DOCTORS

the doctors and other medical staff who had

Medical doctors sacrifice very much for their
treated the SARS patients had all died. I could profession.
Medical school lasts seven years and go on to tell you
many more risks that doctors
postgraduate medical school lasts another five
take. But no one seems to mind if they die for
years. I recently asked a doctor about how many the cause
of medicine. There is a deep
years he had studied medicine. Amazingly, he
disrespect for God and the ministry. It is not
had been in medical school for more than
seen as something worth dying for. Dear friend, twenty
years. Is it not amazing! If someone had I would rather die
on the mission field than die said he was going to sacrifice
two years of his
in the hospital looking after patients. "But I say, life in a
theological school, people would say

THAT THE THINGS WHICH

THE GENTILES

that he was wasting his time. If you are in

SACRIFICE, THEY SACRIFICE TO DEVILS..." (I

university for twenty years, it means you have a Corinthians 10:20).

student's income for that long. No one seems to mind a low income for twenty years for the sake

2. THE SACRIFICE OF IMMIGRANTS

of medicine. But a low income for the sake of

ministry is not acceptable to most people.

Many people travel to far places and live as

Many people would not like to work in a

second-class citizens in foreign countries. This church because they fear they would have a low

sacrifice is okay as long as the purpose is to get income. I risked my life for medicine, now I risk money. If this were to be done for the sake of

my life for Christ. I used to sacrifice my “pig in missionary work, eyebrows would be raised. It

the temple” but now I sacrifice my life to the

seems to be acceptable to many. But not for the Lord. My life has been at risk because of the

ministry! I know people who walked across the

ministry. There was a time my life was

Sahara Desert to get to Switzerland. One man

threatened for the ministry. I almost died in a told us, “There were three of us who walked

car wreck while on a missionary journey to the

through the Sahara Desert. Two of us died and I

north of Ghana. A pastor even said to me, “I

survived.” Is it not amazing that people, who

wonder why you bother to start churches in

can walk across the Sahara Desert, cannot come

such places.” I have almost died in near plane

to church? Once in Amsterdam, I was
crashes. More than once, I almost died while
counselling a brother to come to church. He
fasting. It may seem I am involved in a very
told me, "I tried four times to come to Europe
high risk job. But what about the risks that
from Ghana. Four times I stowed away on a ship.
doctors take all the time? I remember one
Once the captain threw us overboard into
night; I was working in the accident centre of
shark-infested waters and we swam to the
Korle Bu Teaching Hospital in Accra, Ghana. I
shore." He said, "When I got to the shore, I
was suturing an accident victim when the
found out that I was in Liberia. I went back to needle slipped
and accidentally pierced my

Ghana and stowed away again. I did this four

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 156

156

/ CHAPTER 16

times until I finally succeeded in coming to

if it is for the bank. One day, one of my pastors Holland.” He
smiled proudly and declared, “I

had his mother-in-law visiting. She began to

am a Dutch citizen today.” Then I asked, “Why

complain about the time that he came home.

don’t you come to church regularly?” He

He reacted, “Mummy, please don’t complain

laughed and mumbled some lame excuse about

about my work. It is because I am in the

his work. Surprisingly, this man would not make

ministry that you even speak this way.” He

any effort to be in church but he was prepared reminded his mother-in-law, "What about your to die to be in Holland. This young man risked son who works at the bank? You know he comes his life four times to become a Dutch citizen but home much later than I do. Yet, you have no he wouldn't bother to become a citizen of complaints about that because you think his Heaven. "But I say, THAT THE THINGS WHICH work is important enough for him to stay that THE GENTILES SACRIFICE, THEY SACRIFICE long." Unfortunately, the ministry is seen as a TO DEVILS..." (1 Corinthians 10:20).

second-rate job not worth sacrificing for.

"Sacrifice to the devil but don't sacrifice to God!" This is the unspoken message of our

3. THE SACRIFICE OF PILOTS

friends and relatives. "But I say, THAT THE
Pilots and other airline crew make great
THINGS WHICH THE GENTILES SACRIFICE,
sacrifices for money. In this era of Osama Bin
THEY SACRIFICE TO DEVILS..." (I Corinthians
Laden, terrorism and numerous plane crashes,
10:20).

it is amazing that these people continue to do
the work they do. They come up with all kinds of **5. THE
SACRIFICE OF BUSINESSMEN**

statistics to show that flying is safe. No one can discount
the fear that exists today in airline

Businessmen risk their lives all the time for the travel.
sake of money. They travel up and down
constantly trying to make deals. Many
Nevertheless, there are wives who happily

businessmen come under such pressure and see their pilot-husbands off to the plane and strain that they develop high blood pressure, don't think twice about it. These same wives ulcers and other stress -related diseases. That would not allow their husbands to work in the is the price they pay for acquiring great wealth. ministry. What you must see is that the sacrifice Many businessmen lose their families in the to God has been replaced by a "pig in the quest for more money. They are hardly at home temple". When you are going on a journey for with their children. They take on the risk of the Kingdom, you will be asked, "Do you have to travel and endorse it all in the name of money. go, is it necessary?" Yet, this same sacrifice is done regularly and effortlessly by thousands in

I once heard in the news that all the top
the airline industry. “But I say, THAT THE
executives of St. Louis (a sugar manufacturing
THINGS WHICH THE GENTILES SACRIFICE,
company) had perished in a plane crash. This
THEY SACRIFICE TO DEVILS...” (1 Corinthians
immediately raised the price of sugar. Do you
10:20).

think top executives do not risk their lives?

They do, and sometimes pay a high price for it.

People are sacrificing all the time. They will

4. THE SACRIFICE OF BANKERS AND

sacrifice their God, their church and their

ACCOUNTANTS

families. They will do anything for more money. They will change their lives, they will live

These people spend many hours at work. Some

anywhere, and they will travel to obscure places of them come home after nine p.m. every night.

and make all kinds of sacrifices in order to make They hardly see their families. But this is okay some more money or achieve their life's goals.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 157

PREACHING THE CROSS

/ 157

When ministers of the Gospel give themselves

shroud for his mother's funeral. It is not

to the ministry it is always seen as frivolous and common to

see people giving a thousand pounds

unnecessary. What is more fleeting than the offering, but people will give it for the dead.

making of money and the building of houses on this earth? We in the ministry have given ourselves to the highest and most worthy

7.

THE SACRIFICE OF JOURNALISTS

calling. Take a country like Angola. They have

Reporters and journalists make sacrifices all the had a civil war for more than twenty years. Yet, time and risk their lives in war zones. Many

you will find the British, Americans, and

journalists were killed when America invaded

Europeans living there and drilling oil! In the Iraq. I watched a beautiful one-eyed lady on TV. midst of the war in the Democratic Republic of

One eye was covered with a black patch. She

Congo, a Congolese diamond mine was listed on
was a journalist who had lost her eye while
the London Stock Exchange. This means that
covering a conflict for one of the news networks. active
business was being conducted in the

As I stared at this one-eyed woman, I marvelled
midst of war. It's amazing what people will do at what
people are prepared to do for their jobs. even in the midst
of war! All kinds of British,

These journalists are honoured for their bravery Dutch and
American people are prepared to go

in covering wars. Men will honour scientists,

to these war-torn African countries and risk

doctors, beauty queens, boxers and athletes but

their lives if it is for money. They are prepared they will not
honour preachers.

to go where there is fighting and danger. They

are prepared to die for oil, for gold and for

God has however promised that when we set
diamonds. Nigeria, well known for its
our love on Him, He will honour us. I am
dangerous cities and high crime rate is home to
looking for the honour of God. "Because he hath many
white people who will sacrifice anything
set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver
for money. In search of more money, British
him: I will set him on high, because he hath
Airways shamelessly flies to Nigeria fourteen
known my name. He shall call upon me, and I
times a week. Yet, were I to ask someone to start will
answer him: I will be with him in trouble; I a church in certain
African countries, the
will deliver him, AND HONOR HIM" (Psalm
person's family would develop hysteria. There
91:14-15). Seek the honour of God and not the

would be all kinds of reasons making me out to

honour of men!

be an unreasonable and heartless leader. This is the point: People are sacrificing, but they are sacrificing to the devil! The sacrifices are being made, but they are being made to the devil. The **SACRIFICE: THE MASTER**

legitimate sacrifice to God has been replaced by **KEY TO FRUITFULNESS**

the sacrifice of a pig in the temple.

“And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.

6. THE SACRIFICE FOR THE DEAD

Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat FALL into the ground and DIE, it abideth

Many can give much more for the work of God alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much

but they won't. This money would rather be

FRUIT” (John 12:23,24). This is the missing

spent on a house, a car or even a funeral. People ingredient. This master key will take the

attend funerals every weekend in different

average Christian from barrenness to

towns and villages but they can't come to

fruitfulness.

church. I know of someone who spent as much

as one thousand pounds sterling to buy the

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 158

158

/ CHAPTER 16

Sacrifice is the key that will transform a

This is the most important truth to know. There reverend
minister from an official with a title to are many sincere
leaders who know many

a truly fruitful minister.

things. They have heard much and think they are high up in God.

1. R

Knowledge unfortunately breeds pride:

EADINESS TO DIE

“...knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth”

The missing ingredient in some good churches

(1 Corinthians 8:1b).

is this—a readiness to die. Many of our

The Kingdom is more than a school of history

churches are going to be small until we have

and doctrines. It is more than acquiring

people ready to sacrifice. There comes a time

numerous certificates of Bible knowledge.

when what is needed is sacrifice. A lot of people

Knowledge without this process will yield

have reached the borderline. Many Christians
nothing. Have you noticed that some of the
can do more but they don't. It's because they
most learned and scholarly Bible expositors are
don't want to sacrifice or give up anything.
very ineffective at real ministry? In fact,
sometimes, the more scholarly they become the

2. K

more faithless and godless they are. A single

NOWLEDGE WITHOUT SACRIFICE

seed will become a big tree with many fruits if it
people do not lack information or
falls into the ground and dies.

knowledge. They know a lot! If you have read
my books, you will know a lot of what I know.
However, knowledge is not enough! You may

not have the fruits that I have even if you have the knowledge that I have. For you to have what I have, you must pay the price. There is a price for everyone to pay. The price of glory is the

same for everyone! This Scripture says that

unless a corn of wheat disappears into the

ground and dies, it will be alone. The “corn of

wheat” symbolizes the man of God. To be

“alone” means “to be fruitless”. It means to be without members or followers. The dying

process in the man of God will eventually bring

out much fruit.

Jesus would not have borne the fruit He did if

He had not died on the cross. He would have

been alone in Heaven with His Father. He could

not have saved us if He had not died and gone

to Hell for us. To win followers for Himself and His Father, He had to fall into the ground and

die. The corn of wheat has to fall into the ground and die. When the seed falls into the ground, it disintegrates and decomposes. This is what we

call “dying”. The seed actually goes through a process before it comes out as fruit. That can only take place when it disappears and dies.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 159

Sacrifice and the Anointing

17

1. CHRIST HIMSELF EXPOUNDED THE THINGS THE AUTHENTICITY OF IN THE OLD TESTAMENT SCRIPTURES THE OLD TESTAMENT CONCERNING HIMSELF IN THE LAW, THE PSALMS, AND THE PROPHETS.

In the Bible times, you could not even think of

worshipping God without making a sacrifice.

“Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, You simply had not worshipped God until a

and to enter into his glory? And beginning at

sacrifice was made. Poor people sacrificed little Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto

birds like pigeons and turtledoves. They could

them in all the scriptures the things concerning not afford to bring sheep, goats and cows. You

himself. And he said unto them, These are the

were required to sacrifice whatever you had.

words which I spake unto you, while I was yet

But there had to be some sacrifice! Can we say

with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which we worship God, if we present no sacrifice?

were written in the law of Moses, and in the

prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me.

You may say, “Christ has sacrificed for us. No

Then opened he their understanding, that they further sacrifices are needed.” No one is asking might understand the scriptures” (Luke you to die on the cross again! Nevertheless, 24:26,27,44,45).

Jesus told us to take up our crosses and follow Him, didn't He? This means that even though Christ has made the ultimate sacrifice, we are

2. THE THINGS THAT WERE WRITTEN

still to follow His example of self-sacrifice.

AFORETIME IN THE OLD TESTAMENT

There are lessons to be learnt from the Old

SCRIPTURES WERE WRITTEN FOR OUR

Testament system of sacrifices. The Old

LEARNING, THAT WE THROUGH PATIENCE

Testament is a treasure house of teaching for

AND COMFORT OF THE SCRIPTURES MIGHT

New Testament Christians.

HAVE HOPE.

The Relevance of the Old Testament

“For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through Anyone who doubts that the Old Testament is patience and comfort of the scriptures might very relevant today should just read on. The have hope” (Romans 15:4).

following are a number of reasons why Old Testament Scriptures are useful today.

159

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 160

160

3. JESUS HIMSELF CAME TO FULFIL THE LAW

they also lusted. Now all these things happened

AND THE PROPHETS.

unto them for ensamples: and they are written

for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the

“Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or world are come” (1 Corinthians 10:6,11).

the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to

fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise

7. THE WRITER OF THE BOOK OF HEBREWS

pass from the law, till all be fulfilled” (Matthew **SAID, “IN THE VOLUME OF THE BOOK IT IS**

5:17,18).

WRITTEN OF ME,” THAT IS, OF CHRIST.

“Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the

4. JESUS SAID THAT THE LAW AND THE

book it is written of me,) to do thy will, O God”

PROPHETS PROPHESED.

(Hebrews 10:7). “Sacrifice and offering thou

didst not desire; mine ears hast thou opened:

“For all the prophets and the law prophesied

burnt offering and sin offering hast thou not

until John” (Matthew 11:13).

required. Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me, I delight to do thy **5. T**

will, O my God: yea, thy law is within my heart”

HE OLD TESTAMENT PROPHETS SPOKE OF

(Psalm 40:6-8).

THE SUFFERINGS OF CHRIST AND THE

GLORY THAT SHOULD FOLLOW.

8. THE SCRIPTURE SPEAKS OF, “FIRST THE

It was revealed to them that their utterances did **NATURAL
AND AFTERWARDS THAT WHICH IS**

not just concern their own generation but

SPIRITUAL”, AND THIS IS A PRINCIPLE

another. “Of which salvation the prophets have

WHICH MAY WELL BE APPLIED IN THIS

inquired and searched diligently, who

prophesied of the grace that should come unto

STUDY.

you: Searching what, or what manner of time

“Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual,

the Spirit of Christ which was in them did

but that which is natural; and afterward that

signify, when it testified beforehand the

which is spiritual. The first man is of the earth, sufferings of
Christ, and the glory that should

earthly: the second man is the Lord from

follow. Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto heaven” (1 Corinthians 15:46,47). All these themselves, but unto us they did minister the points I have enumerated show us that the Old things, which are now reported unto you by Testament can and must be used as sound them that have preached the gospel unto you teaching material. We cannot afford to ignore with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; the revelation that is contained in the Old which things the angels desire to look into” (1 Testament. Peter 1:10-12).

GETTING CLOSE TO THE

6. THE THINGS, WHICH HAPPENED IN OLD

ANOINTING BY SACRIFICE

TESTAMENT HISTORY IN ISRAEL, WERE FOR TYPES AND EXAMPLES AND THESE THINGS

A study of the tabernacle of Moses reveals that

ARE WRITTEN FOR OUR ADMONITION UPON

there was always the pain of sacrifice before the **WHOM
THE ENDS OF THE AGES ARE COME.**

priest could approach the holy presence of God.

The sacrifice had to be made at the door of the

“Now these things were our examples, to the

tabernacle. This position of the altar of sacrifice intent we
should not lust after evil things, as

(at the door) signifies that there is the need to Dag Heward-
Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 161

SACRIFICE AND THE ANOINTING / 161

first offer a sacrifice if you want to go deeper into the things
of God. The Holy of Holies, the place of anointing, was the
innermost room in

the tabernacle. Without walking through the place of sacrifice, you could not come to this place of anointing. How close do you want to be to the innermost room? How near do you want to be to the anointing? This is an important lesson to all of us.

I do not know of any great man of God who climbed to great heights in ministry without paying the high price of sacrifice. Many people know the Scriptures and the doctrines, but are not prepared to pay the price of ministry.

“Therefore, they remain powerless and emptyhanded in the face of a lost and dying world. And THOU SHALT KILL THE BULLOCK BEFORE

THE LORD, BY THE DOOR of the tabernacle of the congregation” (Exodus 29:11).

The wave offerings and the heave offerings were needed to bring you closer to God. This is why we

need to bring sacrifices to the house of

the Lord. As we make sacrifices, we get nearer and nearer to the inner room (place of

anointing). We are brought near to the

anointing by the blood. It is the blood and the sacrifice that enables us to come near to the

anointing! "But now in Christ Jesus ye who

sometimes were far off ARE MADE NIGH BY

THE BLOOD (sacrifice) of Christ" (Ephesians 2:13).

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 162

The Christian Leader and Sacrifice

18

THE ELIMINATION OF ENEMIES

you are being led into your own destruction. It **BY SACRIFICE**

is like walking into almost certain death.

Walking through the Red Sea is an action in

Pharaoh is a biblical model or type of Satan.

which you rely on God's grace. When you walk

This is because he keeps the people of God in

through the Red Sea, you do not depend on

bondage and refuses to let them go. Pharaoh

money, friends, family, or natural forms of

struggled with the children of Israel until they assistance

finally got out of Egypt and were on their way to the

Promised Land. Even then he did not give

3. W

up. He was bent on recapturing the Israelites.

ALKING THROUGH THE RED SEA IS A

POWERFUL TOOL THAT GOD USES TO

ELIMINATE ENEMIES.

1. SATAN WILL DO ALMOST ANYTHING TO KEEP YOU IN BONDAGE.

Satan can chase you and harass you. But there are certain places he cannot go to. The devil is He chased the people of God until the Lord not all-knowing and all-powerful. To escape eliminated the Egyptians finally and from Pharaoh and his agents you need to go permanently. The Lord stopped Pharaoh and his where he cannot follow. When you sacrifice to influence on the children of Israel. How will the Lord, you go through the Red Sea. This is Pharaoh finally be eliminated from your life? because you walk through a dying and a losing What will break satanic strongholds in your life? process.

All you have to do is to follow the example of the When you walk through the Red Sea, you

Israelites and you will be free forever. This

sacrifice your future and place yourself in the

chapter talks about the elimination of Satan and hands of God. I am sure you know that it is not his demonic chains from your life and ministry.

a normal thing to walk through the seabed with

a wall of water to your right and a wall of water 2.

“WALKING THROUGH THE RED SEA”

to your left. What if you get stuck in the middle?

SIGNIFIES WALKING AWAY FROM SAFETY

What if the water comes tumbling down?

“Speak unto the children of Israel, that they turn **INTO**

A REALM WHERE YOU CAN ONLY

and encamp before Pi-hahiroth, between Migdol

TRUST GOD.

and the sea, over against Baal-zephon: before it In the New Testament, walking through the

shall ye encamp by the sea. For Pharaoh will say Red Sea stands for the dying process.

of the children of Israel, They are entangled in Sometimes, walking by faith appears as though

the land, the wilderness hath shut them in. And I will harden Pharaoh's heart, THAT HE SHALL

162

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 163

THE CHRISTIAN LEADER AND SACRIFICE / 163

FOLLOW AFTER THEM; and I will be honoured

Israelites only when they entered into the Red

upon Pharaoh, and upon all his host; that the

Sea. When we're not afraid to sacrifice ourselves Egyptians may know that I am the LORD. And

and walk into the Red Sea;

they did so" (Exodus 14:2-4).

Pharaoh's (Satan's) aim is to keep you from

5. WHEN WE ALLOW OURSELVES TO DIE IN

Christ. Pharaoh failed in his attempt to keep the **CHRIST,**
OUR ENEMIES PERISH BEHIND US!

people from knowing their God. However,

Pharaoh does not give up easily. He says,

If the Israelites had stayed out because of fear,

“Chase him, and track him down. Prevent him

Pharaoh would have recaptured them. They

from going too far.” The devil aims at keeping

would have been killed in the desert. Many

you from the ministry. Have you wondered why

people die of the things they fear. The things

you have undergone such a struggle since you

that many of us are afraid of eventually happen. decided to
serve the Lord? It is because

Death in the Red Sea is better than being killed Pharaoh is chasing hard on your heels.

in the desert.

I have observed people who have shied away

4. GOING THROUGH THE RED SEA IS A

from full-time ministry. Mostly, people stay

SYMBOLIC BAPTISM.

away from the ministry because of the fear of

poverty and ridicule. They fear that they will

Paul teaches us that going through the sea was

perish in the Red Sea.

a baptism for the children of Israel. It was a

I have watched these same people stand at

symbolic baptism. They entered into the depths

the shore of the Red Sea and discuss how they

of the sea and came out again. “Moreover,

intend to eventually, one day, go through this

brethren, I would not that ye should be

sea. They say things like, "Oh, that is my

ignorant, how that all our fathers were under

ultimate goal. As for full-time ministry, I know the cloud,
AND ALL PASSED THROUGH THE

that I will by all means do it." They carry on, SEA; AND
WERE ALL BAPTIZED UNTO MOSES

"By all means, I will get to that point. I know in IN THE
CLOUD AND IN THE SEA" (1

my heart that is what I want to do one day."

Corinthians 10:1,2).

They explain, "We all get to that point at

You can compare this to what the Bible says

different times." Then I have watched Pharaoh

elsewhere: "Know ye not, that so many of us as

descend upon these people. Suddenly, their

were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized

lives become one long battle as they try to ward into his death? Therefore we are buried with

off Pharaoh and the world's system. Soon these

him BY BAPTISM INTO DEATH: that like as

people who were just about to go through the

Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory

Red Sea don't have time to even go to church.

of the Father, even so we also should walk in

They are fully entangled with Satan and the

newness of life" (Romans 6:3,4). By baptism,

world's system. As the battle continues at the

we are symbolically buried with Jesus. Baptism shores of the Red Sea, negotiations with

is therefore a symbol of sacrifice and death.

Pharaoh start. Soon, a compromise is reached,

When you walk through the Red Sea you

so that an individual is never to consider going eliminate Pharaoh and his agents. When you

through the Red Sea. I have watched this

die to yourself, your desires, your needs and

happen many times. Today, I know people who

your wants, you eliminate Pharaoh and all other

would have been fruitful ministers of God if they enemies. This is how the children of Israel got had made the sacrifice much earlier. Are you

rid of their enemies: by sacrificing their lives in stuck on the shores of the Red Sea? When you

the Red Sea. God began to fight for the

give your precious life to God, you walk through Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 164

164

/ CHAPTER 18

the Red Sea. When you give your future to God,

Pharaoh hatched up a plan to kill Freaky Freda

you walk through the Red Sea.

with HIV. Pharaoh knew that Freaky Freda could not resist Dirty Daniel. One night, Satan

The enemy stands at the shores of the sea

ensured that Dirty Daniel was fully loaded with

and says, "I can't believe he's going in!! I can't HIV from his other girlfriend, Slippery Susie.

believe he's giving up his life. I tried to frighten Pharaoh smiled confidently as he charged Dirty

him about the dangers of the Red Sea ministry."

Daniel to infect and destroy Freaky Freda for her The devil knows that he can't follow you through unfaithfulness to him.

your sacrifice. Satan remembers how he

perished when he tried to follow Moses. He

Dirty Daniel called Freaky Freda, "Hi baby, I

laments: "I can't believe it! I've had this

miss you baby.” He continued, “Where have
experience before! I remember what happened
you been? I’ve been calling your number all
to me at the Red Sea and I do not want to go into weekend.
The answer was always the same,
the sea again.” (The devil will lose his control
‘The mobile number you have dialled is either
over you when you give up everything for God).
switched off or out of coverage area.’
It is true. He will lose his control. The devil does
“Oh, I was at a camp meeting,” she answered.
not lose his control because of the message you
heard. He does not go away after we anoint you
“Camp meeting,” he retorted. “What on
with oil, and pray for you.
earth is that?”

"It is a meeting for Christian leaders in my

6. AS LONG AS YOU REFUSE TO DIE AND GIVE

new church," she informed him.

UP WHAT YOU'RE SUPPOSED TO GIVE UP,

"Oh, I see. Anyway, I miss you. Do you miss

THE WORLD'S SYSTEM WILL DOMINATE

me? Can I come to your place tonight?"

YOU.

"Yes, I've wanted to see you myself. There is

Until you go through the Red Sea, the world still something I need to tell you," she answered.

has control. As long as you stand there and

"I'll be home early."

refuse to enter, Pharaoh has access to you!

Pharaoh and his legions began rejoicing in

advance. "The plan is working; we will end this A beautiful young lady became born again.

rebellion.”

She had had several boyfriends in the past.

Slappy Jay, Ricky Zee, Kweku Killer, Big Bobo

But that night, Dirty Daniel had the shock of

were all part of the squadron. Zee! Her current his life.

and steady lover whom she was planning to

Freaky Freda said, “No! I am sorry I cannot

marry was none other than the swanky toecontinue this relationship with you.”

tapping, cool-rapping Dirty Daniel, a favourite

with the ladies.

“Don’t you love me?” he asked. “Don’t you

want to marry me?”

However, one day, she attended a breakfast

meeting and gave her life to Christ. To say the She told him tearfully, “It’s not been easy for

least, Pharaoh was very angry at the loss of one me, I've been crying all day. But I have decided of his slaves. For a few months, Pharaoh thought to sacrifice this relationship so that I can serve this young lady would return to Egypt. But her

the Lord.”

commitment to the things of God grew. At an

In the moment that Freaky Freda sacrificed

emergency session, Pharaoh decided to get her

her relationship with Dirty Daniel, she walked

back at all costs or to kill her.

through the Red Sea and went out of the reach

of Pharaoh. Pharaoh and legions stood by the

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 165

THE CHRISTIAN LEADER AND SACRIFICE / 165

shore in shock. They said, “We can’t believe

Those who therefore cannot be Christians are

she's going in!! We can't believe she's doing it!

those who are not prepared to deny themselves.

We are losing control over Freaky Freda." The

Where are crosses usually taken to? To

devil knows that he can't follow you through

restaurants, parties, or weddings? No sir!

your sacrifice. As you sacrifice your profession Crosses are carried to the place of execution and for the Lord, Satan loses his influence over your suffering. This Scripture has only one meaning: life.

it means that we must follow the example of

Jesus Christ and lay down our lives in obedience to Him.

Are you obeying the Lord? I got to know **PERSONAL SACRIFICES OF**

the Lord at about the age of fifteen. I have

constantly had to take up my cross, deny myself

A CHRISTIAN LEADER

and follow the Lord. Without doing this, my

Christianity would always have been a phantom

“Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, WE
of what true Christianity is supposed to be.

HAVE LEFT ALL, and have followed thee” (Mark

Dear friend, Christianity then and now is not
10:28). We see again the disciples having to
easy.

sacrifice to follow Jesus. They left all! They left their
professions, families and familiar friends to follow Jesus. It
was a sacrifice. You cannot

1. MUSIC AND SELF-DENIAL

follow Jesus unless you are ready to sacrifice

During my early years as a Christian, I learned
something.

to say “no” to things which ordinary people said Your
ministry is limited by what you keep. If

“yes” to. One of the first things I had to deny you carry
certain things while you run, you will myself of was non-

Christian music. I used to
not run fast enough. God is expecting us to
love music by Lionel Richie, Michael Jackson,
leave things behind on the altar and follow Him. the Bee
Gees and ABBA. The key verse that
We may have to leave our sleep, friendships,
guided me in those days was 1 Corinthians
televisions, careers and jobs to follow Jesus.

10:23: "All things are lawful but not all things There are
pastors in large populated areas

are helpful." "All things are lawful for me, but whose
ministries do not grow because they are

all things are not expedient: all things are lawful not
prepared to lay down their lives.

for me, but all things edify not.' (1 Corinthians 10:23).

"Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man
will come after me, LET HIM DENY HIMSELF,

I really loved and still do love music, but

and take up his cross, and follow me” (Matthew

there was no way I was going to continue my

16:24). “And HE THAT TAKETH NOT HIS

walk with Christ and listen to that kind of music. CROSS,
and followeth after me, is not worthy of

Although nice to the ear, it is not spiritually

me” (Matthew 10:38).

helpful.

The phrase “if any man” defines those who must

There are many Christians who don’t do well

take up the cross. Self-denial is one of the basic because
they are not prepared to deny

truths of the Gospel. I do not know of any

themselves of certain worldly things.

stronger statement that our Lord made. In this

Scripture, He defines those who cannot be His

disciples. This act of taking up your cross,

2. ENTERTAINMENT AND SELF-SENIAL

clearly draws a line between those who qualify

There were places I used to go to that I had to
and those who do not.

stop going to if I was to continue with the Lord. Dear friend,
you cannot go to the same old

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 166

166

/ CHAPTER 18

places. Except you deny yourself, you cannot be **5.**
BUSINESSES AND SELF-DENIAL

a Christian. I used to go a-gambling at the
racecourse every Saturday. I was an avid horse
You see, except you deny yourself, you cannot
lover and a regular patron of the racecourse.

be a disciple of Christ. I remember another

When I got saved, I had to deny myself the
church member, who owned a restaurant in a
pleasure and foolishness of gambling.

hotel. One day, in a move to expand the
business, the hotel granted him use of a
nightclub facility. When I visited the premises, 3.

ASSOCIATIONS AND SELF-DENIAL

I wondered to myself, "What in the world is a
Christian going to do with such a space?" He
Even as I write this textbook, I realize how

said, "Oh, they will just play music in the
essential it is for Christians to deny themselves evenings."
This "music in the evenings"

of many things if they want to serve the Lord. I degenerated
into a nightclub environment with

had a set of friends before I got saved. When I

half-dressed girls singing every night.

got saved, I realized that these unbelieving friends would not be helpful.

I thought to myself, "How long will this

Christian brother be able to stay in the faith?"

To cut a long story short, the last I heard of him, **4. JOBS AND SELF-DENIAL**

he was out of the church and fully established in the world. He had fallen into any kind of dark

There are times you have to give up certain jobs sin that you can think of. I also heard that he in order to serve the Lord. I remember a

was in a mental hospital. There are times you

brother whom I led to the Lord. I saw him saying will have to sacrifice your job so that you can

the sinner's prayer. A few days later, I prayed follow Christ. Not all jobs are from the Lord.

for him to receive the Holy Spirit baptism. I

Every good and perfect gift comes from the personally laid hands on him and watched him Lord.

receive the Holy Ghost baptism and saw him speak in tongues. I also counselled him about his lifestyle. I told him, "You have to change

6. AUDIO-VISUALS AND SELF-DENIAL

your lifestyle. You have to say "no" to the old things, old people and old places of your life."

The films I used to watch, I could watch them no One day, I noticed that this brother had stopped more. That was not easy for me because I really

coming to church regularly. I asked him, "What enjoyed watching films. It is not everything we is happening?" He told me, "I have a new job at watch that pleases the Lord. I would go to such and such hotel." He continued, "We work

different cinema houses in my city and have a
in the night and at weekends.” Then I probed
good time watching all kinds of films. One day, further,
“What exactly do you do at this hotel?”

I was watching a Chinese film at Orion Cinema

He mumbled some feeble answer, and I could
in Accra, Ghana. I thought it was a safe film.

tell immediately that it was not a decent job.

Suddenly, the hero of the film developed a fever. Night after
night, he worked amongst smoking,

As he lay shivering under his blanket, it was
drinking and rollicking men and women of sin,
decided that the only thing that could cure his
as they danced their lives away on the floor of
fever and keep him warm was a group of naked
the nightclub. This was no atmosphere for a
girls. This film had suddenly changed in its

good Christian. It was only a matter of time,
character. That was a turning point for me. I
before my friend completely backslid. The next
decided to deny myself of this as well.
time I saw him, he was deep in the world and
These things may seem trivial to you, but it is
high on drugs.

the failure to deny yourself these very things
that prevents us from walking with God. As I

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 167

THE CHRISTIAN LEADER AND SACRIFICE / 167

walked with the Lord, I continually had to deny
One night, I was standing by the Pacific
myself of many other things. One of the things
Ocean in a foreign country. In front of me were

I had to deny myself of was useless socializing. several large expensive yachts belonging to

I also learnt how to deny myself of food so that millionaires. I turned to the Christians who

I could fast. As you can see, little by little, and were walking with me and said, "I would like to

step by step, you take up your cross, deny

have my yacht in Heaven." One of them

yourself and follow Jesus.

laughed at me and said, "Oh no, I want to have

mine here." This little conversation reflects two **7. T**

schools of thought in Christendom today. Most

HE SACRIFICE OF TIME

Christians want to have their comforts here,

This is the most important sacrifice of a pastor. while a few want them in Heaven. I do not drive Without sacrificing time to be with the Lord,

the car that I would really like to drive. In fact, there will be

no real fruit. Many ministers have I have never driven the car I really prefer. I also time for everything else but the Lord. There is know the nicest and best cars but I do what I do time for TV, socializing, computers, business for the sake of the ministry. "But I have used and sports but there is no time for personal none of these things: neither have I written fellowship with the Lord. The ministry is a these things, that it should be so done unto me: reflection of a man's personal time with the Lord. for it were better for me to die, than that any man should make my glorying void" (1 Corinthians 9:15).

8. THE SACRIFICE OF MONEY

I do not live in the best house or in the best Many pastors do not know that they have to give area of my city. I do know where these "best their money to the ministry. I believe that every areas" and "best houses" are. I do know that

minister must invest personally into the

there are many better places than where I live.

ministry. Of course, you cannot do that if your I am also aware that my church can afford to

money is not distinct from the church's money.

provide these things for me. But I am content

It is important that your personal possessions

with what the Lord has given me. In fact, I think are distinct from the property of the church. If I am super blessed. I do not intend to join the this distinction is not clear, you lose the blessing struggle to impress people about what I have

of giving. You have nothing to give because all and where I live. I hope to have the best

you have is church property. And how can you

mansions in Heaven and not here on Earth.

give the church what belongs to it?

10. SACRIFICING THE FAMILY

9. THE SACRIFICE OF COMFORTS

Your family will make many sacrifices because of There are many things in the ministry, which

the ministry. You will have to give up time and may take away your comforts. If you are not

pleasure with your family so that you can do the prepared to sacrifice the little things of life, you work. In Luke 14, the young man refused to

may never amount to much in the ministry.

attend the dinner because he had “married a

Insisting on certain comforts on this earth can

wife”. “And another said, I have married a wife, easily be the reason for your inability to

and therefore I cannot come” (Luke 14:20).

progress in the ministry. You should “set your

affection on things above, not on things on the

Many people do not fulfil God’s will because

earth” (Colossians 3:2). When your heart is set they try to please their wives. The Bible teaches on things above, you

will not be so fussy about

us to love our wives. But the Bible teaches us to things on this earth.

love God first. "If any man come to me, and

hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 168

168

/ CHAPTER 18

children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his Of course, I decided I would not set foot in

own life also, he cannot be my disciple" (Luke

Colombia. However, as I flew down to another

14:26). Jesus talks about hating your mother,

country in South America, I had a dream in

your father, your wife, your children, your

which the Lord spoke to me. He rebuked me

brethren, your sisters and even your own life in sharply and told me that He was ashamed of me

order to be a disciple. If you have to do that to because I was trying to preserve myself. He

qualify as a disciple, how much more would you

reminded me that if He removed His protection

have to do that as a Christian leader?

from me for just five minutes, I would perish

instantly. When I woke up, I was frightened and decided to go to Colombia. I needed no further

11.

SACRIFICING SAFETY AND SECURITY

coaxing to take me to Colombia. Dear friend,

Jesus sacrificed the safety of Heaven to dwell

I cannot begin to describe the extent of the

amongst a group of perverted, depraved and

power of God that was present in those

wicked people. We must follow His example if

meetings in Colombia. I saw the greatest

we are to bear fruit. Walking with the Lord will miracles in my life, including the raising of the dead you into many dangers, toils and snares.

dead.

Every journey you make will put you at risk. If your self-preservation is more important than

obeying God, you are not likely to sacrifice your safety and security.

Being in full-time ministry means you must

sacrifice your security. It is much more secure to work for Barclays Bank than it is to work for a

Pentecostal church led by a twenty-eight-yearold pastor. I was once invited to Colombia to minister. I was uncertain as to whether I should go or not. I called a pastor in America to ask

whether he knew if Colombia was a safe place to

go to. He told me he would find out and call me

back. He called me a couple of days later and said, "Brother, it is a very dangerous place. I don't think you should venture there." He continued, "I talked to a Catholic nun who told me to advice you not to step in Colombia. She told me of a Catholic bishop who had been shot in cold blood while serving mass." "Are you serious!" I exclaimed. "Yes," he replied. "It is very dangerous." Then, I had some further information. I was told about another pastor who had been shot while getting into his car after church. It became clear to me that pastors were a target in Colombia. I also remembered a renowned pastor who had almost died in a drive-by shooting incident in Bogotá.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 169

Sacrifice and the Glory

seen without. And there it is unto this day.

SACRIFICE BRINGS THE

There was nothing in the ark save the two tables **GLORY**

which Moses put therein at Horeb, when the

LORD made a covenant with the children of

“Thus all the work that Solomon made for the

Israel, when they came out of Egypt. And it

house of the LORD was finished: and Solomon

came to pass, when the priests were come out of

brought in all the things that David his father

the holy place: (for all the priests that were

had dedicated; and the silver, and the gold, and present
were sanctified, and did not then wait

all the instruments, put he among the treasures

by course: Also the Levites which were the

of the house of God Then Solomon assembled
singers, all of them of Asaph, of Heman, of
the elders of Israel, and all the heads of the
Jeduthun, with their sons and their brethren,
tribes, the chief of the fathers of the children of being
arrayed in white linen, having cymbals
Israel, unto Jerusalem, to bring up the ark of the and
psalteries and harps, stood at the east end
covenant of the LORD out of the city of David,
of the altar, and with them an hundred and
which is Zion. Wherefore all the men of Israel
twenty priests sounding with trumpets:) It came
assembled themselves unto the king in the feast
even to pass, as the trumpeters and singers
which was in the seventh month. And all the
were as one, to make one sound to be heard in

elders of Israel came; and the Levites took up
praising and thanking the LORD; and when they
the ark. And they brought up the ark, and the
lifted up their voice with the trumpets and
tabernacle of the congregation, and all the holy cymbals
and instruments of musick, and praised
vessels that were in the tabernacle, these did
the LORD, saying, For he is good; for his mercy
the priests and the Levites bring up. Also king
endureth for ever: that then the house was filled Solomon,
and all the congregation of Israel that with a cloud, even the
house of the LORD; So
were assembled unto him before the ark,
that the priests could not stand to minister by
sacrificed sheep and oxen, which could not be
reason of the cloud: for the glory of the LORD
told nor numbered for multitude. And the

had filled the house of God”(2 Chronicles 5:1priests brought in the ark of the covenant of the 14).

LORD unto his place, to the oracle of the house, And the breasts and the right shoulder Aaron

into the most holy place, even under the wings

waved for a wave offering before the LORD; as

of the cherubims: For the cherubims spread

Moses commanded. And Aaron lifted up his

forth their wings over the place of the ark, and hand toward the people, and blessed them, and

the cherubims covered the ark and the staves

came down from offering of the sin offering, and thereof above. And they drew out the staves of

the burnt offering, and peace offerings. And

the ark, that the ends of the staves were seen

Moses and Aaron went into the tabernacle of the

from the ark before the oracle; but they were not 169

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan

/ CHAPTER 19

congregation, and came out, and blessed the ark of God. So David went and brought up the people: and the glory of the LORD appeared ark of God from the house of Obed-edom into unto all the people. And there came a fire out the city of David with gladness. And it was so, from before the LORD, and consumed upon the that when they that bare the ark of the LORD altar the burnt offering and the fat: which when had gone six paces, he sacrificed oxen and all the people saw, they shouted, and fell on fatlings" (2 Samuel 6:12,13). This story shows their faces" (Leviticus 9:21-24).

us how King David made innumerable sacrifices

as he brought in the ark of God. The ark of God As you can see in these accounts, when they represents the anointing. The ark represents offered sacrifice, the glory of God filled the the glory of God. After every six steps, they temple. Do you want to see the glory of God in would sacrifice oxen and fatling. Can you your life? Then do not shy away from the imagine how many sacrifices they must have sacrifice that God has placed before you. A made from Obed-edom's house to the City of minister who has the glory of God on his life has David? This journey of faith symbolizes the often paid the price of sacrifice. amount of sacrifice required to bring in the glory.

THE PRICE OF GLORY

1. GOD IS MOVED BY SACRIFICE.

THE FIGHT

BETWEEN SELF-

PRESERVATION AND SACRIFICE

I have noticed that there is no successful minister who does not have a story of suffering

“Therefore doth my Father love me, because I

and difficulties. Recently, a visiting minister, lay down my life, that I might take it again. No whose ministry I knew little about, came to

man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of

speak in our church. As he shared his life

myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have

testimony, I marvelled at how this principle is

power to take it again. This commandment have

played out in everyone's life.

I received of my Father” (John 10:17,18). Jesus He had been through many things. He had
was clever; He knew it was a matter of time
gone hungry on many occasions; he had
before the Pharisees would kill Him. He knew
encouraged his wife on several occasions. He
that it was just a matter of time before He would had been
without money and food many times.
be eliminated. The build up of hatred was
This man is now a very successful minister in
obvious to all. Instead of waiting for this to
the country where he lives. The story is the
happen, He gave up Himself to be crucified.
same everywhere. There is a sacrifice behind
the glory of God!

1. THERE IS A GREAT DIFFERENCE BETWEEN

Solomon made many sacrifices to the Lord.

GIVING UP SOMETHING AND HAVING IT

Suddenly, the glory filled the temple and no one **TAKEN FROM YOU.**

could stand to minister. God was moved by the sacrifice. God is still moved by your sacrifice. In both cases, you end up losing the thing. To give something is a blessing but to lose

something is a curse. I have watched as people

2. MANY SACRIFICES ARE REQUIRED TO

tried to preserve themselves and their families

BRING IN THE GLORY.

but ended up losing them. Many have also tried

to prevent financial loss as they avoided going

“And it was told king David, saying, The

into full-time ministry. Somehow, they lost

LORD hath blessed the house of Obed-edom,

what they were trying to keep. I remember one

and all that pertaineth unto him, because of the lady who was trying to prevent the loss of her

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 171

SACRIFICE AND THE GLORY / 171

husband by keeping him away from the church.

my car for long periods and promise to pay later. Anytime church members came to see her

This suited me fine until the payments stopped

husband for some help, she would shoo them

coming. After one or two months of waiting, I

away. Her nasty and unwelcoming behaviour

decided to go fetch my car. I eventually got the was a clear indication to the visitors that they car but my customer would not pay up and kept

were not wanted. Gradually, she warded away

telling me stories. I made several trips to a

the church members until her vision of securing

suburb of Accra trying to get this man to pay.

her husband to herself was accomplished.

One night, the Lord told me that I was never

However, after sometime, her husband began to

going to get my money. He asked me to give the

backslide. He no longer attended prayer

money to the man as a gift. (The Lord was

meetings and became uninterested in church.

introducing me to an eternal principle). I was As he became less spiritual, he also began to

going to lose something anyway so I might as

lose interest in his wife. Soon, his eyes were

well give it away first.

twinkling and his mouth was watering. He

But I thought I was wiser than the Lord. The

considered other girls.

man had been so insolent that I didn't feel like This lady realized that she was about to lose

giving him anything. I decided to pursue this

what she was guarding. Then she ran to church

man until I got my money. My debtor was a

and asked the pastor to pray for her marriage.

smooth-talking liar, who had a different story

The very thing she was preserving was slipping

each time. Up till now, I have not gotten my

away. Dear friend, be it known unto you that he money. I lost it. God knew I would lose it

who keeps his life will lose it and he who loses anyway. He wanted to bless me, so he asked me

his life for Christ's sake will find it. These are to take that step of giving it away but I failed to the irrevocable words of our Saviour. "He that

do so. Give up your life or it will be taken from findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth you.

his life for my sake shall find it” (Matthew

10:39). There are people who think they are

preserving their family lives by not getting too **TAKING
YOUR ROOM IN**

involved in church activities. They give

MINISTRY BY SACRIFICE

themselves to secular pursuits thinking that

they are safeguarding the future of their homes.

“...and Elisha the son of Shaphat of AbelMany of these people have ended up losing their Meholah shalt thou anoint to be prophet IN THY

children and their spouses as they followed

ROOM” (1 Kings 19:16). God has called many

money on a wild goose chase.

of us. However, you have to pay the price in

order to take your place in the ministry. Your

2. IT TAKES WISDOM TO SEE AHEAD AND TO

place in the ministry is also called your “room” of ministry.

KNOW THAT YOU ARE GOING TO LOSE SOMETHING.

1. EVERYBODY HAS A ROOM OR POSITION

“A prudent man foreseeeth the evil, and hideth **THAT HE OCCUPIES IN MINISTRY.**

himself: but the simple pass on, and are punished”.(Proverbs 22:3). Foolishness often

This room of ministry defines your standing keeps us blinded from this reality.

before God. It also identifies and classifies you I once ran a car rental business. At one

among the ranks of God’s numerous servants.

point, I had a very good customer who was

It requires something to occupy that room.

paying me good money. At times, he would rent

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 172

172

/ CHAPTER 19

2. YOU NEED TO PAY THE PRICE TO OCCUPY

of Nimshi shalt thou anoint to be king over

THAT PLACE.

Israel: and Elisha the son of Shaphat of Abelmeholah shalt
thou anoint to be prophet in thy The gift or the sacrifice is
what will make room room. And it shall come to pass, that
him that

for you. "A man's gift MAKETH ROOM FOR

escapeth the sword of Hazael shall Jehu slay:

HIM, and bringeth him before great men"

and him that escapeth from the sword of Jehu

(Proverbs 18:16).

shall Elisha slay. Yet I have left me seven

One day, when you get to Heaven, you will
thousand in Israel, all the knees which have not either have
a room waiting or not. This will
bowed unto Baal, and every mouth which hath
depend on your obedience to the Lord. The gift
not kissed him” (1 Kings 19:13-18).

you give creates a space, and makes room for
Many years ago, I had a strange vision. In the
you. I occupy a particular spiritual position in vision, I saw a
man sitting on a chair. I did not my country. At the spiritual
gates of the

know who the man was. Suddenly, a hand
country and among the spiritual elders, I occupy appeared
and this hand picked the man by his
a particular chair. It may not be a very great
collar and lifted him out of his chair. The hand position but it
is a position anyway. That is the then lifted me by my collar
and placed me in

room God has given me. Perhaps, God has that chair. The Lord revealed to me that I was given you a place in the ministry. God has replacing someone. He said to me that I was to prepared a place for you among the ranks of the occupy a chair that someone else had occupied ministers. Do you want that place? Do you like before.

that place? Will you take your place or will someone else have to take it?

4. THERE ARE MANY REASONS WHY GOD MAY REPLACE YOU.

3. EVEN WHILE IN YOUR ROOM OF MINISTRY, YOU CAN BE REPLACED BY SOMEONE ELSE.

You can be replaced if you do not sacrifice to take your room. There is a place among the

Elisha was given Elijah's room of ministry. He Christian heroes for you. I've known people complained about the ministry. He felt he had who failed to stand in the room that God gave sacrificed so much for the Lord. He erroneously them. It wasn't long before somebody else took thought that he was the only one doing up that room. If you fail to take the step when something for the Lord. God told him, "There you should, others will be brought in to replace are seven thousand pastors and churches you you. don't know about." And it was so, when Elijah Jesus was placed in a position of honour. He heard it, that he wrapped his face in his mantle, is the only one who sits at the right hand of God and went out, and stood in the entering in of the the Father. He was the one who was allowed to

cave. And, behold, there came a voice unto him,
open and to read the book. He was found
and said, What doest thou here, Elijah? And he
worthy to do these things because He is the
said, I have been very jealous for the LORD God
“lamb that was slain”. “Thou art worthy to take of hosts:
because the children of Israel have
the book and to open the seals because thou art
forsaken thy covenant, thrown down thine
the lamb that was slain. And I wept much,
altars, and slain thy prophets with the sword;
because NO MAN WAS FOUND WORTHY to
and I, even I only, am left; and they seek my life, open and to
read the book, neither to look
to take it away. And the LORD said unto him,
thereon. And one of the elders saith unto me,

Go, return on thy way to the wilderness of

Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, Damascus:
and when thou comest, anoint

the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the

Hazael to be king over Syria: And Jehu the son

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 173

SACRIFICE AND THE GLORY / 173

book, and to loose the seven seals thereof. And said, "I
have given this man of God a room. He

I beheld, and, lo, in the midst of the throne and occupies a
position that he did not create for

of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders, himself.
He has paid a price to be in that room. stood a Lamb as it
had been slain, having seven

It is not by his preaching, organization or even horns and
seven eyes, which are the seven

healings, but by the room that I have placed him Spirits of
God sent forth into all the earth. And in."

he came and took the book out of the right hand
of him that sat upon the throne. And when he

Paying the Price

had taken the book, the four beasts and four and twenty
elders fell down before the Lamb, having

I once formed an association of pastors. One

every one of them harps, and golden vials full of senior
minister asked me, "What do you think

odors, which are the prayers of saints. And they you're
doing? Do you know what it means to

sung a new song, saying, THOU ART WORTHY

form an association of churches and pastors?"

TO TAKE THE BOOK, and to open the seals

Then he asked me a question: "What have you

thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed

been through, what have you suffered, what

us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and have you
survived?" What he was asking was,

tongue, and people, and nation” (Revelation 5:4 “Have you paid the price to be the leader of an 9).

association of churches and pastors?” He

continued, “I have contended with the prince of

When you listen to an evangelist preaching, you

this nation. What have you been through, what

may think that you could preach better than he

have you suffered, what have you survived?”

does. You could probably preach circles around

Later on, I discussed with this pastor about how him. However, that does not qualify you to

the government was persecuting me. He

stand in his room of ministry. You may actually already knew about how the government of the

know more than he does and have a better

day had broken our walls and attacked us in the

character than he does.

night. But I told him, "That is not all. After breaking our walls, they sent the Internal

5. IT IS GOD WHO GIVES THE ROOM TO THE

Revenue Service to hound us. All my pastors

came under investigation. Then they turned

MINISTER.

their attention on me personally." I had to fill There are questions and speculations about

various forms and I was interrogated at their

many successful ministers. Many wonder why

offices. They questioned me extensively and

such people are so successful. Why does anyone

wanted to know about my car, home, money etc.

listen to this person? Why does anyone come

I sent my Chief Accountant but they refused to

for his crusades? This person is occupying a

see him. They insisted that I came myself; they room of ministry given to him by the Lord. One

wanted to see me. Someone who had won an

day, as I observed a famous evangelist preach at award for being the best tax expert for that year a crusade, I thought to myself, "I could probably interrogated me. As I narrated my woes to this

preach this message better." I marvelled that so senior minister, he laughed and shook my hand.

many thousands had gathered to hear such a

Surprised, I asked him why he was giving me a

message. When it was time to pray for miracles,

"pat on the back". He answered,

there were hardly any healings. Yet the crowds

"Congratulations. I have filled that form five

kept coming, night after night.

times. I have been through that process five

different times." He went on to commend me,

As I mused over this, I knew that if this were saying that I was maturing and paying the price my crusade, no one would attend to hear my to be in the high place of ministry.

“good preaching”. The Lord spoke to me and

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 174

174

/ CHAPTER 19

So you see, before you can occupy certain

2. GOD IS A REWARDER.

positions, you have to pay a price. When you pay the price, you enter the room that God has

We must believe that He is a rewarder of them

prepared for you. Elisha paid the price to take that diligently seek Him (Hebrews 11:6).

Elijah's room. When Elijah came to Elisha, he

Expect rewards as you serve the Lord. Expect

just threw his mantle on him. Elisha was

them on earth and in Heaven.

surprised. He knew Elijah was calling him.

I have been surprised by the Lord. I honestly

Elijah himself was so sad about it. He knew that thought that I was going to be poor and

Elisha was going to make a great sacrifice.

wretched as I followed the road of ministry. I

“What have I done to you? What have I done?”

thought I would never have anything. To my

Elijah asked. Elisha told his business partners surprise, God has given me a hundredfold in this that he was quitting. He took his oxen and

life.

ended his business in one stroke. He divided up his business and walked away from it. He told

How true the Scriptures are. “He that loses

himself, "It is over, I can't go back." He was

his life will save it and he that saves it, will lose going to follow Elijah. Elisha paid the price to it. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he stand in Elijah's room. Joshua paid the price to that loseth his life for my sake shall find it"

take over from Moses. Peter, James and John

(Matthew 10:39). Because of this Gospel I have

paid the price to be apostles.

travelled all over the world. There were times I was treated as royalty and I wondered who was

How many are going to live and sacrifice for

making a mistake. Are you afraid to trust the

Jesus? How many are going to stand in their

Lord? You are making the greatest mistake of

rooms and pay the price? Get in there. God has your life. Give yourself to Him. It is worth the a room for you. God had a room for me and I

risk! It is worth it! There is a hymn, by George believe that He has one for you. I believe that Bennard, that blesses my

heart. It speaks about there are more rooms to occupy and I intend to

the cross of Christ. As you read through the

be there. You must determine to be in the room words, may the Lord inspire you to lay down

that God has for you!

your life for Him!

SACRIFICE: KEY TO EARTHLY

AND ETERNAL BLESSINGS

1. GOD PROMISES A HUNDREDFOLD BLESSING.

“And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto

you, There is no man that hath left house, or

brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the

gospel's, BUT HE SHALL RECEIVE AN

HUNDREDFOLD now in this time, houses, and

brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and

children, and lands, with persecutions; and in

the world to come eternal life" (Mark 10:29,30). God promises that we shall receive a hundredfold blessing now and in the world to come. You can be blessed on earth as you serve the Lord. God is an allrounder. It is time to believe in His glory. Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03
Page 175

SACRIFICE AND THE GLORY / 175

The Old Rugged Cross

On a hill far away, stood an old rugged cross

The emblem of suffering and shame, And I

love that old cross

Where the dearest and best, for a world of lost sinners was slain

Oh that old rugged cross, So despised by the
world

Holds a wondrous attraction to me, For t'was
on that old cross

Jesus suffered and died, To pardon and sanctify
me

To the old rugged cross, I will ever be true
It's shame and reproach gladly bear, Then He'll
call me some day
To my home far away, Where His glory forever
I'll share.

Chorus

So I'll cherish the old rugged cross, Till my
trophies at last I'll lay down
I will cling to the old rugged cross, and
exchange it some day for a crown.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 176

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 177

SECTION IV

The Works of the Holy Spirit

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 178

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 179

Recognizing the Supernatural

20

father and replace him with this con man?

COOPERATING WITH GOD

However, it is important to accept what God is

doing and flow with it. If you flow with the

To recognise and to flow with what God is doing

move of God, God will be with you. If you fight is very important. You will only succeed by the

against what he is doing you will never succeed. extent to which you flow with the Lord.

After years of walking with the Lord, I have

Unfortunately, the Lord is not as predictable as simply lost all confidence in my ability to know we would like Him to be.

what God will do. I just have to trust him and

Human beings love computers and

do what he wants me to do.

predictable things. We want to be able to say;

I remember praying for a twenty-five-year old

"This is what God will do!" We want to be able lady who was dying in hospital. I knew that God to say; "God will heal this person tomorrow." loved her and would never let her die at that

We wish we could predict whether God will use

age. Unfortunately, she did die in spite of my

this young man and not the other one.

strong and fervent prayers for her. This was a

However, most of the time, we are wrong. God

confusing experience for me because this lady

does not fit into our stereotypes.

was a faithful long-standing Christian who loved You can never tell whom God is going to use.

God with all her might. Yet she died in the

You can hardly tell whether God is going to heal prime of her life, leaving behind a husband and

someone or not. It is very difficult to tell

a child.

whether this person will live long or not. No one Why does God do apparently insignificant

can tell if God will use the pastor's son or a

miracles in a miracle service when there are

stranger from nowhere. I have seen large

really ill people whom we want to be healed? It families, in which the parents predicted which of is these looming questions that caused many of

their sons would be a priest. They also

the great healing evangelists to question the

predicted which son would be a wicked

healing ministry and eventually fade out.

businessman. Surprisingly, the wicked man

turned out to be the priest and the priest turned Ultimately, we belong to God. Paul said,

out to be something else. "As it is written, Jacob

"whose I am and whom I serve". He can and will have I loved, but Esau have I hated" (Romans

do with us what he wills.

9:13).

We have to grow up in our understanding of

This is a Scripture that confuses many

God, "But speaking the truth in love, may grow

people. We wrestle with the fact that God would up into him in all things, which is the head, even choose a thief and a trickster. Why would God

Christ" (Ephesians 4:15).

leave the decent firstborn son, who pleased his

/ CHAPTER 20

We must grow up into Him in all things. This

All your past failures in ministry can be

means that we must grow up in healings,

attributed to your doing things that God was not miracles
and manifestations of the Holy Spirit.

doing. Every time we pray for someone whom

We must grow up in our understanding of the

God is not touching, there is an impression that
administration of the Spirit. We must grow up

God's power is not there. There is a feeling that in him in
the workings and the moves of the

there is no anointing. The most successful

Spirit.

ministers are those who strictly follow visible appearances of the Holy Spirit.

**ALIGN YOURSELF WITH GOD'S
PLAN**

2. MINISTERING THE SPIRIT

The failure to understand that God cannot be

The key to successfully ministering the Spirit is predicted and stereotyped will be the reason for to watch out for what God is doing. If you can

failure of many well-meaning Christian leaders.

see that God is touching someone visibly, then

What we need to know and understand is: "What you simply also touch the person. If the Spirit is God doing at this particular moment?" This is impresses upon your heart that He is touching

often different from what we expect God to do.

someone, touch that person. Leave all the other There will be more miracles, more successes,

dry bones that are not rising from the dead.

more victories when we get to walk with God.

This is the great key to successfully ministering After all, it is God who will do the work. It is the Spirit.

God who will build the Church. It is God who

will make you successful. The Bible says it

clearly: the God who called you is the one who **3. CHURCH GROWTH**

will actually do it. "Faithful is he that calleth The key to having successful church planting is

you, who also will do it" (1 Thessalonians 5:24). to see where God is visibly working with

churches. Your new church is likely to work in

Follow the Visible Appearances of the

a city where God is obviously working to build

Holy Spirit

churches. A city in which large churches

flourish is a city where the Holy Spirit is visibly The key to aligning yourself with God is

causing churches to grow.

following the Holy Spirit, and the key to

following the Holy Spirit is to watch what He is The story of the healing of the paralytic in

doing and where He is going. Also the key to

John 5 proves to us that Jesus did not attempt

watching what He is doing and where He is

to do things unless He saw that God was doing

going is to watch out for when He makes

them.

Himself visible. Follow the visible appearances In this story Jesus went to the Pool of

of the Holy Spirit. There are three ways you can Bethesda and met a man who had been there for

follow the visible appearances of the Holy Spirit. thirty-eight years. "After this there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

1. M

Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep market

INISTERING HEALING

a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue

This is the great key to a successful healing

Bethesda, having five porches. In these lay a

ministry: Follow the visible appearances of the

great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, Holy Spirit.

This is the key to the healing

withered, waiting for the moving of the water.

ministry: pray for those that God is healing.

For an angel went down at a certain season into

Avoid praying for people that God is not healing. the pool,
and troubled the water: whosoever

RECOGNIZING THE SUPERNATURAL

/ 181

then first after the troubling of the water
man and suddenly knowing a little about his
stepped in was made whole of whatsoever
condition made Him sense that God was
disease he had. "And a certain man was there,
interested in that man. We would probably say
which had an infirmity thirty and eight years.

that Jesus had a "word of knowledge" about that When
Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had
man.

been now a long time in that case, he saith unto You see,
the unspiritual and faithless would
him, Wilt thou be made whole? The impotent

say that Jesus just noticed the first person He
man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when
saw. However, the spiritual person does not
the water is troubled, to put me into the pool:
operate by chance, luck or good fortune. He
but while I am coming, another steppeth down
knows that God is at work even in his thoughts.
before me. Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up
“When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had
thy bed, and walk. And immediately the man
been now a long time in that case, he saith...”
was made whole, and took up his bed, and
(John 5:6). As soon as Jesus saw and knew
walked: and on the same day was the sabbath...”
something about this man, He acted on it and
(John 5:1-10). This man had been at the pool

ministered healing. Indeed, He was very

for such a long time because he did not have any successful in this case because the man received nurses to help him.

a stupendous miracle after thirty-eight years of I once saw a similar situation in a hospital.

suffering. There are three great lessons to learn There was a man who had an accident that

from this experience.

broke his hip joint such that he couldn't walk.

He needed to have surgery but this man didn't

Three Great Lessons

know anybody who could help him. He was not

a rich man. He was also not an important

Let us learn them by studying Jesus' comments

person. So every time he was scheduled for

after the miracle. The words of Jesus give us

surgery, somebody else was given his place.

direction

This man continued to lie in bed even though
his case needed immediate surgery! Eventually,

1.1

one year too late, he had his surgery.

WORK WHEN MY FATHER WORKS.

Unfortunately, his hip joint was frozen and could In other words, Jesus was saying, "If I see my no longer be corrected. He was just like the

Father working, I will jump in and work. If I see man in John 5. He had no one to help him.

my Father ministering to someone, then I will

But Jesus selected this man for healing and

minister to him". "But Jesus answered them, My ignored all the others who also needed healing.

Father worketh hitherto, and I work" (John

The Bible says, "In these lay A GREAT

5:17).

MULTITUDE of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered..." (John 5:3).. At this meeting, Jesus

2. I CANNOT DO ANYTHING IN THE MINISTRY

was surrounded by a large number of very ill people. Would He heal all of them? Did He heal **THAT IS MY OWN IDEA.**

all of them? Did He attempt to line them up and I can only do what I see my Father do. Jesus was minister to them? The answer is "no". Jesus teaching that He restricted his ministration to

simply ignored the large number of sick people

what He could see the Father doing. Unlike

around Him and ministered to one person. Why

some of us, who want to pray for everyone and

did Jesus heal only one person? How did He

heal everyone, Jesus restricted himself to doing select this man out of the crowd? He followed

only what His Father did. Jesus knew that He

the visible appearance of the Holy Spirit. Jesus could fulfil the purposes of God better by

did not talk to any of the sick people. Seeing this restricting His activities to what the Father did. Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 182

182

/ CHAPTER 20

Jesus did not feel embarrassed that He would be

COMPARING THE NATURAL AND

allowed to heal only one person. Jesus was not

THE SUPERNATURAL

embarrassed by the fact that people would

think, "There were not many miracles today." I became a born-again Christian through the

Jesus did not care about whether people

Scripture Union while I was in secondary school. thought He was powerful or not. If God wanted

In those days, the emphasis was on the Word of one miracle, He would do no more than one.

God. We learnt many important things in the

"Then answered Jesus and said unto them,

Scripture Union. We learnt how to have a

Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do

personal "quiet time". We learnt how to study nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father the Bible. We learnt about the importance of the do: for what things soever he doeth, these also

Word of God. We also learnt of the integrity of doeth the Son likewise" (John 5:19,20).

the Word of God. Because of such teachings, I

had been solidly founded on the Word of God. I

3. J

do not agree with or flow in anything not

ESUS KNEW THAT THE FATHER WOULD

founded in the Word. I want things to be Bible **SHOW HIM (MAKE VISIBLE) THE MIRACLES**, based, otherwise, it is just not good enough. I **THE MOVES AND THE WORKS THE FATHER**

am grateful to God for this foundational

WAS DOING.

background because that has kept me on the right track up until today.

When God loves you, He will show you whom

He is calling and whom He is sending. When

It is this very attitude of sticking to the Word God loves you, He will show you whom He is

that has brought me to the supernatural.

healing and whom He is touching.

If the Father is not showing you this love, you

1. THERE IS A SUPERNATURAL DIMENSION TO

will be left to stumble in the dark and

CHRISTIANITY.

experiment with unworkable options.

Occasionally, you will find something that

The Bible is a supernatural book. Cut out the

works. But most of the time, you will be found

supernatural events from the Bible and you are

beating the air, sweating away to no purpose.

left with a book on philosophy.

“For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him

You cannot avoid the supernatural if you

all things that himself doeth: and he will shew

study the Bible. I am always surprised that

him greater works than these, that ye may

there are people who do not believe in miracles

marvel” (John 5:20).

and yet are committed Christians. Is it

I have learnt one thing. You cannot do

intentional blindness to what is so obvious?

anything that God is not doing. If He is not

The Bible directs us to a God who is Spirit.

making your church grow you cannot make it

The Bible teaches us about angels that cannot

grow yourself. If He is not healing you, you

be seen in the natural. The New Testament is

cannot be healed. If He is not delivering you, full of
instructions concerning the Holy Spirit. you cannot be
delivered. I have learnt and

In spite of this, many Christians are left out of found out that
somehow, God doesn't seem to

the blessings of the supernatural. Among the

just do everything for everybody. The point I

many things I am constantly learning of in the

am making is that God is always doing ministry, one of them is the realm of the something in particular. We must see what He is supernatural.

doing. We must flow with what He is doing. We must move away from what He is not doing!

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 183

RECOGNIZING THE SUPERNATURAL / 183

**2. THE
BIBLE
RELATES
JACOB’S**

**3. THE
GREATEST
BARRIER**

**TO
THE
RECOGNITION OF THE SUPERNATURAL.
SUPERNATURAL
IS
THE
STATE
OF
NATURALNESS.**

Jacob made a very important statement. "And Jacob went out from Beersheba, and went Surprisingly, the greatest barrier to the toward Haran. And he lighted upon a certain supernatural is not demons. The greatest place, and tarried there all night, because the

hindrance to receiving the supernatural is not

sun was set; and he took of the stones of that

witchcraft power. It is a state of naturalness, if place, and put them for his pillows, and lay

I may use that word. "But THE NATURAL MAN

down in that place to sleep.

RECEIVETH NOT THE THINGS OF THE SPIRIT

And he dreamed, and behold a ladder set up

OF GOD: for they are foolishness unto him:

on the earth, and the top of it reached to

neither can he know them, because they are

heaven: and behold the angels of God ascending

spiritually discerned" (1 Corinthians 2:14).

and descending on it. And, behold, the Lord

The Bible states in very clear terms, that the
stood above it, and said, I am the Lord God of
natural man cannot receive the things of the
Abraham thy father, and the God of Isaac: the
Holy Spirit. This is because "they are
land whereon thou liest, to thee will I give it, foolishness unto
him". What does it mean to be and to thy seed; And thy
seed shall be as the
natural? To be natural means to be a normal
dust of the earth, and thou shalt spread abroad
human being. It speaks of thinking normally, as to the west,
and to the east, and to the north,
a human being should. It is being logical,
and to the south: and in thee and in thy seed
intelligent, calculating and analytical. The word shall all the
families of the earth be blessed.
natural speaks of employing all normal human
And, behold, I am with thee, and will keep

faculties. It is interesting that it is this very thee in all places
whither thou goest, and will

"natural" attitude that cuts us off from bring thee again into
this land; for I will not

supernatural things.

leave thee, until I have done that which I have

Many years ago, I was desirous of receiving

spoken to thee of. And Jacob awaked out of his

the Holy Spirit baptism. I wanted to experience sleep, and
he said, SURELY THE LORD IS IN

the Holy Spirit baptsim with the evidence of

THIS PLACE; AND I KNEW IT NOT" (Genesis

speaking in tongues like everybody else. I was
28:10-16).

a born-again Christian but I had not received

Jacob came to a place, made himself a pillow

the Holy Spirit and did not speak in tongues.

and lay down to sleep. He had a supernatural

You must realize that speaking in tongues is a
experience during the night. When he awoke in
very supernatural thing.

the morning he said, "The Lord was in this

I remember once going to a meeting where

place, and I knew it not." This is the testimony people were
being prayed for to receive the Holy of many believers. The
Lord is with them and

Spirit. Instead of entering the meeting, I

they don't even know it. Angels stand by our

observed from outside. All of a sudden, I began side and
they are not even aware of it. The Holy to laugh. Hearing
them speaking in tongues,

Spirit speaks to us and we don't even know it. It led me to
laugh uncontrollably. It sounded so

is my prayer, that by the time you finish reading ridiculous. I
laughed so hard that I thought I

this book, you will say, "The Lord was in this had sinned against the Holy Spirit. Later that

place and I knew it!" You will say, "The Holy year, I finally decided that the baptism of the

Spirit was here and I felt him."

Holy Spirit was for me! I told a few people that I knew someone in town who could pray for us

to receive the Holy Spirit. I remember travelling all the way to town to locate the brother who

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 184

184

/ CHAPTER 20

had agreed to come and pray for us. One

mature person knows God. I'm not talking about

Saturday this minister decided to attend our

academic knowledge of the Bible. Academic

meeting and pray for us. As we gathered in the

knowledge of the Bible does not make you
classroom, I was very hopeful and expectant.
spiritual. As you know, many people study
Bible Knowledge and Religious Studies subjects
After preaching on the baptism of the Holy
in school, and yet are hardened unbelievers.
Spirit this brother prayed for us. He asked those
“And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as
who had received the Holy Spirit to raise up
unto spiritual, but as unto CARNAL, EVEN AS
their hands. After looking about the room, I
UNTO BABES IN CHRIST” (1 Corinthians 3:1).
realized that almost everybody had received,
Paul is saying here that he could not speak to
except me. I couldn't believe it!
them as to spiritual people but as to carnal.

I said to myself, "I organized this meeting. I brought this man from town to pray for us. Yet

Moving out of the Natural State

others who have no interest in the Holy Spirit have received."

"But strong meat belongeth to them that are of

FULL AGE [mature], even those who by reason

I just couldn't understand it. To my left and

of use have their SENSES EXERCISED TO

to my right people were speaking in tongues but

DISCERN both good and evil" (Hebrews 5:14).

I couldn't. I was very discouraged. The man of In this Scripture, the Bible declares that strong God encouraged us to pray in his absence and

meat from the Word belongs to mature

told us that God would fill the rest of us with the Christians. It goes on to explain that mature

Holy Spirit. I prayed for several weeks, but to no Christians are those who have their senses

avail.

exercised to discern or distinguish good from

One morning while lying on my bed, I

evil.

routinely asked the Lord to fill me with his Holy I have always wondered what this verse

Spirit. Before I realized it, I heard a beautiful meant. One of the laws of interpretation of the language coming out of my spirit. I was

Bible is simply to accept the literal meaning of speaking in tongues! I was so happy that I didn't the words you read. This verse simply says that stop praying in tongues for three hours. I was

Christians who become mature have their

afraid that the Holy Spirit would go if I stopped senses alert. The word "senses" is derived from praying.

the Greek word, aistheterion, meaning "organs The question is: "Why did it take me six weeks of perception".

God has given you organs of before I received the Holy Spirit?" The answer perception. You are expected to use these

is in the Bible: the natural man receiveth not! If organs of perception to manoeuvre in this life.

you are very critical, analytical and judgmental, Here, the Bible is giving us an additional but

you are being natural. When you are natural,

very important revelation. It is telling us that you will not and cannot receive spiritual things. these organs of perception can also be used to

detect or discern spiritual things.

4. THE BIBLE SAYS THAT SUPERNATURAL THINGS ARE FOOLISHNESS TO PEOPLE WHO

1. THE ORGANS OF PERCEPTION ARE NATURAL.

What are the organs of perception? They are

Who can receive the supernatural? The answer

the eyes to see, the ears to hear, the nose to

is: spiritual people. The opposite of being

smell, the skin to feel and the tongue to taste. If natural is being spiritual or spiritually mature. we accept this Scripture at face value, then it is A truly mature Christian is a spiritual person. A telling us that our eyes and ears can be used, if Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 185

RECOGNIZING THE SUPERNATURAL

/ 185

they are spiritually alert enough, to discern

2. THE ORGANS OF PERCEPTION AND THE

between good and evil things. I told the Lord,

SUPERNATURAL

"We need more than one Scripture to form a

solid basis for this revelation." The Lord took This is the

principal revelation I want to bring to me to the book of Matthew 13. "Therefore

your understanding. The supernatural operates

speak I to them in parables: because they seeing through your eyes, ears, thoughts and feelings.

see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do

Some of the thoughts that flash in your mind are they understand. And in them is fulfilled the

from God. They are the voice of God

prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye

ministering direction to you. Jesus made it clear shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing that the Holy Spirit would minister to Christians ye shall see, and shall not perceive: For this

through their minds.

people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; **How the Supernatural Works**

lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand

1. THE SUPERNATURAL AND THE MIND

with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. But BLESSED ARE YOUR

“But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost,
EYES, for they see: AND YOUR EARS, for they
whom the Father will send in my name, he shall
hear.

teach you all things, and BRING ALL THINGS
For verily I say unto you, That many prophets
TO YOUR REMEMBRANCE [mind], whatsoever I
and righteous men have desired to see those
have said unto you” (John 14:26). This
things which ye see, and have not seen them;
Scripture is saying that the Holy Spirit brings
and to hear those things which ye hear, and
things to your mind. You might have heard

have not heard them" (Matthew 13:13-17).

great men of God say, "God spoke to me", or Jesus made many astounding statements. He

some mighty evangelists say, "The Spirit of God said, "Blessed are your eyes and your ears." said something to me last night". I am sure you What does this mean? Jesus was speaking

have wondered, as I did, that God seems to

about their organs of perception, (aistheterion). physically "live" in the houses of these men of God. God seems to speak to them all the time,

Jesus had just finished teaching them the

but never to me. They always say, "God spoke to Word of God yet many could not understand

me."

what He was saying. When He said, "blessed are your eyes" he meant blessed are your eyes My brother, Jesus said that the Holy Spirit

because they see visions, revelations and the

would bring things to your mind. However, if

supernatural. When He said, "blessed are you your heart (kardia--thoughts and feelings) have

ears" He meant that they heard a little further, waxed gross (fat, stupid, dull and inattentive)

the voice of the Holy Spirit and the voice of God. you will never know when the Holy Spirit speaks

Some could even hear the voices of angels. At

into your mind. You will not know the difference another point in the passage, Jesus said that the between your own thoughts and those from the

people had waxed gross in their heart. The

Holy Spirit.

word "heart" comes from the Greek word, Learn something right here! The

"kardia", meaning thoughts and feelings. Their supernatural is not always sensational, dramatic thoughts and feelings, which were organs of

or spectacular. The supernatural concerns

perception, had become gross (dull, stupid, fat

things that are not natural. My experience in
and inattentive).

the supernatural is that God uses my organs of
perception, of feeling, thinking, seeing and

hearing. He will do the same for you. It may not Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 186

186

/ CHAPTER 20

be spectacular or thrilling, but it certainly is statement. She
said, "Now I know that you are supernatural. The
supernatural is often

a man of God." "And Elijah took the child, and mistaken for
the natural. Because of that, the

brought him down out of the chamber into the

supernatural passes us by and we do not even

house, and delivered him unto his mother: and

realize it. Do you remember the call of the

Elijah said, See, thy son liveth. And the woman Prophet Samuel?

said to Elijah, Now by this I KNOW THAT THOU
ART A MAN OF GOD, and that the word of the
Lord in thy mouth is truth" (1 Kings 17:23,24).

2. THE SUPERNATURAL AND THE EARS

This means that all along she didn't really

The boy Samuel was in the temple of God

believe that she was experiencing the

ministering. After lying down to sleep one

supernatural. It looked so ordinary to her.

night, he heard a voice. The voice sounded so

I have been in the ministry for many years.

much like the voice of his senior pastor that he God has
used me to do many things for which I

immediately got up and went to see Pastor Eli.

am grateful. For example, you are reading a

The prophet Eli said, "I didn't call you, so go back and read what I have written. That alone should tell back." He heard this same supernatural voice you that God is using me to some extent.

three times and thought he was hearing a

However, I did not experience thundering and

human voice. "...Samuel was laid down to

lightning and have not seen Jesus in person.

sleep; That the Lord called Samuel: and he

answered, Here am I. And the Lord called yet

again, Samuel... And the Lord called Samuel

3. THE SUPERNATURAL AND DREAMS

again the third time..." (1 Samuel 3:3,4,6,8).

The call of God on my life has simply been a

If the supernatural voice were not similar to a

conviction. A conviction to serve Him. A

natural voice, then why would Samuel make the

conviction to do my best. A conviction to obey

same mistake three times? It was the

the desires that He has placed on my heart. The experienced prophet, Eli, who guided Samuel to

Bible is true when it says many are called.

receiving the supernatural. "Therefore Eli said Many, many, many people are called. "For MANY

unto Samuel, Go, lie down: and it shall be, if he ARE CALLED, but few are chosen" (Matthew

call thee, that thou shalt say, Speak, Lord; for 22:14).

thy servant heareth. So Samuel went and lay

Many people do not respect the visions they

down in his place. And the Lord came, and

see. Many have had dreams, which they take no

stood, and called as at other times, Samuel,

notice of. Paul said, I was obedient to the

Samuel. Then Samuel answered, Speak, for thy

heavenly vision. One night, God spoke to me

servant heareth" (1 Samuel 3:9,10).

and told me, "Respect your dreams from today." Many things you have experienced are

I told the Lord, "But I don't have spectacular supernatural. The supernatural is both real and dreams!"

biblical. In the ministry of the Prophet Elijah, The Lord told me to look in the book of

you see a widow to whom he ministered. He

Daniel. So I opened my Bible and he showed me

prophesied that she and her household would

that even King Nebuchadnezzar, an unbeliever,

lack no food throughout the period of the

respected his dreams greatly. As a result, he

famine. That prophecy came to pass! However,

was able to receive an instruction from the Lord. secretly she did not believe that the

supernatural had occurred in her life.

His dream revealed a mighty tree being cut

down. If you had a dream where you just saw a

When her child died and Elijah brought him

tree, would you take much notice of it? Probably back to life, she made a very significant

not! You may take more notice of a dream

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 187

RECOGNIZING THE SUPERNATURAL

/ 187

where cows were chasing you, birds were flying,

power flowing out of Him. He could distinguish

and snakes were appearing all over the place.

between the touch of the crowd and the release

What did Elijah experience? He experienced

of supernatural power. It is interesting to note the still small voice of God. When God spoke to that the woman also felt that she was healed.

him he was not in the fire, wind, etc. He was in She also felt the power of God flowing into her. the still small voice. "And he said, Go forth, and The Bible says, "...and SHE FELT in her body

stand upon the mount before the Lord. And, that she was healed..." (Mark 5:29).

behold, the Lord passed by, and a great and

In my experience, people often claim to feel strong wind rent the mountains, and brake in the power of God when they receive healing.

pieces the rocks before the Lord; but the Lord

Some people feel an intense heat or a warm

was not in the wind: and after the wind an

sensation. Others feel a surge of electric power.

earthquake; but the Lord was not in the

Many feel the wind of the Holy Spirit, like a

earthquake: And after the earthquake a fire; but blowing breeze. Again, some do not even feel

the Lord was not in the fire: and after the fire A anything per se, but just sense that they are

STILL SMALL VOICE" (1 Kings 19:11,12).

healed. Friends, the power of God is real.

The SShrinking T

Tumour

4. THE SUPERNATURAL AND FEELING

I remember a lady who had a lump on her body.

During the miracle and healing prayer time, she

I believe I have a very supernatural ministry.

placed her hand on the lump and God healed

The things I do and have been able to

her. She later testified on stage that when she accomplish

have been divinely and

placed her hand on it, she felt the lump actually supernaturally orchestrated.

shrinking beneath her palm. She was amazed

When the Lord began to use me in the

and so were we!

healing ministry, I soon realized that people

were actually being healed in the service.

The D

Disappearing G

Gallstones

Coming from a faith background, I used to sing

There was a lady in one of our miracle services, the song, "I'm not moved by what I feel. I'm only scheduled to undergo major surgery to remove

moved by the Word of God." This song is true. gallstones. She was suffering greatly from

We are only moved by the Word of God!

cholecystitis. During the healing time, she placed her hand on her abdomen as we prayed. However, you will notice that Jesus could feel She felt the power of God go through her body. tangible healing power flowing out of His body. She later testified on stage that she felt she was The Bible tells us that He knew in Himself that healed.

healing virtue had gone out of Him. How did He know that? He knew because He felt it. One The Bible commands us to, "prove all things." version of the Bible says, "Jesus became aware After returning to the doctor, the new x-ray that power had gone out of him." Another showed that the gallstones had disappeared. version says, "And Jesus perceived, that power The doctors had no explanation for this. There

had gone out of him."

was a scan before the miracle time that showed the stones. After the miracle service, there

The question that Jesus asked was "Who

were no stones. By the supernatural power of

touched me?" Perhaps the feeling of the power God a miracle had occurred.

was like an unusual touch. The disciples asked

Him, "You can see this crowd jostling you and pressing in on all sides. How can you ask who is touching you?" Jesus' organs of perception (feelings) were alive spiritually. He could feel
Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved
Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 188

188

/ CHAPTER 20

MANIFESTATIONS OF THE SPIRIT

Phanerosis, which is translated "manifestation" also means: a sign, an expression, a

"Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I demonstration, the symptom, the appearance would not have you ignorant. Ye know that ye and the materialisation of an invisible thing. were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb

1 Corinthians 12:7 therefore reads: "The sign, idols, even as ye were led. Wherefore I give you the expression, the demonstration, the

to understand, that no man speaking by the symptom, the appearance and the

Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and that no materialisation of the Holy Spirit is given to

man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the everyone to profit withal."

Holy Ghost. Now there are diversities of gifts,

but the same Spirit. And there are differences of God manifested Himself in various ways to

administrations, but the same Lord. And there

those who believed in Him. This is something

are diversities of operations, but it is the same God did in the past and is still doing today.

God which worketh all in all. But the

What is the use of a car you can't drive? What is manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man the use of a brother you don't see, and can't call?

to profit withal" (1 Corinthians 12:1-7). Notice What is the use of a person who claims to be

that in verse 3, Paul talks about the

your friend but is invisible? You cannot contact

"manifestations of the spirit." The word Him, you cannot relate with Him, you cannot

"manifestation" used here is the Greek word feel Him, and you cannot benefit from Him! It

"phanerosis" which means, "to make visible." is of no use.

Paul is saying in other words, that the making

In other words, the Holy Spirit is alive in us,

visible (manifestation) of the Holy Spirit is given and there are times when He makes Himself

for everybody's benefit.

visible to the church. Without the Holy Spirit becoming visible, we will not benefit from Him,

as we should. The phanerosis of the Holy Spirit **1. THE HOLY SPIRIT IS MADE VISIBLE FOR**

or the making visible of the Spirit is real.

OUR BENEFIT.

Everyone needs the Holy Spirit to be made

2. WHEN THE HOLY SPIRIT IS MADE VISIBLE,

visible from time to time. To be made visible is **WE FEEL HIS PRESENCE AND SEE HIS**

to be made tangible and available.

WORKS.

What is the use of a car you cannot see, and

money you cannot touch? Thank God for all the

Many times you can feel the presence of the
cars in Japan and Korea but I need one that I
Holy Spirit at meetings. When you sense the
can touch and feel. Thank God for all the money presence
of the Holy Spirit, He is making
in the banks of America and Germany, but I
Himself visible.

need some in my hand now. I need money I can
Sometimes in my meetings, I have sensed the
touch, hold and spend. Thank God for the
Holy Spirit move to the back of the auditorium.
greatness of the Holy Spirit in Heaven. Thank
Sometimes I sense Him sweep through the
God for the wonders of the Holy Spirit in the
balcony and sometimes He is on the stage.
Bible. But I need the Holy Spirit practically,

Many times I have seen the Holy Spirit on the tangibly and visibly today. God knows this need man of God. I have seen the Holy Spirit bring of a comforter who can be contacted. He knows healing to people in the congregation. we need a Holy Spirit who is made visible whenever necessary. There are times that I can feel Him in the car with me and then I start to cry like a baby. I sometimes want to drive alone because of this. Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 189

RECOGNIZING THE SUPERNATURAL

/ 189

When He is present, He does so many things in

our lives. He can become real to you today in

Jesus' name! The verse we read says that

everyone must benefit from the manifestation of

the Holy Spirit. He is given for your benefit. If you have never experienced the Holy Spirit in a

visible way, it is not because He is not real. It is because He has never been made visible in

your life for whatever reason.

From today, phanerosis is going to happen in

your life in the name of Jesus! You will see Him moving practically in your life! I have seen the Holy Spirit at work in our church. This is what has transformed our church from a classroom

church to a worldwide ministry. The Bible

refers to the Holy Spirit as rain. Things grow

when there is rain. Plants flourish in the rain. The rain of the Holy Spirit is what has brought

the transformation to our church. The Holy

Spirit has made Himself visible by transforming
my little Bible study group into a worldwide
ministry.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 190

The Presence of the Holy Spirit

21

what to think, being clearly convinced it was not **JOHN
WESLEY AND THE**

fraud, nor yet any natural disorder.

HOLY SPIRIT

But when both soul and body were healed in
a moment, he acknowledged the finger of God.

The Revivals in England

Wesley notes:

John Wesley was born in 1703 and died in 1771.

Many more were brought to the berth. All

He is probably the most well known of all revival were in floods of tears, cried, prayed, roared

preachers. Wesley, a brilliant Oxford fellow and aloud, all of them lying on the ground. When I

lecturer was converted at age thirty-five and

began to pray, the flame broke out. Many cried

went on to become the founder of the Methodist

aloud, many sank to the ground, many trembled

Movement. John Wesley experienced almost all

exceedingly. Throughout his life, Wesley

the same phenomena in his meetings that are

witnessed such incredible revival phenomena

taking place today.¹

that even though his preaching was the tool God

used, he was continually amazed. In an entry in

*“In April 1739, Wesley preached at Newgate

his journal on July 29, 1759, Wesley records a

Prison in Bristol. Wesley records that as he was number of examples that occurred while

preaching:

preaching:

One, and another, and another sunk to the

Several fell to the ground, some of whom

earth: they dropped on every side as if

seemed dead, others in the agonies of death, the thunderstruck. One of them cried aloud. We

violence of their bodily convulsions exceeding

besought God on her behalf and he turned her

all description... a child, seven years old, sees

heaviness into joy. A second being in the same

many visions and astonished the neighbours

agony, we called upon God for her also; and he

with her innocent, awful manner of declaring

spoke peace unto her soul...

them.

The next day a doctor who suspected trickery

Describing the same meeting, Wesley

or fraud accompanied Wesley to the prison to

detailed how the power of God then moved out

see for himself. He closely observed a woman

into the churchyard. The people were affected

who:

in ways that were beyond what he could

Broke out into strong cries and tears. He went

describe. One man was "wounded by the Lord" and stood close to her and observed every

while others tried to hold him up:

symptom, till great drops of sweat ran down her

His own shaking exceeded that of a cloth in

face, and all her bones shook. He then knew not the wind. It seemed as if the Lord came upon

190

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 191

THE PRESENCE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT / 191

him like a giant, taking him by the neck and

It was not the manner here to hold meetings

shaking all his bones in pieces... another roared

all night, as in some places, nor was it common

and screamed... some continued long as if they

to continue them till very late in the night; but were dead, but with a calm sweetness in their

it was pretty often so, that there were some that looks. I saw one who lay two or three hours in

were so affected, and their bodies so overcome,

the open air, and being then carried into the

that they could not go home, but were obliged to house,
continued insensible another hour, as if

stay all night where they were...and there were

actually dead. The first sign of life she showed some
instances of persons lying in a sort of

was a rapture of praise intermixed with a small, trance,
remaining perhaps for a whole twentyjoyous laughter...

four hours motionless, and with their senses

locked up; but in the meantime under strong

Four days later:

imaginations, as though they went to heaven

While I prayed with them many crowded into

and had there a vision of glorious and delightful the house,
some of whom burst in to a strange,

objects.

involuntary laughter, so that my voice could

But when the people were raised to this

scarce be heard, and when I strove to speak

height, Satan took advantage, and his
louder a sudden hoarseness seized me. Then
interposition, in many instances, soon became
the laughter increased...

very apparent: and a great deal of caution and

A week later Wesley wrote:

pains were found necessary to keep the people,

I have generally observed more or less of

many of them, from running wild."

these outward symptoms to attend the

beginning of a general work of God. So it was in New
England, Scotland, Holland, Ireland and

FALLING UNDER THE

many parts of England..."

POWER

The Revivals in America

Apart from the listed manifestations of the Holy Jonathan Edwards was born in 1703 and died in

Spirit in 1 Corinthians 12, there are other

1758. Seminary professor Richard Lovelace

demonstrations of the presence of the Holy

believes: *"Jonathan Edward may well be the Spirit. Since these are not bunched together in greatest American theologian and philosopher one list, I call them "the unlisted manifestations and perhaps also the greatest mind - that

of the Holy Spirit". One of the commonest

America has yet produced. Edwards had firstunlisted manifestations of the spirit and power hand experience with the manifestations of the

of God is falling down. Falling down is often Holy Spirit and became the chief spokesperson

caused by the wine, the wind and the rain.

for the work of revival, trying to bridge the

difficult chasm of emotional excess and freedom

1. THE WINE OF THE SPIRIT

of the Spirit as evidenced with phenomena.

Edward's wife, Sarah, a mother of eleven

The new wine is often seen as a type of the Holy children,
experienced her own major visitation

Spirit. In the natural, over-indulging in wine from God and
was incapacitated for seventeen

can lead to falling, shaking and trembling.

days. Edwards supported and blessed the graces

Similarly, indulging in the wine of the Spirit can of God in
both his wife and others. It was a very lead to the
manifestation of the Spirit. "For

frequent thing to see a house full of outcries,

these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it

fainting, convulsions, and such like, both with

is but the third hour of the day. But this is that distresses
and also with admiration and joy.

which was spoken by the prophet Joel; And it

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan

/ CHAPTER 21

shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I

EXAMPLES OF PEOPLE FALLING

will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh..." (Acts **UNDER THE POWER**

2:15-17). "And be not drunk with wine, wherein

is excess; but be filled with the Spirit"

The occurrence of people "falling under the (Ephesians 5:18).

power", can be found throughout the Bible.

2. THE WIND OF THE SPIRIT

1. THE FALLING OF THE PRIESTS AT THE DEDICATION OF THE TEMPLE.

"The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou

hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell

"It came even to pass, as the trumpeters and
whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is
singers were as one, to make one sound to be
every one that is born of the Spirit" (John 3:8). heard in
praising and thanking the LORD; and

The wind is known to pull down trees and even
when they lifted up their voice with the
houses. The wind of the Spirit does the same.

trumpets and cymbals and instruments of

It is time to believe that these things are real. musick, and
praised the LORD, saying, For he is

Do you remember when Jesus breathed on

good; for his mercy endureth for ever: that then His
disciples and said, "Receive ye the Holy the house was
filled with a cloud, even the

Spirit?" "And when he had said this, he breathed house of
the LORD; SO THAT THE PRIESTS

on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the

COULD NOT STAND TO MINISTER BY REASON

Holy Spirit..." (John 20:22). Do you remember

OF THE CLOUD: for the glory of the LORD had

when the Holy Spirit came into the upper room

filled the house of God" (2 Chronicles 5:13,14). as a mighty rushing wind? The Holy Spirit

The Bible records that the glory of the Lord at

operates like a wind. Recently, at one of our

one time filled the temple so much so that the

miracle services, I was laying hands on all of the priests, the trumpeters and the musicians

people who had come to the altar. One of my

couldn't stand anymore. They all went down

pastors later testified, "I had never felt what I because of the glory of the Lord. These things felt on that Friday." He went on, "As you happen. They are real. The glory of God can be

approached me, a wind began to blow on me. It

manifested at different levels. It can come over was a supernatural wind." He marvelled, "The you to a point where you can't stand. You must

Holy Spirit is so real." I believe in ministering pray to experience the power of God so much so

the Holy Spirit through breathing. The Holy

that you cannot stand. You must believe God to

Spirit is real.

experience His glory in that way because it is a good thing. I want to experience the glory of

God. You should desire to get to the place where **3. THE RAIN OF THE SPIRIT**

these people did in the book of Chronicles. At a time when they were worshipping, the cloud of

Rain is known to pull down trees and houses as

glory filled the place so much so that the

well. Many people run from approaching

trumpeters and the priests could not stand. It

rainstorms. God says He will come to us in the

was not that they did not want to stand. It was form of rain.
“Then shall we know, if we follow not that they decided to lie
down.

on to know the LORD: his going forth is

prepared as the morning; and he shall come

unto us as the rain, as the latter and former rain **2. THE
FALLING OF THE SOLDIERS WHO**

unto the earth” (Hosea 6:3).

ARRESTED JESUS.

“Judas then, having received a band of men and

officers from the chief priests and Pharisees,

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 193

THE PRESENCE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT / 193

cometh thither with lanterns and torches and

they all fell to the ground. That was a

weapons. Jesus therefore, knowing all things
manifestation of the Holy Spirit. When people
that should come upon him, went forth, and said
fall under the power, everybody wonders if it is unto them,
Whom seek ye? They answered him,
real. No matter how many times people see it
Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am
happen they still watch and wonder.
he. And Judas also, which betrayed him, stood
Sometimes you can see from the way people fall
with them. As soon then as he had said unto
under the power that something unusual has
them, I AM HE, THEY WENT BACKWARD, AND
happened to them. Some kind of power has
FELL TO THE GROUND” (John 18:3-6). What
struck them! I keep wondering about it myself

happened as soon as Jesus said "I am he?" The even though I see it happen over and over again. attackers went backward and fell to the ground.

I remember I was speaking to a lady whom I had

Everybody fell under the anointing. There was

prayed for. Later, she told me what had

no usher to support them. There was nothing to

happened to her when I was ministering to her.

protect them as they went backwards and fell

She described how she had fallen down during

down. Wow! You realize right there that the

the ministration. I asked her, "Do you normally Holy Spirit was in action. That alone should

fall under the power?" She said, "I never fall, I have frightened them enough.

am not the falling kind." She thought that there were some types of people who were prone to

3. THE FALLING OF THE APOSTLE PAUL'S

fall under the power. She continued, "I never **ENTOURAGE**
ON THE ROAD TO DAMASCUS.

fall, I don't fall. But this time I fell and I fell again and again. I
fell so many times not

"Why should it be thought a thing incredible

knowing what was happening to me. I was

with you, that God should raise the dead? I

completely powerless to control myself and

verily thought with myself, that I ought to do

stand on my feet. I simply could not stand when many things
contrary to the name of Jesus of

you touched me." It is indeed a wonder.

Nazareth. Which thing I also did in Jerusalem: Falling under
the power will make you wonder

and many of the saints did I shut up in prison,

what is going on. Falling under the power is a

having received authority from the chief priests; sign and a
wonder. People who fall under the

and when they were put to death, I gave my power are not necessarily healed. When people voice against them. And I punished them oft in fall, they may be healed or not healed. They just every synagogue, and compelled them to fall.

blaspheme; and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even unto strange cities. Whereupon as I went to Damascus with **4. BALAAM'S ASS FELL AT THE SIGHT OF THE**

authority and commission from the chief priests, **ANGEL OF THE LORD.**

At midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining

“And when the ass saw the angel of the Lord, round about me and them which journeyed with she fell down under Balaam: and Balaam's anger

me. AND WHEN WE WERE ALL FALLEN TO
was kindled, and he smote the ass with a staff”
THE EARTH, I heard a voice speaking unto me,
(Numbers 22:27). The falling of Balaam's ass at and saying
in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul,
the sight of the angel refutes allegations that
why persecutest thou me? it is hard for thee to
when people fall under the power they are
kick against the pricks” (Acts 26:8-14). Paul
psychologically induced to do so. How could the described
how he and his companions fell under
donkey have been psychologically manipulated
the power on the road to Damascus. When
to fall down at a particular time? When the
Paul's companions saw the light around them,
donkey came into contact with the spirit realm,
Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan

/ CHAPTER 21

he simply fell down. This is what happens to

(Revelation 1:17). To "fall as dead" means that many people. They are not manipulated or

Apostle John dropped to the ground suddenly.

psychologically induced to fall down! They just To "fall as dead" is not a composed and dignified have a spiritual experience that makes them fall fall. To "fall as dead" means to collapse down.

uncontrollably to the ground. When the power

of God is moving, you will see many people fall

to the ground as though they are dead.

5. ELI FELL AT THE MENTION OF THE ARK OF THE LORD.

8. DANIEL FELL AS GOD SPOKE TO HIM.

"And it came to pass, when he made mention of

the ark of God, that he fell from off the seat

“So he came near where I stood: and when he

backward by the side of the gate, and his neck

came, I was afraid, and fell upon my face: but he brake, and he died: for he was an old man, and

said unto me, Understand, O son of man: for at

heavy. And he had judged Israel forty years” (1

the time of the end shall be the vision” (Daniel Samuel 4:18). This experience of falling down

8:17). Daniel also fell under the power when he also does refute the allegation that if people are came in contact with spiritual things. Daniel

made to fall down by the Holy Spirit, they will

was a prime minister and he was highly placed

not hurt themselves. Some people would say

in society. But he fell under the power when he that if the power of the Holy Spirit makes

came in contact with spiritual realities. Dear

someone fall down, the person should come to friend, there is enough evidence in the Word of no harm. However, we have seen numerous God for you to accept this manifestation of the cases of people falling under the power and Spirit. Ministers must flow in the reality of getting hurt. This is nothing new and Eli even God's power. Understand the Word of God and died after falling under the power and breaking you will experience the richness in all that God his neck. It is important to have good ushers to has for us. prevent people from getting hurt when they fall under the power.

WEeping AND CRYING

6. E

“And Elisha came to Damascus; and Ben-hadad

ZEKIEL FELL AT THE SIGHT OF THE GLORY

the king of Syria was sick; and it was told him, **OF THE LORD.**

saying, The man of God is come hither. And the

“As the appearance of the bow that is in the

king said unto Hazael, Take a present in thine

cloud in the day of rain, so was the appearance

hand, and go, meet the man of God, and inquire

of the brightness round about. This was the

of the LORD by him, saying, Shall I recover of

appearance of the likeness of the glory of the

this disease? So Hazael went to meet him, and

LORD. And when I saw it, I fell upon my face,

took a present with him, even of every good

and I heard a voice of one that spake” (Ezekiel

thing of Damascus, forty camels' burden, and

1:28).

came and stood before him, and said, Thy son
Ben-hadad king of Syria hath sent me to thee,
saying, Shall I recover of this disease? And

7. THE APOSTLE JOHN FELL AT THE SIGHT OF

Elisha said unto him, Go, say unto him, Thou
THE LORD.

mayest certainly recover: howbeit the LORD
hath shewed me that he shall surely die. And he

“And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead. settled his
countenance stedfastly, until he was And he laid his right
hand upon me, saying unto

ashamed: and the man of God wept. And
me, Fear not; I am the first and the last...”

Hazael said, Why weepeth my lord? And he

answered, Because I know the evil that thou wilt **2. THE HOLY SPIRIT TOUCHES A PERSON'S**

do unto the children of Israel: their strong holds **EMOTIONS AND CAUSES WEeping.**

wilt thou set on fire, and their young men wilt

thou slay with the sword, and wilt dash their

When the Spirit ministers to a person, the Lord

children, and rip up their women with child. And shows and reveals certain things to the person

Hazael said, But what, is thy servant a dog, that that touch the deepest emotions within. The

he should do this great thing? And Elisha

person starts weeping uncontrollably because of

answered, The LORD hath shewed me that thou

what he sees or realises so clearly.

shalt be king over Syria. So he departed from

Under the anointing, Elisha stared at Hazael

Elisha, and came to his master; who said to him, until he was embarrassed. Elisha then began to

What said Elisha to thee? And he answered, He

cry. Hazael asked Elisha why he was crying and

told me that thou shouldest surely recover. And

Elisha simply told him what he was seeing. As

it came to pass on the morrow, that he took a

Elisha looked at Hazael, he saw a horrendous

thick cloth, and dipped it in water, and spread it murderer who would unleash a reign of terror

on his face, so that he died: and Hazael reigned on the people of Israel. The realisation of how

in his stead” (2 Kings 8:7-15).

brutal and murderous this man standing before

him would be, touched the deepest part of

1. WEeping AND CRYing ARE ONE OF THE

Elisha's heart and he began to cry. "...and the man of God wept. And Hazael said, Why

COMMONEST MANIFESTATIONS OF THE

H

weepeth my lord? And he answered, Because I

ONLY SPIRIT.

know the evil that thou wilt do unto the children It is something I have seen over and over as the of Israel." Elisha then described the details of anointing of the Lord comes on people. I believe the terrible deeds this man would do in the

that this phenomenon of crying is one of the

future. He saw him setting their homes on fire

deepest human emotions. It is not easy to

and killing their young men. He also saw how

artificially induce crying and weeping. It is

he would tear up pregnant women and kill their

usually an involuntary expression and reaction

children. "...their strong holds wilt thou set on to something. I have tried to make myself cry. I fire, and their young men wilt thou slay with the once wanted to cry while I preached because I

sword, and wilt dash their children, and rip up

realised it had a powerful effect on the listeners. their women with child."

I tried and tried but never succeeded even once

I once laid hands on someone and

in bringing out any tears.

immediately perceived the secular ambitions of

However, I have noticed how people begin to

the person. A voice kept stirring within me and weep when the Spirit ministers to them. I

saying, "What else do you want? What else do notice, commonly, how many people start crying

you crave for? What are you looking for in this

when I lay hands on them. There were times

life? Am I (the Lord) not enough for you?" The when I myself would start weeping when I laid

futility of this person's life as he focussed on the hands on certain people. I have often wondered

world and all it had to offer was so strong upon why this happens. I think the answer is in the

me that I began to weep uncontrollably. I had

text above.

not been thinking about those things but as

soon as I laid hands on this person, my spirit

was flooded with these thoughts and feelings. I was overwhelmed with this emotion and I wept

pitifully over this fellow.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 196

196

/ CHAPTER 21

This is exactly what happened to Elisha. He

“And he said unto me, O Daniel, a man was overwhelmed with the thoughts and greatly beloved, understand the words that I feelings of what Hazael was going to become speak unto thee, and stand upright: for unto and do in the future. thee am I now sent. And when he had spoken this word unto me, I stood trembling” (Daniel 10:11).

3. THE CONVICTION OF THE HOLY SPIRIT RELEASES TEARS.

2. HOUSES

“And when he (the Holy Spirit) is come, he will reprove (convince) ...” (John 16:8). The “And when they had prayed, the place was Holy Spirit has the power to convict us of certain shaken

where they were assembled together;

things. It is not a strange thing to break down

and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and emotionally under a strong conviction. "The

they spake the word of God with boldness"

LORD is exalted; for he dwelleth on high: he

(Acts 4:31).

hath filled Zion with judgment and

"And suddenly there was a great earthquake,

righteousness. And wisdom and knowledge

so that the foundations of the prison were

shall be the stability of thy times, and strength shaken: and immediately all the doors were

of salvation: the fear of the LORD is his treasure. opened, and every one's bands were loosed" (

Behold, their valiant ones shall cry without: the Acts 16:26).

ambassadors of peace shall weep bitterly"

(Isaiah 33:5-7).

There are a lot of shaking experiences recorded in the Bible. You will often find some kind of shaking experience when the Spirit of

SHAKING AND TREMBLING

the Lord moved. Sometimes people trembled like leaves and at other times, there were

1. PEOPLE

earthquakes. Because these experiences are not arranged together in a list, they often go

“And he trembling and astonished said, Lord, unnoticed. They are very much a part of the

what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said work of the Holy Spirit.

unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do” (Acts 9:6).

I have noticed how people shake, tremble and even convulse when the Holy Spirit is in

“Fear ye not me? saith the LORD: will ye not manifestation. Is it any wonder if this frail tremble at my presence, which have placed the human vessel trembles and shakes in the sand for the bound of the sea by a perpetual presence of the Almighty God? It is easy to decree, that it cannot pass it: and though the criticize these things from afar. However when waves thereof toss themselves, yet can they not you experience the power you will realise how prevail; though they roar, yet can they not pass real it is. over it?” (Jeremiah 5:22).

I remember interviewing a gentleman who

“When I heard, my belly trembled; my lips

was shaking uncontrollably. I asked him, "Has quivered at the voice: rottenness entered into

this happened to you before?"

my bones, and I trembled in myself, that I might rest in the day of trouble: when he cometh up

He said, "No, never." He continued to shake unto the people, he will invade them with his

and tremble uncontrollably.

troops" (Habakuk 3:16).

"Are you surprised at what is happening?" I asked.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 197

THE PRESENCE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT / 197

"Very surprised, I have always thought people with the understanding also" (1 Corinthians

were pretending and making things up but now

14:15). Don't be surprised if you see people

I know it is real."

laughing uncontrollably in the Holy Spirit. Don't Dear friend,
is it a strange thing if somebody

criticize anyone if you see him or her running

trembles at the power of God? "Fear ye not me?

about in ecstasy. They are full of joy in the Holy saith the
LORD: will ye not tremble at my

Spirit. These are simply manifestations of the
presence..." (Jeremiah 5:22).

joy that is promised us in the Holy Spirit. I

remember watching a man of God as he

ministered. He preached in a certain church for **VARIED
MANIFESTATIONS OF THE**

six weeks. Meetings took place every morning

HOLY SPIRIT'S PRESENCE

and evening.

No matter what he was talking about people

1. MANIFESTATIONS OF JOY

just started laughing. They just broke into

uncontrollable laughter and received the Holy

Joy is a fruit of the Holy Spirit. When the Holy Spirit as he preached. The Bible says "When the Spirit is in manifestation, there are sometimes

Lord turned again the captivity of Zion, we were demonstrations of joy. The obvious

like them that dream. Then was our mouth

manifestations of joy are, smiling, laughing,

filled with laughter..." (Psalm 126: 1,2). It is dancing, running, jumping, clapping, singing

wonderful to see laughter in the Holy Spirit. It and even crying. You don't need to be very

is a wonder. I see God anointing you with holy educated to know that these are expressions of

laughter!

joy. Should it be any wonder if you see any of

these manifestations of joy because the Holy

Joy Brings Strength

Spirit is at work? "Then Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them. . . . And there was great joy in that city" (Acts 8:5,8). "For the kingdom of God is not of meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost" (Romans 14:17). When you are down and depressed, you are weak.

(Acts 8:5,8). "For the kingdom of God is not

Depression is loss of hope. It is depression that meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace,

makes people think of killing themselves. When you have lost hope in an extreme way, then you

and joy in the Holy Ghost" (Romans 14:17).

you have lost hope in an extreme way, then you

"Whom having not seen, ye love; in whom, begin to think of killing yourself. You want to though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye

die because there is no hope. A Christian who

rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory" (1

is full of joy is different from a depressed

Peter 1:8). Then was our mouth filled with

Christian. God wants to give us a revival of joy laughter, and our tongue with singing: then said in the Holy Spirit!

they among the heathen, The LORD hath done

great things for them” (Psalm 126:2). “Then he

said unto them, Go your way, eat the fat, and

2. BEING STRUCK DUMB

drink the sweet, and send portions unto them

“And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able

for whom nothing is prepared: for this day is

to speak, until the day that these things shall be holy unto our Lord: neither be ye sorry; for the performed, because thou believest not my

joy of the LORD is your strength” (Nehemiah

words, which shall be fulfilled in their

8:10). “Speaking to yourselves in psalms and

season...And his mouth was opened
hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making
immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he
melody in your heart to the Lord” (Ephesians
spake, and praised God. And fear came on all
5:19). “What is it then? I will pray with the
that dwelt round about them: and all these
spirit, and I will pray with the understanding
sayings were noised abroad throughout all the
also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing
Dag Heward-
Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 198

/ CHAPTER 21

hill country of Judaea. And all they that heard
hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy

them laid them up in their hearts, saying, What sight, and be filled with the Holy Ghost" (Acts manner of child shall this be! And the hand of 9:6-9,17).

the Lord was with him" (Luke 1:20, 64-66).

Another manifestation of the Holy Spirit is

4. SCREAMING

when he strikes you dumb. Zechariah was struck dumb for a while because he did not

"And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he believe the angel. Once, I remember when

taught them as one that had authority, and not

Kenneth Hagin was struck dumb right in the

as the scribes. And Jesus rebuked him, saying, middle of his message. He became speechless

Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when

and could not finish his message. We all sat the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with there in amazement, as Brother Hagin stood a loud voice, he came out of him" (Mark 1:22, speechless for over twenty minutes.

25,26). "Then Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them. And God is just showing us that the Holy Spirit is the people with one accord gave heed unto here. He is invisible but He makes Himself those things which Philip spake, hearing and visible through these manifestations. This is seeing the miracles which he did. For unclean what we call phanerosis: the making visible of spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many the great invisible Holy Spirit.

that were possessed with them: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed.

3. BEING STRUCK BLIND

And there was great joy in that city" (Acts 8:58). Do not be surprised when you see Paul was struck blind. Interestingly, Paul

screaming, shouting, and crying people lying on

experienced several manifestations of the Spirit the floor in a service in which the Holy Spirit is during his conversion experience. There was a

in full manifestation. I would prefer to be like

"falling to the ground". There was "trembling". Jesus than to follow the dictates of some

There was an experience of "being struck blind". starchy, crusty, "immune to God," Christians.

"And when we were all fallen to the earth, I

Jesus had screaming manifestations and so will

heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying in

I.

the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks” (Acts 26:14). “And he trembling and

5. HEAT AND BURNING

astonished said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to
“I indeed baptize you with water unto
do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go
repentance: but he that cometh after me is
into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou mightier than
I, whose shoes I am not worthy to
must do. And the men which journeyed with
bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost,
him stood speechless, hearing a voice, but
and with fire” (Matthew 3:11). “John answered,
seeing no man. And Saul arose from the earth;
saying unto them all, I indeed baptize you with

and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man:

water; but one mightier than I cometh, the

but they led him by the hand, and brought him

latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to

into Damascus. And he was three days without

unloose: he shall baptize you with the Holy

sight, and neither did eat nor drink. And

Ghost and with fire” (Luke 3:16). To baptise

Ananias went his way, and entered into the

with water means to pour water on you or to put

house; and putting his hands on him said,

you into water. To baptise with fire means to

Brother Saul, the Lord, even Jesus, that

pour fire on you or to put you into fire. If you are appeared
unto thee in the way as thou camest,

baptised with water, you will feel cold and wet. Dag

Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and

THE PRESENCE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT / 199

It is quite clear that if you are baptised with fire, spoken by the prophet Joel..." (Acts 2:14-16).

you will feel some heat. I have heard different

This is that which was spoken of by the Prophet

people testify of a burning sensation or the

Joel.

feeling of "heat" all over their bodies. I have also heard people testify of feeling heat on specific parts of their bodies. Usually, these experiences **1. TO FLOW IN THE SUPERNATURAL IS TO**

indicate that the Lord is baptising you with fire. **BELIEVE THAT WHAT YOU ARE SEEING IS**

Many times, people are experiencing healing

WHAT YOU HAVE BELIEVED FOR.

when they feel the baptism or pouring on of fire. I remember a time I used to feel heat and a

This is one of the greatest keys. Peter could

burning sensation in one of my hands.

have doubted that he was seeing what the prophet Joel had spoken of. Instead, he boldly

This was a strange experience to me because declared that he was seeing the supernatural.

it kept recurring and I didn't know what it

meant. This experience of heat in my hand kept

a. SSamuel hears G

God's V

Voice

recurring. Looking back, I realise that it was the The Prophet Eli had to point out to Samuel this

period of time when I began to operate in the

same truth. He had to tell Samuel, "This is healing ministry. I believe God was baptising or that!" The voice you are hearing is the Holy putting fire on me and that is why I was feeling Spirit. When you have "this is that" faith, you this

heat in my hand. After God has baptised
will be able to accept the supernatural
you with fire, you will be able to walk in the
happenings in your life. When you hear the
anointing that destroys the yoke. "And there
voice of the Spirit speaking to your mind, you
appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of
will no longer say that it is just a thought.
fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they
were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to b. EEvil
sspirits ccome oout oof ppeople
speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave
One time while ministering, a young lady
them utterance" (Acts 2:3,4).
began to scream, twist and squirm. She had to
be held down by four strong men. As I

FAITH IN THE HOLY SPIRIT'S

ministered to her, she suddenly became still and
MANIFESTATION

collapsed to the ground.

I wondered to myself, "What has happened

When the Holy Spirit arrived on the day of
now?"

Pentecost, there was a great uproar in the city. The Holy Spirit said to me, "This is that!" Some people thought that the people speaking

This is Acts 8:5-8 reenacted. "Then Philip went in tongues were drunk. Others thought that the

down to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ disciples were mad. I am sure there was a large unto them. And the people with one accord

group of people who just didn't know what was

gave heed unto those things which Philip spake,

happening. Apostle Peter, at the Lord's

hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

prompting, rose up in the midst of the confusion For unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came and boldly declared, "This is that!" What did he out of many that were possessed with them: and

mean by "this is that"? "But Peter, standing up many taken with palsies, and that were lame,

with the eleven, lifted up his voice, and said

were healed. And there was great joy in that

unto them, Ye men of Judaea, and all ye that

city" (Acts 8:5-8).

dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and

hearken to my words: For these are not

drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day. But THIS IS THAT which was

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 200

That was evil spirits coming out of people
command you to come out in the name of
screaming and tearing them to the ground. This
Jesus." After that he asked the girl (just as we is what
occurred, after Jesus prayed for
had been doing), "What is your name?" She someone
oppressed by an unclean spirit. And
responded normally just as she had been
they brought him [the child] unto him: and when
responding to us. He then turned to us and
he saw him, straightway THE SPIRIT TARE HIM;
said, "She is alright." "What!" I thought, "Is that AND HE
FELL ON THE GROUND, AND
all?" You see, this older Christian believed that
WALLOWED FOAMING. And he asked his
this was it! This was the deliverance! She was father, How
long is it ago since this came unto
free. Her freedom was proved in the weeks

him? And he said, Of a child. And ofttimes it following.

hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters, to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us. Jesus said

2. AFTER BELIEVING THAT THIS IS THAT, YOU

unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are **MUST PROVE ALL THINGS.**

possible to him that believeth. And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with

“PROVE ALL THINGS; hold fast that which is

tears, Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief. good” (1 Thessalonians 5:21). Accept

When Jesus saw that the people came running supernatural things but prove them. Flow with

together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto them, but test them.

him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee,

I like to call people and ask them, "How come come out of him, and enter no more into him.

you fell under the power when I prayed for

And the spirit cried, and rent him sore, and

you?"

came out of him: and he was as one dead;

During one miracle service, I asked a pastor,

insomuch that many said, He is dead" (Mark

"Have you ever fallen under the power?" 9:20-27).

"Yes!" he answered. "Were you surprised?" I After ministering to a young boy, he

asked.

screamed, convulsed and fell down as though

dead. What was happening? Some modern

"Very much!"

analysts would have said, "This is post-ictal

"Why were you surprised?"

sleep. This is a temporary relief." But Jesus said, "This is it. He is healed." God told me, He laughed and said, "I thought it only

"This is what Jesus experienced." When the lady happened to women." He continued, "When you screamed and jumped around, the Holy Spirit

called me forward to pray for me, I said to

told me, "This is what Jesus saw."

myself, This thing will never happen to me. I

came up there with a posture of resisting any

Many years ago in secondary school, I was

such fall. But before I could realize it, I was on involved in casting out thirty-six demons from a the floor."

young student. For four hours, we struggled,

trying to deliver the girl from evil powers. Of The power of God hit him and he had no more

the thirty-six demons, all had fled with the

defenses. He experienced for himself the reality exception of one. We were left with only one to of the anointing.

cast out! We commanded the spirit to go out but One lady told me, "You have prayed for me

somehow we could never bring ourselves to many times and I have never fallen under the believe that this girl had actually been power. I didn't believe much in it."

delivered. The patron of the Scripture Union was called in. He was an older and experienced

I myself could sense that she didn't believe

Christian. After arriving, he said to the spirit, "I much in the power of God. When you lay hands

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 201

THE PRESENCE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT / 201

on people you can sometimes tell whether they are receiving or not. Some come up with such a

natural attitude that you can see that they are cut off from the supernatural. Like Jacob, God is in the room, but they don't even know it!

When it got to this lady's turn to be prayed for, the power of God went through her and she fell to the ground.

She told me later, "I was so surprised." I asked her to stand up again and I prayed for

her a second time. She fell right to the ground like a domino. I sensed that she was surprised

so I wanted her to be doubly sure that the power of God was real. I prayed for her the third time. She crumbled to the ground for the third time.

Then I asked the ushers to lift her up again.

She narrated, "After the third time I had

decided that this will never happen again!" "I will not allow myself to fall again."

I didn't know what was going on in her mind,

but I decided to pray for her again. As soon as my hand touched her, she crumbled vertically to

the ground. She lay on the ground as someone

unconscious for several minutes. She was later

assisted to her seat. I saw her staggering away, helpless under the power of God. My friend, the supernatural is real. When you move out of

natural, human thinking, you will begin to

receive and experience the supernatural power of God.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 202

The Charismatic Gifts of the Holy

Spirit

22

Many people don't benefit from the Holy

PHANEROSIS: MAKING

Spirit. The only way some Christians seem to

THE TEACHER VISIBLE

have the visible presence of the Holy Spirit is by the speaking in tongues. But there is more to

The Bible is replete with instances when the

God and more to the Holy Spirit than speaking

Holy Spirit became "visible" (shown,

in tongues!

demonstrated, manifested) to believers. How

does the Holy Spirit become visible to the

2. WHEN JESUS PROMISED THE HOLY SPIRIT,

average Christian? Through the teaching

ministry of the Holy Spirit!

TO

BELIEVERS, HE PROMISED US A

TEACHER.

1. THE PRINCIPAL JOB OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IS

Watch out for the teacher being made visible.

TO TEACH AND GUIDE THE CHURCH.

Anybody who wants to get to know the Holy

Spirit must experience this important way that

Every time you are in the presence of the

the Holy Spirit makes Himself visible to us.

teaching anointing, you must acknowledge the

“When the Holy Spirit comes, he will reprove

great presence of the Holy Spirit. He is being

the world of sin, of righteousness and of

made visible to you. When you read your Bible

judgement. He will also guide us into all truth. and begin to have deep revelation in the Word,

And when he is come, he will reprove the world

the Holy Spirit is being manifest.

of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment:

"But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost,

Of sin, because they believe not on me; of

whom the Father will send in my name, HE

righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye SHALL
TEACH YOU ALL THINGS, and bring all

see me no more; Of judgment, because the

things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have

prince of this world is judged. I have yet many

said unto you" (John 14:26). This verse is a

things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them

great key. When I read from the Bible that God now.
Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is

would give us the Holy Spirit as our Comforter,

come, HE WILL GUIDE YOU INTO ALL TRUTH:

I asked myself, "What is this Comforter going to for he shall
not speak of himself; but whatsoever do for us?" God
revealed to me that the primary he shall hear, that shall he

speak: and he will

way He makes Himself visible and relevant to us
 shew you things to come" (John 16:8-14).

according to this verse is, "to teach you all things."

202

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
 and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 203

THE CHARISMATIC GIFTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT / 203

3. THE HOLY SPIRIT WILL ALSO REMIND US

You must understand that the Comforter is

OF EVERYTHING THAT JESUS HAS TOLD US

here to teach you. He is here to manifest

IN HIS WORD.

Himself as a teacher in your life. That is why

you must read and study your Bible! Perhaps

"...AND BRING ALL THINGS TO YOUR

the greatest manifestation of the Spirit is the

REMEMBRANCE, whatsoever I have said unto

teaching session of the service. Unfortunately, you" (John 14:26). I want you to know that

the teaching part is regarded as the powerless

when Jesus promised the Holy Spirit, He was

section of the ministration. When people

promising us a teacher! The Holy Spirit must be scream, fall and shiver we say, "Oh, the Holy manifested in your life as a teacher. You do not Spirit is at work." This is unfortunate, because know the Holy Spirit if you do not know Him as

the Holy Spirit's primary and visible role is in a teacher. There are two essential rewards that teaching us his Word.

the Holy Spirit brings to you through the

b. A

All T

Things T

That PPertain unto G

Godliness

teaching of God's Word.

The second essential reward of the Holy Spirit

a. A

All T

Things T

That P Pertain tto L Life

when He teaches you the Word of God is that He

When the Holy Spirit becomes a teacher to you,

gives you all things that pertain unto godliness!

He will give you all things that pertain unto life!

That means you can live a righteous life to

“According as his divine power HATH GIVEN

please God. You can be spiritual. You can read

UNTO US ALL THINGS THAT PERTAIN UNTO

your Bible and pray. You can be in church

LIFE AND GODLINESS, THROUGH THE

regularly and participate fully. Churches are full
KNOWLEDGE OF HIM that hath called us to

of people who want miracles and breakthroughs.

glory and virtue..." (2 Peter 1:3). This verse says If you want
a permanent breakthrough then you

that, God has given us all things that pertain to must believe
the Bible because it says, "You life. What are the things that
pertain to life?

shall know the truth and the truth shall make

The things that pertain to life are money, cars, you free,"
(John 8:32). The principal work of the clothes, houses,
healing, jobs, good jobs, wives, Holy Spirit is to guide us
into all truth. When husbands, children, health, education,
long life, you allow Him to teach you, you will have access
prosperity, peace, joy in the Holy Spirit, financial to

everything that pertains to life and to

blessings, knowledge, wisdom, good pastors,
godliness.

friends etc. You may ask yourself, " How is the I have a
revelation of Heaven. I know it is

Holy Spirit going to give me all things that

the most important place to be and I want to go

pertain unto life though the teaching of the

there. I have a revelation of serving the Lord. Word?"

That is why I want to serve Him more. I have

Look carefully at the verse again. It says that, a revelation
that it is more important to get to

"God hath given us all things that pertain unto Heaven and
to serve the Lord than to do

life through the knowledge of him that has

anything else. These revelations came to me

called us to glory and virtue". In other words through the
knowledge of the Word. Thank God

God knows that we will receive all things that
for the miracles. Thank God for all the things
pertain unto life when we get to know Him

He is going to do to make Himself visible in our better. That
is why He sent the Comforter. He lives. But He comes first
and foremost as a

sent the Comforter to teach us and to give us
teacher, and as someone guiding and leading.

knowledge. The knowledge the Holy Spirit

Receive the knowledge of his Word! By His

gives us about God, will lead us into everything Word you
can be free! You don't have to sin, you that pertains to this
life.

don't have to die; you don't have to kill yourself!

God is setting you free! Don't die before your

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 204

/ CHAPTER 22

time! God is saving you; He is saving your life knowledge that you move into higher positions.

and extending your life through the knowledge

Those who are educated rule those who are not

of His Word. You are free by the power of the

educated. Those who have knowledge suppress

Lord! You can live a righteous life! You can do and oppress those who do not have it. The

the right thing because the Lord is your helper. people who know how to make things like

He said, "I will send the Comforter, the helper, a aeroplanes, ships and cars, rule the rest of the stand-by, the strengthener." He will strengthen world. When the UN was first formed, every

you! You will not fall by the wayside! You will country was equally important. Everybody's

not die before your time! He will bring you all vote counted. But with time, you realize that the these blessings through

His Word!

countries that have more knowledge are

dominating those with less knowledge. It is a

Most of us have never asked the Holy Spirit to

fact of life. At different workplaces, those with teach us personally. I constantly pray for God to higher education earn much more than those

give me the spirit of wisdom and revelation in

with lower education. What separates the two?

the knowledge of His Word. I cannot depend

What is the dividing line? It is knowledge.

solely on sermons I hear. You only retain eleven Knowledge sets you apart in this life. It is

per cent of what you hear once. Churches are

exactly the same with spiritual things.

full of spiritual babies seeking for miracles and Knowledge puts you in another category.

signs. But Jesus said it is an evil generation that looks for

signs. "And when the people were gathered thick together, he began to say, This is **6. WHEN YOU KNOW CERTAIN THINGS, YOU**

an evil generation: they seek a sign; and there

WILL BEGIN TO MOVE AHEAD IN LIFE AND

shall no sign be given it, but the sign of Jonas **IN MINISTRY.**

the prophet" (Luke 11:29).

Don't cut yourself off from the Teacher. He will **4. I**

be made visible when you apply yourself to the

F

YOU

WANT

TO

BE

LED

INTO

A

knowledge of God. Many years ago when I was

PERMANENT BLESSING IN THIS LIFE THEN

in the sixth form in secondary school, I used to **YOU NEED THE HOLY SPIRIT AS A TEACHER.**

go for extra Chemistry classes in another school. I had to get up as early as 4 o'clock in the

If you want to walk into everything that pertains morning. I would open my Bible and read it

to this life and to godliness, then you need the every day. I remember I was studying about

Holy Spirit to be demonstrated as a teacher in

Moses at that time. Everyday I would read

your life. Life is made up of two compartments, something about Moses and I would pray and

your natural life and your spiritual life. When ask the Lord to teach me His Word. And the

one side is not working, it affects the other.

Holy Spirit would teach me. I don't read things That is why God has given us things that pertain just so that I can come and preach them. I have to the natural and to the supernatural; all things my own personal Bible study and quiet time and

that pertain unto life and godliness - through

I ask the Holy Spirit to lead and teach me. I am His Holy Spirit. You will not go far with God

only sharing what He has taught me.

until you ask the Holy Spirit to teach you.

You may love miracles but if you really want

everything that pertains to life and godliness,

5. THE GREATEST VICTORIES THAT YOU

welcome the Holy Spirit right now and welcome

WILL EVER HAVE WILL COME THROUGH

Him to be visible as a teacher! That is

KNOWLEDGE.

phanerosis. I know and respect Kenneth Hagin

very much. At a Winter Bible Seminar in Tulsa,

Even in the secular world it is through

I was astounded as this man simply taught from

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 205

THE CHARISMATIC GIFTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT / 205

the Bible everyday. Every morning and evening,

ministering, he called my wife and I to pray for it was the
Word that had pre-eminence. I

us. As he laid his hands on me, I felt the Holy respected the
power of the teaching anointing

Spirit. I felt like waves of oil were coming down even more
as I watched crowds gather to

over me. It was a real experience. I had never

receive simple teaching. I had thought that

felt anything like that before. I experienced the such a great
man of God would come breathing

phanerosis. The Holy Spirit became visible. I

fire and miracles. But all he did was to teach
knew that the Lord was anointing me. Hands
and I was so blessed.

had been laid on me in the past but this was the only time I
experienced anything like that.

Let's get into the Holy Spirit. Let's ask Him to teach us. He
will give us knowledge. You are

being taught now so that you can avoid making

LISTED MANIFESTATIONS

some grievous mistakes. I dissected frogs,
analysed blood vessels, and did so many things

The Holy Spirit manifests Himself to us in

when I was in medical school. How has it

several ways. Let's read this Scripture in I

helped me? Of what use is the frog that I

Corinthians 12: 8-10: "For to one is given by

dissected? How is it helping me now?

the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the

However, this Word that I read has given me

word of knowledge by the same Spirit; To

wisdom and direction for my life and my church.

another faith by the same Spirit; to another the It is time to
get the knowledge. The Holy Spirit gifts of healing by the
same Spirit; To another

will be made visible to you as a teacher. I see the working
of miracles; to another prophecy; to God leading godly and
spiritual people into His

another discerning of spirits; to another divers wonderful
miracles, through the knowledge of

kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation

Him!

of tongues” (1 Corinthians 12:8-11). This

Scripture gives us a list of manifestations of the Spirit.
However, there are many other

PHANEROSIS: PHYSICAL

manifestations that are not in this list. They are found scattered throughout the Bible. I call

MANIFESTATIONS

manifestations that are not in this list, The

Unlisted Manifestations of the Holy Spirit. As

It is very important for us to have the power of we go along we will see these other unlisted

God in our midst because the devil is always

types of phanerosis.

manifesting his power through his agents.

When there is no power in the church, the

members wander off into the occult world

THE WORD OF KNOWLEDGE AND

looking for help. Often, when people are in

THE DISCERNING OF SPIRITS:

crisis and need spiritual help, they do not turn to **SEEING AND KNOWING**

the church but to the devil.

When the Holy Spirit manifests a word of

People don't see power in the churches they
knowledge to you, you will begin to know things
belong to. That is why they go seeking for help
supernaturally. This means that you have
elsewhere. We need to have the power of God
received the spirit of seeing and knowing.

in the church to cater for the needs of people.

We must experience the power of the Holy Spirit

You must pray for the supernatural ability of
at our meetings.

seeing and knowing things. This manifestation
of the Spirit involves seeing and detecting

I remember experiencing the power of the

spirits. To be able to discern or distinguish evil Holy Spirit

some years ago. A visiting minister spirits you must have the Holy Spirit. The spirit came to my church. After he had finished

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 206

206

/ CHAPTER 22

realm is where God lives. That is the realm

can show us all things. "Howbeit when he, the

where demons and angels operate. When you

Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all have the manifestation of the discerning of

truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but

spirits, you will see and detect angels, demons

whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak:

and even God. Jesus had this gift in

and he will shew you things to come" (John

manifestation.

16:13). Again the Bible says we have the

a. The spirits of Elijah and M

Moses appeared to

unction and know all things. "But ye have

Him on the m

mount.

unction from the Holy One, and ye know all

things" (1 John 2:20).

'And was transfigured before them: and his face

Every minister must pray for the grace of

did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white

seeing and knowing.

as the light. And, behold, there appeared unto

them Moses and Elias talking with him"

(Matthew 17:2,3).

1. SEEING AND KNOWING: PROTECTION

b. Jesus saw and detected angels in the

Many years ago, I was the leader of a little

Garden oof G

Gethsemane.

fellowship. One day, I came to church two

“And he was withdrawn from them about a

hours before time and noticed one young lady

stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed,

who was sitting at the back. I couldn't help

Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this

noticing how spiritual this lady seemed to be.

cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but

She would come to church earlier than

thine, be done. And there appeared an angel

everybody else. She would sit alone at the back unto him

from heaven, strengthening him”

and intercede for hours. Her prayers were not
(Luke 22:41-43).

the feeble whispering kind. They were manly,

c. Elisha's servant's eyes were opened to see strong,
fervent and intense. She spoke in the

the spiritual armies around him.

tongues of angels and she prayed in the spirit.

“And Elisha prayed, and said, LORD, I pray thee, On many
different occasions I would come to

open his eyes, that he may see. And the LORD

church early and find only this lady interceding opened the
eyes of the young man; and he saw:

intensely at the back. There were times I

and, behold, the mountain was full of horses and wondered
who was more spiritual: myself or

chariots of fire round about Elisha” (2 Kings

this lady?

6:17).

I asked myself, "Who is the leader: myself or this lady?"

Seeing and Knowing Things Supernaturally

Meanwhile, I never said a word to her nor ask

Another name for the combined gifts of the

her any questions. I wouldn't want to disturb

word of knowledge and the discerning of spirits, such a prayer time.

is what I call "seeing and knowing." As However, one day, the Lord said to me,

Shakespeare said, "There is no art to find the

"Cause her to know her abominations."

mind's construction in the face." This means that you can hardly know the thoughts and

I said, " What!"

intentions of men by looking in their faces.

The Lord said, "That girl is a bad girl; cause Seeing and

knowing things supernaturally, is

her to know her abominations,"

a gift that operates in my life sometimes. There I said
"What! It is not possible. This is the are many times that I
know things about people

most spiritual member of my church. I am even

supernaturally. The Bible says the Holy Spirit intimidated by
her prayers." I told the Lord, Dag Heward-Mills eBooks.
2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd
2008/05/14 14:03 Page 207

THE CHARISMATIC GIFTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT / 207

"She is the only one who comes early to pray and

"When Jesus knew in himself that his disciples
she is always there."

murmured at it, he said unto them, Doth this
offend you?" (John 6:61).

I thought I was imagining things and the Lord
seemed to accept what I was thinking. But

b. He knew the people who would gang up

after a while, I felt convicted to obey the Lord. against H

Him and betray H

Him.

Sometimes, there are things that do not go

"But there are some of you that believe not. For away. They seem to linger around in your spirit Jesus knew from the beginning who they were

till you attend to them.

that believed not, and who should betray him"

In the end, I sat down with this spiritual sister (John 6:64).

and said; "The Lord says I should let you know c. He knew the specific apostle who would

your abominations."

betray H

Him.

I was sure that I was wrong about what I was

"Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you

telling her but I still felt I had to. As I spoke, she twelve, and one of you is a devil? He spoke of

looked at me in amazement and began to cry.

Judas Iscariot the son of Simon: for he it was

This lady then told me about her life. She told that should betray him, being one of the twelve"

me that every time she travelled outside the

(John 6:70,71). There are many times I have

country, she slept with somebody different. She known people who did not believe in me. They

went on to explain to me how she had slept with

would sit in a group and all seem to be eagerly

more than two hundred different people as a

in the flow. But I knew that this one did not

young person. She confessed that she was a

believe. I remember one occasion on which the

serial and regular fornicator in spite of the super Lord showed me someone who would be disloyal

spiritual front that she always put up. You see, to me. I said to my associate pastor, "Do you see the gift of seeing and knowing was manifest

this fellow?" He said, "Yes, I do." Then I told because the natural appearance was very

him, " One day he will leave us and betray us." deceptive.

At that time, there was no sign of any such

There was no natural way I would know who

possibility. Two years later, what I said came to I was dealing with. God gave me the grace to

pass exactly as I had predicted. This fellow left see and know. Perhaps, it was given to protect

us and spoke bitterly against me. You see, God

me. I needed to know the kind of person around

had shown it to me by the gift of seeing and

me. Perhaps, I would have considered marrying

knowing. I was prepared for it because God had

her because she looked so spiritual. Perhaps,
shown it to me.

the Lord wanted her to be delivered from

I remember one pastor who was totally

hypocrisy and a dual life style. Through this gift, devastated
by the betrayal of one of his dearest you will see and know
the truth about the people friends and associates. We sat
together at a

around you. Through this gift, you will minister dinner table
as he recounted his experiences.

accurately to those around you.

He told me, "Whenever this pastor travelled abroad, he
would bring me nice gifts." He

2. SEEING AND KNOWING: JUDAS

continued, "Sometimes he would buy me a neck tie. At
other times, he would present me with

Jesus knew the people who did not believe in

an envelope containing some dollars or pounds

Him. There are three groups of negative people

sterling". He lamented, "I thought he loved me, whom Jesus was aware of.

I thought he was with me, I thought these gifts

a. He was aware of people who murmured

meant something"

against H

Him.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 208

208

/ CHAPTER 22

Dear friend, don't forget that Jesus enjoyed

One day, the Holy Spirit manifested through

dinner with someone who hated him. On the

the gift of seeing and knowing. He revealed to

outward, they all looked happy and committed

me that a particular pastor had been lying to me but Jesus knew what he needed to know. May

about many different things. I became fixated

you have the gift of seeing and knowing

in my bed, as the Holy Spirit said, "He is a liar manifesting in your life when you need it.

and I will show you five different things that he has lied to you about since you have known him.

Then suddenly he revealed a string of unrelated

3. SEEING AND KNOWING: DIRECTION

lies that this fellow had told me. Some of these One night, I was in my room praying. It was a

lies dated back several years. I was astounded. Saturday night and I was preparing to preach

I had never known that all those things were

the next day. The Spirit of the Lord came upon lies. This revelation came so quickly that

me. I could neither move nor sleep. I was alert immediately after the revelation, I could not

and fixed in my chair. The Spirit of the Lord
remember it anymore. God wanted to show me
began to speak to me almost audibly about a
that the revelation did not come from my mind
rebellious person in the church. He revealed
and that is why I could not remember it
how this person was pretending to be faithful
afterward. It took time and prayer to bring back when in fact
he was full of rebellion.

the revelation. Later on, all these issues were proven to be
lies. Through the gift of seeing and I was seeing and
knowing! Then He asked me

knowing, I was able to uncover the liar within
to do certain things in church on Sunday that
and eventually root him out of the system.

would expose the hypocrisy. He said to me,

"Blow the trumpet with clarity, give a clear I love to have

good anointed music in my

command to the troops and you will see what

services. Anointed music greatly influences the will happen". The Holy Spirit told me what atmosphere and causes miracles to take place.

would happen if I followed his instruction.

Years ago, I had a lady who used to sing

beautifully in our church. She would sing a solo The next day, I followed the Spirit's

for me every Sunday. One night, I had a dream.

instructions to the letter. Amazingly, this

Dreaming is part of seeing and knowing. In the

rebellious fellow did exactly what the Spirit said dream, I was in a boxing ring and to my

he would do and he was exposed. Within

surprise; I was one of the boxers in the ring. I minutes, everything was out in the open and the

was wearing boxing gloves and so was my

solution to a long-standing problem had come.

opponent. But the even greater surprise was my

Leaders are often lied to. There is often no

opponent. Believe it or not, my opponent was

way to tell whether someone is telling the truth. this lady
singer! The boxing bout began and the The deceptions of a
leader can lead to his

lady fought against me with all her might. I

downfall. Many leaders depend on what their

fought back and suddenly the dream ended.

advisers and informants tell them. When they

The Lord had supernaturally revealed to me

are fed with untruths, they often make grievous

that this lady was fighting against me spiritually. mistakes
that lead to corruption and

Later, I found out that she was one of the people
embarrassment. Many political leaders come

who criticised me greatly and therefore fought

out of office, only to discover that they were against me with her words. It is possible to deceived whilst they were in office. They were withstand someone through your words.

fed with lies by sycophants and bottom-licking “Alexander the coppersmith did me much evil: subordinates.

the Lord reward him according to his works: Of whom be thou ware also; for he hath greatly withstood our words” (2Timothy 4:14,15).

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 209

THE CHARISMATIC GIFTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT / 209

4. SEEING AND KNOWING: VISIONS

5. SEEING AND KNOWING: DEATH

Visions are also manifestations of the Holy

On another occasion, I became ill and needed to
Spirit. Visions are an advanced type of seeing
take some medication. However at that time of
and knowing. There have been times when the
my life, I believed that it was not necessary to Lord opened
my eyes to see visions. There was
take medicine if you were a man of faith. Since a time in my
ministry when I was experiencing
I was endeavouring to be a real man of faith, I
a very strong attack of the devil. The pressure had decided
to go on without taking any
and the deception were so strong that I was at
medication at all. On this particular occasion I breaking
point.
had decided that I would either be healed
without medicine or die. As the days went by, I One night,
while on a journey, I had a vision
became more and more ill until I was confined

of Satan. I was awakened at about three a.m. I
to my room. My family did not know what was
suddenly saw a tall black being standing to the
happening to me because they thought I was
right of my bed. This being began to laugh and just resting
in my room. I was determined to
mock at me. Then I noticed the face of this
rise and be healed without medicine or die by
being was the face of someone I had known
faith. As time went by, I became fixed to my
some years ago. This particular individual had
bed, unable to do anything. I was waiting for
mocked me in the past and had said certain
God to heal me.
things to despise me. It was the spirit of a
mockers and the spirit of confusion.

I believe the Lord knew how determined I was to be healed without medicine or die. By The Lord showed me the kind of spirit that this time, the only thing I could do was to turn was harassing my life. Confusion is one of the around in bed. At one point, I turned my head top strategies of Satan against ministers. to the right and there on my bedside table was Immediately, I jumped out of my bed like a an imp-like creature. I knew at once that it was bullet and I tell you, I was terrified. an evil spirit. I knew immediately that a demon Unfortunately, there was no one in the had gained access to my life. I knew that I was apartment where I was living and I was all alone in danger even though I did not understand in this place. I was confused and wondered what I could be doing wrong. Immediately I

what was happening. I knew that I had seen the
knew I had to take medicine to avoid the devil
devil at close range and that a great evil was
gaining access to my life. I arose and took
determined against me. I felt as though I was
medicine at once. Through that vision, God
all alone in a haunted house. I decided to have
saved me from an untimely death. Through
communion by myself. I will never forget that
visions and dreams, God can save your life from
midnight communion because I believe it
destruction.

ministered healing to me and also ministered
the power of the blood on my life. The blood

gave me victory over the devil and all his plans. **6. SEEING
AND KNOWING: ANGELS**

The result of this vision was the termination

Twenty-one years ago, I was lost at a train

of a particular battle that I had been fighting. station in Europe. Not only was I lost, but I was Through this vision, the Lord had shown me

also greatly behind schedule and about to miss

who and what was fighting against me. I

an all-important connection. Suddenly, a man

disengaged from fighting against human beings

whom I didn't know offered to help me.

and moved on into my victory. I became

Strangely, the man took me from where I was

relieved and moved on into my victory.

through many winding corridors, staircases and

tunnels to the exact spot that I needed to get to. Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 210

/ CHAPTER 22

This strange white man said he was not going particular man, the angel motioned to him to where I was going but spent fifteen to twenty minister to that particular person. Papa Hagin minutes taking me to where I needed to be. If then told us how the angel had directed him to you know anything about Europe, you will know minister to a particular person. The atmosphere that this is strange behaviour. As strangely as in the meeting was absolutely charged and the he appeared, this man disappeared when we got service was, for want of a better word, to the platform. I always remember this electrifying! incident even though it has been many yerars

It is real. The manifestations happen to every
since it happened. Somehow, I believe that man
man to profit withal. We all benefit from the
was an angel according to the verse in Hebrews:
manifestations of the Spirit. It makes a lot of
“Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for
difference to us when we know what is
thereby some have entertained angels
happening in the spirit realm.
unawares” (Hebrews 13:2).

One day, while sitting on a plane, I had a
vision of an angel. He was sitting on my left **7. SEEING
AND KNOWING: JESUS**

hand side wearing a light blue gown. He
“And I turned to see the voice that spake with
seemed to be relaxed but on duty. I knew I was

me. And being turned, I saw seven golden
seeing an angel on guard and I was comforted
candlesticks; And in the midst of the seven
on the flight. On another occasion, a sister was
candlesticks one like unto the Son of man,
sitting upstairs, on the balcony of our church.

clothed with a garment down to the foot, and
The Lord opened her eyes to see a marvellous
girt about the paps with a golden girdle”

vision. As I was ministering, I would speak out (Revelation
1:12,13).

blessings and words of faith. Her eyes were
opened and she saw a large angel standing on

Once, I was praying for eight people at a
my left-hand side. As I would speak the
miracle service. The Lord opened the eyes of
blessings, this large angel would throw out

someone in the meeting and the person saw the parcels into the congregation. Many people Lord Jesus walking behind me. Suddenly, she whose arms were outstretched would receive saw the Lord Jesus move into me and then I was the parcels. There were smaller angels who no longer there. She could not see me. She would take the parcels from the big angel and could only see the Lord Jesus laying hands on give it to the people in the congregation. the people.

Angels are real and they accompany us and One of the people I was praying for testified assist us while we minister. I remember a that she felt an extreme and unusual love when

testimony of someone whose eyes were opened
hands were laid on her. This love was Jesus'
as a man of God ministered. As the man of God
love for her as he laid hands on her. Amazingly, was
preaching the person saw an angel walking
this lady was later declared healed of cancer.

around him. From time to time the angel would
These are wonderful visions of Jesus that bring
whisper certain things in the ears of the man of
encouragement.

God and he would smile, nod and continue

Once, I met an elderly American lady who
preaching. The minister himself was not aware
said to me, "I saw the Lord walking behind you of the
presence of the angel but thought he was
when you were ministering."

experiencing his natural thought flow. I was in a Kenneth
Hagin service one night when an

She told me, " I have very real visions." She angel appeared to him. The angel asked him to

continued, "Tonight I saw a rare and unusual follow him. Kenneth Hagin followed the angel

phenomenon of the Lord himself walking behind down the aisle. When the angel got to a you as you were ministering."

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 211

THE CHARISMATIC GIFTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT / 211

Then she asked me, "Do you know that the

The same manifestation operated in Jacob,

Lord walks behind you in that way when you

when he blessed and cursed his children. "And

minister?" I smiled and told her I didn't know that. Jacob called unto his sons, and said, Gather

I remember one day, I was ministering at a

yourselves together, that I may tell you that

little camp meeting in a foreign country. As I

which shall befall you in the last days. Gather laid hands on the people, the Lord opened the

yourselves together, and hear, ye sons of Jacob; eyes of one of our sisters. She was amazed at

and hearken unto Israel your father. Reuben,

what she saw. The Lord Jesus was sitting on

thou art my firstborn, my might, and the

one of the chairs behind the pulpit. He was

beginning of my strength, the excellency of

observing what I was doing. She was greatly

dignity, and the excellency of power: Unstable

touched by this vision and gave glory to God.

as water, thou shalt not excel; because thou

wentest up to thy father's bed; then defiledst

thou it: he went up to my couch. Simeon and

THE WORD OF WISDOM

Levi are brethren; instruments of cruelty are in their habitations” (Genesis 49:1-5).

The word of wisdom gives you the wisdom to know how to handle complex situations.

Wisdom is profitable to direct.

THE WORKING OF MIRACLES

I consider the working of miracles to be the gift **THE GIFT OF FAITH**

that causes non-healing miracles to take place.

Jesus did several non-healing miracles. In a

This is supernatural faith. Sometimes, the Holy sense, these miracles are more astonishing than

Spirit comes upon me and makes me say certain the healings. The book of John contains some

things to people. It is special faith that, when in of these non-healing miracles:

operation, is as though God himself is speaking. The gift of faith operated in Isaac when he

blessed his two sons, Jacob and Esau. "And his

1. THE CHANGING OF WATER INTO WINE

father Isaac said unto him, Come near now, and

kiss me, my son. And he came near, and kissed

"Jesus saith unto them, Fill the waterpots with

him: and he smelled the smell of his raiment,

water. And they filled them up to the brim. And

and blessed him, and said, See, the smell of my

he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear

son is as the smell of a field which the LORD

unto the governor of the feast. And they bare it. hath

blessed: Therefore God give thee of the

When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water dew of heaven, and the fatness of the earth, and that was made wine, and knew not whence it

plenty of corn and wine: Let people serve thee, was: (but

the servants which drew the water

and nations bow down to thee: be Lord over thy

knew;) the governor of the feast called the

brethren, and let thy mother's sons bow down to

bridegroom, This beginning of miracles did

thee: cursed be every one that curseth thee, and Jesus in
Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth

blessed be he that blesseth thee" (Genesis

his glory; and his disciples believed on him"

27:26-29).

(John 2:7-9,11).

Up until today, this blessing persists in the

life of Israel. It is as though God himself had **2. THE
MULTIPLYING OF THE BREAD AND FISH.**

spoken these blessings even though it was a

man speaking. Watch out for when the Holy

"And Jesus took the loaves; and when he had

Spirit comes on people who speak to you

given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and prophetically. It is the gift of faith in operation. the disciples to them that were set down; and

likewise of the fishes as much as they would.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 212

212

/ CHAPTER 22

When they were filled, he said unto his
testes had appeared! The testes were right
disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain,
there. That is a miracle from God. The next
that nothing be lost. Therefore they gathered
day, she came up to me and told me what the
them together, and filled twelve baskets with
Lord had done.

the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten. Then those men, when they had seen the

2. HEALING OF THE EAR

miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth There was a young man who had a hearing

that prophet that should come into the world.

impairment in the right ear. He claimed that he John” (6:11-14).

could not hear if somebody spoke to him on that

side of his ear. But when he was prayed for, the 3.

WALKING ON THE SEA OF GALILEE AT

Spirit of God came powerfully upon him and

NIGHT

then he realized that he could hear clearly. We demonstrated it right there in church. He could

“So when they had rowed about five and twenty

hear clearly from afar.

or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they

were afraid. But he saith unto them, It is I; be **3. KNEE HEALING**

not afraid” (John 6:19,20).

There was a lady who had a knee ailment from childhood such that if she ran for a short

THE GIFT OF HEALING

distance, her knees would buckle and she would fall down. This happened to her once when she

One other manifestation of the Holy Spirit is

was crossing the road and she was almost hit by

healing. He is a healing Jesus. If He is present, a car. She also said that her knees made certain He can make Himself manifest by healing

noises that you could hear if you walked close to someone. It happened to the woman with the

her. She was healed in one of our miracle

issue of blood in the Bible and it will happen to services.
The power of God came powerfully

you in Jesus' name. Healing is a manifestation upon her
while she was concentrating on God

of the presence of the Holy Spirit. It is time for for an eye
healing. She felt a sense of heaviness the return of the
manifestation of healing in our in that knee and then she
realised that she had

services! It is time for wheel chairs to be

been healed. She demonstrated her healing by

emptied in the church! It is time for cripples to running
around the church. There was no noise

walk in the name of Jesus! That is something

and no pain. Her knee did not buckle and she

only the Holy Spirit can do.

was miraculously delivered.

1. THE HEALING OF THE TESTES

4. HEALING OF AN ISSUE OF BLOOD

I remember what happened at a miracle service

There was a lady who sat upstairs during one of

in South Africa. There was a lady in the meeting our miracle services. She had not had her

whose child didn't have testes (undescended

menstrual period for one year even though she

testes). The child was scheduled for an

was not pregnant. She just felt the power of

operation in a few weeks. She came forward in

God come over her and she started bleeding

the healing line and I prayed for her child as I immediately in the service. She went to the

did for all the others. When she went home, she bathroom to check. She came back to testify

immediately took off the clothes of the baby and about her healing. I remember another lady

examined the child. To her amazement, the

who had been bleeding continuously for three

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 213

THE CHARISMATIC GIFTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT / 213

months. A woman has her menses for a

languages unknown to the speaker who is

maximum of five days in a month but she had

manifesting the gift.

bled for three months. The bleeding stopped

The Bible says we speak in tongues of men

right in the service. Just like the woman healed and of
angels. "Though I speak with the

with the issue of blood under Jesus' ministry,

TONGUES OF MEN AND OF ANGELS, and have

this lady experienced a healing of an issue of

not charity, I am become as sounding brass, or a blood.

This is what we describe as the gifts of tinkling cymbal" (1

Corinthians 13:1). "For he healings in operation. The Holy Spirit is there to that speaketh in an unknown tongue speaketh

heal you and He is there to prolong your life

not unto men, but unto God: for no man

upon the surface of the earth. The

understandeth him; howbeit in the spirit he

manifestations of healing are real today.

speaketh mysteries" (1 Corinthians 14:2).

PROPHECY

You need to speak in tongues because there

are many prayers nobody should hear. There

Prophecies are words that are spoken under the

are prayers the devil should not understand. He inspiration of the Holy Spirit. There are two

should not know when you command angels to

types of New Testament prophecy: the simple

kick him. When you pray in tongues, it worries the gift of prophecy and predictive prophecy. The the devil, because he does not know what you purpose of simple prophecy is outlined in 1 are saying.

Corinthians 14:3. It is for exhortation, Once, a pastor who had lived in Norway edification and encouragement. "But he that before, heard me speaking in tongues. As I prophesieth speaketh unto men to edification, ministered in tongues, he could hear that I was and exhortation, and comfort" (1 Corinthians speaking pure Norgsk (the Norwegian 14:3). language). The first time it happened, he was The other type of prophecy is called

not sure whether he was hearing right. On the predictive prophecy. In this type of prophecy,

way home, he told his wife about it in the car.

events are foretold by the prophet. The book of The next day, the meetings continued and he

Matthew, Chapter 24 is a compilation of several

said he heard me speak pure Norgsk again. This

predictive prophecies that Christ made about

time round he was sure about it and he came to

this world. "And as he sat upon the mount of

testify. I have never been to Norway and I don't Olives, the disciples came unto him privately,

speak Norgsk. That was a powerful

saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and manifestation of the presence of the Holy Spirit. what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the That is phanerosis right there! When the Holy

end of the world?" (Matthew 24:3). They are

Spirit demonstrates His presence in this way,
one of the powerful mysteries that God gave us.
the Lord is giving us a glimpse of glory. He is
Prophecy is used to direct, help, influence and
real!
lead us. I prophesy sometimes when I am
preaching.

INTERPRETATION OF TONGUES

DIVERS KINDS OF TONGUES

This involves the speaking forth of the meaning
of tongues that have been spoken. It is not the The gift of
tongues is the commonest
gift of translation and is therefore not a "word manifestation
of the Holy Spirit. It is a
for word" exposé. Interpretation is a gift for wonderful gift
because it is a language from the everyone who speaks in
tongues. Everyone who
Lord. These tongues are heavenly languages of

speaks in tongues must believe in and practise
angels. Sometimes, the tongues are human
interpreting tongues. "Wherefore let him that

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 214

214

/ CHAPTER 22

speaketh in an unknown tongue pray that he
may interpret. For if I pray in an unknown
tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my
understanding is unfruitful" (1 Corinthians

14:13,14). Interpretation greatly multiplies the blessing that
you get from speaking in tongues
alone.

**THE SECRET TO HAVING MORE
MANIFESTATIONS**

Somebody asked why these things don't happen anymore. The reason they don't happen anymore is that we don't know about them. The Bible tells us to covet the best gifts. When you desire the gifts, you will have them. God is not going to give you something that you don't desire.

Faith cometh by hearing. How can you believe in healing when you don't hear about it?

“How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?” (Romans 10:14). “So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God” (Romans 10:17).

But as we preach about it and you hear about it, you develop interest. You begin to desire it. As you desire it, it comes into the church.

I believe that is why I experience miracles in my church. It's because my church members have been taught about healing. I preach at other churches and I realize where the people have not been taught, they don't have much flow of miracles. I have seen many miracles in meetings I have had in South Africa, for instance. It is the same in Nigeria.

The people have been taught to believe in miracles. It is not the same in many other places. It is going to happen to you because you desire it. God is not going to give you something you don't desire, something you don't like or something you are not thinking about. But when you have the desire, he is going to pour it into your life.

SECTION V

The Doctrine of Healing

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 216

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 217

Interpreting “Jehovah Rophe”

23

Different names are used for the Lord in the

THE NAMES OF GOD

Bible. He introduced Himself differently to

Abraham and Jacob. But He used another name

Jehovah Rophe is one of the names of God and

when He introduced Himself to David. All

I would like to share some important things

through the Scriptures God uses different
about Jehovah Rophe. God has always
names as He appears to different people.
introduced Himself by different names to
different people. These different names show
the different attributes of God and illustrate the **1. ELOHIM**
diverse ways he demonstrates His power to his
creation. God has different attributes even
In the very beginning of the Bible, God's name
though we simply refer to Him as "God". is mentioned
repeatedly. The name of God that
is used in Genesis Chapter One is "Elohim". For instance,
the word "love" is translated from Elohim describes God as
the Creator. Creativity three different Greek words. Agape,
Eros and
is an aspect of God's character. Man's creative Phileo.
ability is from God. The power of invention is
Agape love is the God kind of love. This kind

God-given. When man was created in the image of love will continue to love in spite of any of God, he was also blessed with God's creative negative situation. Agape refers to the God kind nature. The creation story therefore reveals of love. The God kind of love is the love that God's creative nature. loves someone unconditionally. Agape is what you find in John 3:16, For God so loved (agape)

2. EL SHADDAI

the world that he gave his only begotten son, that whosoever believeth in him should not Later on in the Bible, we see God introducing perish ..."

Himself to Abraham. "And when Abram was Phileo love refers to brotherly love. If you

ninety years old and nine, the LORD appeared to

hear someone say, "I really love my friend John," Abram, and said unto him, I am the ALMIGHTY

he is probably referring to phileo love.

GOD; walk before me, and be thou perfect”

(Genesis 17:1).

However, it is usual to think of eros love (the physical love of passion) when a man says, "I The name of God used in this Scripture is "El love you" or "I want to make love to you." Shaddai". El Shaddai means "the mighty one with a lot of breasts", or "the mighty breasted You will notice that all three kinds of love are one". You see, the breast meets every need of translated "love", in our English Bibles. the baby. It is the baby's cereal, milk, porridge and drinking water. A baby on breast milk does

217

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 218

218

/ CHAPTER 23

not need to take in anything else. So when God

A HEALING GOD

introduced Himself to Abraham as El Shaddai,

He was saying that, "I'm the Almighty one who

"If thou wilt diligently hearken to the voice of has everything that you would ever need." I see the LORD thy God, and wilt do that which is

God giving you all that you will ever need!

right in his sight, and wilt give ear to his

commandments, and keep all his statutes, I will

put none of these diseases upon thee, which I

3. EHAYEH ASHER EHAYEH

have brought upon the Egyptians: FOR I AM

THE LORD THAT HEALETH THEE" (Exodus

Later, God confirms the name "Jehovah", the 15:26). When God saved His people Israel from

Hebrew "YHWH", which is the equivalent of "I Egypt, He introduced Himself to them in this

am", the promise-keeper, to Moses. "And God verse as "the Lord that healeth thee". The spake unto Moses, and said unto him, I am the

Hebrew words for the phrase "God that healeth LORD: And I appeared unto Abraham, unto

thee," are "Jehovah Rophe." The name "Jehovah Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the name of God

Rophe" means, "the Lord your doctor", 'the Lord Almighty, but by my name JEHOVAH was I not

your physician", or "the Lord your healer". So known to them" (Exodus 6:2,3). His name

you could use these three words to describe God

"Jehovah", is combined with other words to as "the Lord your doctor, your physician or your reveal the many aspects of His promise-keeping

healer". When God introduced himself here in nature and the different ways He fulfils His

Exodus, He was saying, "Let me show you a new promises.

aspect of myself; let me show you another side

At another time, we see God revealing
of my nature. I am Jehovah the physician, a
Himself to Moses in a different way. He
specialist." He is the Lord your healer and your described
Himself as, "I am that I am," which in specialist! I want you
to know that you can

Hebrew is "Ehayeh Asher Ehayeh". "And Moses
experience God's healing in your life if you want said unto
God, Behold, when I come unto the

to. When we talk of healing, most of us begin to children of
Israel, and shall say unto them, The think of physical
ailments only. However, there God of your fathers hath sent
me unto you; and

are many areas in our lives that need healing.

they shall say to me, What is his name? what

God wants to heal our very lives. He wants to

shall I say unto them? And God said unto

come into our lives as Jehovah the specialist.

Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt

My dear friend, you must believe that the

thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath

ability to be alive is from the Lord. As a doctor sent me unto you" (Exodus 3: 13,14). "I am that I've been to many hospitals and mortuaries. The I am" means "the God who is existing". But it last time I was in a mortuary for a post mortem, also means "the Lord who keeps promises". God there were about eight people there. There

was going to bring Moses and the Israelites into were four adults and four children. There was

the Promised Land and He was telling him, "I'm also a little child who was just about four years the God who keeps covenants and makes

old. If you find yourself alive, you should know agreements. I don't break my agreements."

that it is God who has allowed you to be here.

We see God therefore in the Scriptures,

The breath in you, my brother, is from the Lord. introducing Himself in different ways as

It is God who keeps you from getting sick. He

different situations came up. I am teaching
said He would prevent the diseases that are on
about how God introduced Himself as Jehovah
the Egyptians, from coming to you. This means
Rophe: God the doctor, God the specialist and
that the fact that you don't get a particular
God who heals the sick.

disease means that Jehovah Rophe, the Lord
that healeth thee, has prevented you from
getting that disease. You may have seen a

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 219

INTERPRETING "JEHOVAH ROPHE" / 219

thousand people die but God is telling you to
repair. God desires to repair his damaged and
believe in Him for a miracle of long life because blotched
handiwork. He wants to repair broken

He is the Lord God that healeth thee. Let your men and restore them. This is because men are heart be fixed on Him. Trust in Him. For He is the crowning glory of His work. God has pledged Jehovah Rophe. "I am the Lord that healeth to repair completely the earth and all His thee."

creation. He will indeed improve this bad situation.

JEHOVAH ROPHE

3. "ROPHE" MEANS "TO RESTORE" In this chapter, I would like to explain to you in detail the meaning of Jehovah Rophe. What

"To restore", means "to bring back a situation or does "Rophe" mean? "Rophe" is a Hebrew word a feeling that existed before" or "to bring that means "to heal", or "to repair". something back to a former condition, place or position". When God manifests as Jehovah

1. "R"

Rophe, He is bringing back a feeling and a state **OPHE"**
MEANS "TO HEAL"

of well-being that existed before.

"To heal", means "to become or make something healthy again", "to cure somebody who is ill", "to **4. "ROPHE"**
MEANS "TO MEND" make someone feel happy again",
"to put an end to something or make something easier to bear."

"To mend", means "to repair something that has That is the meaning of Rophe. It means "to heal been damaged or broken so that it can be used

and to restore health." Most of us only know of again", or "to improve in health after being common diseases like malaria or flu. There are

sick". God is repairing your life so that you can many aspects of healing which go beyond

be used again for His glory. God is repairing

having a physical disorder. In fact many

your broken life and your damaged relationships

diseases have no physical cure, especially

so that His glory will be manifested fully in your diseases that have to do with the mind and the

life.

emotions. God is able to heal the complex

burdens of the human race. As you can see, "to heal", also means, "to make someone feel happy **5. "ROPHE" MEANS "TO FIX"** again". It also means to make something easier to bear. This amazing dictionary definition of

"To fix", means "to repair or correct something". the word "to heal", opens up many new

Jehovah Rophe means, "I'm the Lord that mends dimensions to the healing ministry.

every situation and the Lord that fixes things". Many of us have situations in our lives that need some fixing and adjustments. God introduces

2. "ROPHE" MEANS "TO REPAIR" things in our lives to adjust and correct certain things that have made you go in a certain way.

"To repair", means "to mend something that is He makes

adjustments. He restores things and

broken, damaged or torn"; it also means "to say brings you a great blessing. I see the Lord

or do something in order to improve a bad or

correcting every crooked situation in your life. unpleasant situation". When God revealed

Himself as Jehovah Rophe, He was saying that

"I am the Lord that repairs". You sometimes **6. "ROPHE" MEANS "TO CURE"** regret some of your actions. You wish that

things hadn't happened the way they did. But

"To cure", means "to make someone healthy God is introducing Himself as the one who can

again after an illness", and "to make an illness go Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 220

220

/ CHAPTER 23

away". It also means, "to deal with a problem In my country,

as well as in many other

successfully", or "to stop somebody from nations, there are people who would not be in

behaving in a particular way, especially in a way prison if another government were in power.

that is bad". God is in the process of making you There are prisoners in jails everywhere who are

healthy again. God is the one who has the

praying for a change of government. They know

power to make an illness go away and to deal

that a new government will apply the laws

with your problem successfully.

differently and free them from prison. This is

why many developing nations have little or no

confidence in the courts of law. God, however,

GOD'S HEALING PLAN

is a just God who applied the rules even to His

own dear creation. He said to them, "Now that
"Heal me, O LORD, and I shall be healed; save
you have crossed the line you can't stay here;
me, and I shall be saved: for thou art my praise"
you have to go out." Consequently, Adam had to (Jeremiah
17:14). The human being is a very
leave the beautiful garden that God had made
special creature. After creating the Heavens
for Him. As a result of the sin of disobedience, and the
Earth, God created the crowning jewel
much of the Earth was destroyed and is still
of His handiwork--man. You need only to study
being destroyed. This Earth will eventually be
a little anatomy, physiology or biochemistry to
totally destroyed and be replaced with a new
understand the awesomeness of God's creation.
Heaven and a new Earth! When sin entered into

the lives of Adam and Eve, many changes took

There are so many bio-chemical reactions

place. The first thing that man noticed was his and cycles that go on in the human body all the

nakedness. They had not noticed this before.

time. The body is filled with many chemical

Adam, now sent out of the garden, found

compounds, hormones and enzymes, which are

himself at the mercy of the elements.

constantly involved in amazing reactions.

With sin now in their lives, death was at work

I always remember the first time I saw a

in their bodies. People, who would never have

woman delivering a baby. I marvelled at how

grown old, began to grow old. Eyes, which

God had designed the human body to bring

would never have faded, began to fade. People, forth children. It is both fantastic and who would never have died, had to die. We miraculous. Man is indeed God's best creation. would have lived forever! They decided to make God put man in the Garden of Eden because some clothes for themselves. When the Lord of His love for the best of His creation. came along, He saw that His creation had made Unfortunately, things went the wrong way. clothes with leaves and He knew that these clothes would not last long. The Lord therefore helped his creation by finding some skin to

1. THE ENTRY OF SIN NECESSITATED GOD'S

clothe them. This was God's first step to helping **HEALING PLAN.**

fallen mankind help himself. He has been

helping ever since. The wisdom to create and

Adam sinned and God had to apply his divine

discover medicine is part of God's grace to help rules against Adam. This is because he is a just mankind. Every medical discovery is part of

God who applies rules fairly and equally to all. God's plan to somehow rescue man from his

This is unlike the justice of men that is often

own ways.

hypocritical and partial. Primitive governments apply the rules, laws and institutions of justice only to their enemies. The police and the

military are agents who carry out the personal

wishes of the ruler of the day.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 221

INTERPRETING "JEHOVAH ROPHE" / 221

2. THE HEALING PLAN CENTRES AROUND

Today, God is introducing Himself to you as

CHRIST THE REDEEMER.

Jehovah your doctor. He is whatever type of

doctor you need. If you need a surgeon, He is a Throughout the ages God prepared a plan to

surgeon. If you need a physician, He is a

redeem and rescue His creation. This plan is

physician. The Bible says, "I am the Lord that summed up in Christ the redeemer. There were

healeth thee." God has always been concerned many predictions in the Old Testament about

about healing and restoring His people.

the coming Messiah who would heal and deliver.

The coming of Christ to this Earth was predicted long in advance. This is one thing that separates **4. WHEN JESUS CHRIST CAME INTO THE**

Jesus from leaders of all other religions. His

WORLD, HE WENT ABOUT DOING GOOD AND

coming was predicted.

HEALING ALL THAT WERE SICK.

The prophets detailed His purpose, His life

He cleansed the lepers, made the lame to walk

and His death long before He arrived. Isaiah

and opened blind eyes. He healed all that were

predicted that there would be someone who

oppressed of the devil. "How God anointed

would take up our sorrows, our griefs and the

Jesus of Nazareth WITH THE HOLY GHOST

chastisement of our peace. He foretold that

AND WITH POWER: who went about doing

someone would come to take away the things

good, and healing all that were oppressed of the that
disturb our peace of mind in this life. This devil; for God
was with him" (Acts 10:38).

person would take up our sicknesses and bring

Jesus' surname was not Christ. Many people

us healing through his stripes. "Surely he hath think that
Jesus' father and mother were called

borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet

Joseph and Mary Christ. Jesus was Jesus,

we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and

without the name "Christ" when He started out afflicted"
(Isaiah 53:4).

in ministry. However, His reputation for

healing became so strong that after a while,

3. G

people began to associate hHim closely with the

OD EXPRESSES IN HIS WORD OVER AND

anointing. That was why they referred to Him

OVER AGAIN, HIS HEART'S DESIRE TO HEAL

as "Jesus Christ" or "Jesus, the Anointed One". **HIS CREATION.**

Thank God that every time the church drifts

He is very concerned with the repairing of His

away, God brings us back to the truth. God is

creation, which is and has been, lost to the devil. leading me to preach and teach about the

"... If thou wilt diligently hearken to the voice of healing anointing. 38.5% of all the narrative

the LORD thy God, and wilt do that which is

verses in the Gospels, talk about the healing

right in his sight, and wilt give ear to his

miracles of Jesus Christ. Virtually 40% of all

commandments, and keep all his statutes, I will

that Jesus did, had to do with healing. Healing put none of these diseases upon thee, which I

is therefore not a side issue or a secondary

have brought upon the Egyptians: for I am THE

subject in the Bible. It is not something that is LORD THAT HEALETH THEE" (Exodus 15:26). I

supposed to be an afterthought.

want you to know that long ago, God introduced

Himself as "Jehovah the specialist doctor". He is revealing Himself to you as Jehovah the

5. HEALING IS A MAIN AND CENTRAL THEME

cardiologist, the paediatrician, the gynaecologist **OF THE GOSPEL.**

and Jehovah the physician specialist. The Lord

is your surgeon.

God is a healer. Jesus is a healer. God

introduces Himself as "Jehovah Rophe" and Jesus came along with the anointing of the Holy

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 222

Ghost to heal. Somebody may say we don't

DIVINE HEALING

need healing. But that is not true. We need

healing more than we need anything else. The

Divine healing is the healing that comes from

devil has done so many things that have twisted

God. This is in contrast to the healing that man our lives into a ball of confusion, hurt, pain and engineers for himself.

With our limited minds,

disease. But God wants to repair our lives and

we can see only sections of the problems of the

bring them back to a certain road of well-being. human race. Many people do not appreciate the complex problems of the human race. There are

Some of us need our personalities to be

several situations in our lives that need the

repaired. Some of us need our hearts to be

touch of God. What is God trying to heal? What healed. Others need their bodies to be healed.

is he repairing and fixing? Divine healing

We need to preach about healing because

covers all the aspects of healing. The following healing is a major part of the gospel. Without it, is a short list of some of the aspects of divine the Church is not the Church. It is something

healing.

else. Remember, that when John sent to ask

Jesus whether He was the Messiah, He told

them to describe the miracles they saw to John.

1. DIVINE HEALING AFFECTS BIRTH DEFECTS

“And John calling unto him two of his disciples

AND GENETIC DISORDERS.

sent them to Jesus, saying, Art thou he that

should come? or look we for another? Then

And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which

Jesus answering said unto them, Go your way,
was blind from his birth. And his disciples asked and tell
John what things ye have seen and
him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or
heard; how that the blind see, the lame walk,
his parents, that he was born blind? John 9:1-2. the lepers
are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead There are many
illnesses we fight which are
are raised, to the poor the gospel is preached.”
simply inherited from our fathers. For instance, (Luke
7:19,22). All pastors should be able to
diseases like hypertension, diabetes, asthma,
say, "Go and tell them that the blind are seeing, sickle cell
disease, mental disorders, mental
the deaf are hearing, and the lepers are being
retardation etc. are received effortlessly by
cleansed. That is the sign that authenticates the children
from their fathers and mothers.

genuineness of the calling of God. I spoke to a Through no fault of theirs, people wake up to

woman who had attended a meeting conducted

the realities that they have inherited conditions by the Prophet Braham, a great man of God.

and illnesses that they did not contribute to. In When it was her turn in the healing line, she

the ministry of Jesus, you find healings of

stood in front of him and he ministered to her.

conditions that were from birth. God's power of She told me how she heard a sound like the

healing can save you from inherited illnesses.

purring of an engine by the side of the prophet

as he ministered to her. The prophet often

spoke of the presence of an angel as he

2. DIVINE HEALING AFFECTS EMOTIONAL

ministered.

ILLNESSES.

The prophet said to her, "You couldn't have a
"The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he
child, go home and have your baby." She went and
anointed me to preach the gospel to the
home and she had the child. She had been
poor; he had sent me to heal the
married for years and had been unable to have
brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the
a child. A year later, she gave birth to that child. captives,
and recovering of sight to the blind, to And that is the only
child she ever had. There
set at liberty them that are bruised" (Luke 4:18). is real
power available for miracles and
healings!

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 223

INTERPRETING "JEHOVAH ROPHE" / 223

Surprisingly, Jesus' reference to healing in

41:4) Sin has an effect on our spiritual well

this Scripture is not about healing heart failure being. Sin affects your soul. All of us have

(congestive cardiac failure) or heart attacks

sinned at one time or the other. There are some (cardiac arrest).

people who can't sleep because of their sins.

God brings healing for all your mistakes. God

Jesus' healing ministry specifically mentioned

heals all our diseases and now He is saying that the healing of the broken-hearted. The brokenHe is going to heal your soul. He's going to heal hearted are people with emotional problems. To

your inner man. Some of us are emotionally

have a broken heart is to suffer from deep

disturbed. Some of us suffer from the

disappointment. To have a broken heart is to

disappointments of men. You cry out, "My soul, have a

devastating experience that leaves a

my soul, why art thou perturbed?" God is

person without hope, faith or love.

saying, "I am the one who will heal your

The Greek word for broken heart is "santribo" innermost parts."

and it means "to be shattered". Our lives are full Did you know that the psychiatrist is the

of shattered dreams and hopes. Christ came

doctor with fewest answers? Almost every

into the world to save men from their shattered

mental patient is given something to make him

dreams and aspirations. He healeth the broken

calm down and sleep. The psychiatrists know

in heart, and bindeth up their wounds. (Psalm

very little about why these mental conditions

147:3).

develop. But God reaches to the innermost parts

What does it mean to have a broken heart?

and brings about healing. Medicine cannot do

Broken hearts result from disappointments.

it. But God has a way of healing that

Sometimes a man promises to marry a lady but

disappointment and restoring the soul. "He

disappoints her. This man may end up marrying

restoreth my soul..." (Psalm 23:3). I remember

someone else. Many ladies are devastated by

meeting a man who said, "I'll never trust

the twists and turns of unfaithful and lying men. another woman." I asked him why, and he

What you hoped would never happen is what

answered, "One day, I went out and came home has happened. God is healing any

unexpectedly in the middle of the night." He disappointment you have. He is repairing your

said to me, "I found my wife in my bed with heart. He is healing all disappointments.

another man. Both of them were completely

Sometimes you apply for a job and get

naked." He told me, "I exercised self-control, interviewed. It seems as if you were just about but I could have killed them both. I drove them to get the job but for some reason you were not

out of the house without their clothes and called able to get it. If you allow God to heal your

the police." As I talked to this man, I realized disappointment, you will one day look back and

that his heart was very disturbed. He could not thank God for taking you through. He is also

relate normally to women anymore. He hated

healing the hearts of all those who have lost

all women and had decided never to get

their positions in life. Sometimes you lose a
married. There are many men like that. There
position in life and this affects your finances, are also many
women who cannot relate
your comforts and the quality of your family life. normally to
men because of what they've been
God is healing the hearts of such people.
through. God can give you healing and change
you on the inside. I'm a doctor myself. The
medicines that psychiatrists give often only

3. DIVINE HEALING TAKES AWAY THE EFFECTS

sedate the patient or improve their mood. But

OF SIN.

there is no real healing for the psychological and emotional
problem. But God introduces himself

"I said, LORD, be merciful unto me: heal my

as a healer in the book of Exodus. "And said, If soul; for I
have sinned against thee" (Psalm

/ CHAPTER 23

thou wilt diligently hearken to the voice of the saved from behavioural patterns that were

LORD thy God, and wilt do that which is right in useless and self-destructive.

his sight, and wilt give ear to his

commandments, and keep all his statutes, I will

put none of these diseases upon thee, which I

5. DIVINE HEALING CURES US FROM THE

have brought upon the Egyptians: for I am the

EFFECTS OF DEATH.

LORD that healeth thee" (Exodus 15:26). He

said, "I am the Lord your doctor, the Lord your

"...but the sorrow of the world worketh death"

healer, the Lord your physician." God is

(2 Corinthians 7:10). When tragedy strikes,

introducing Himself to you as a healer. Will you there is a sense of uneasiness and fear that is

receive Him as your healer? Will you receive

difficult to shake off. There is a sinking feeling Him as your doctor and as your physician? He

that is difficult to get rid of. The heart is sick will heal your soul. He is Jehovah Rophe.

and broken when a loved one is suddenly and

tragically plucked away. Only God can heal the

futility, depression and heartache that are

4. DIVINE HEALING AFFECTS OUR BEHAVIOUR.

associated with death. Many people do not recover from the death of a loved one. Some

“And when he was come out of the ship,

live in constant bitterness and depression for

immediately there met him out of the tombs a

the rest of their lives. Indeed, only God can heal man with an unclean spirit, Who had his

such feelings of hopelessness and uselessness.

dwelling among the tombs; and no man could

bind him, no, not with chains" (Mark 5:2,3). My psychiatry lecturer taught me that most people

6. DIVINE HEALING CURES US FROM THE

have some amount of abnormal behaviour.

EFFECTS OF FUTILITY.

Sometimes people do not have full-blown

"Vanity of vanities, saith the Preacher, vanity of manifestations of madness but there is some

vanities; all is vanity" (Ecclesiastes 1:2). The amount of abnormal behaviour in their lives.

uselessness of life is something that God takes

Today, a whole range of words and definitions

away by his power and his anointing.

have been developed in order to adequately

Sometimes you look at life and ask what it's all describe the varied levels of behavioural

about. You find yourself struggling and

dysfunction. Some people are said to be

unhappy. We often think that when you get

eccentric, which is a polite description of an odd, certain things like cars, marriage etc. everything queer, off-centre, erratic and strange person.

will be okay. However, every man will come to

One of the commonest problems is fear or

the same conclusion that Solomon did: vanity of paranoia. Many fearful people live abnormal

vanities, all is vanity. Indeed all is vanity. Life lives because of various fears they constantly

on this earth can be defined as building a series entertain.

of sandcastles that are soon washed away. Have

you ever wondered why rich western nations

Others are depressed to varying degrees at
have the highest suicide rates? The emptiness
different times. Some people suffer from rage
and hollowness of riches stares them in the face disorders,
sexual disorders, personality
and they know that Solomon was right. All is
disorders, delusions, hallucinations, mania, and vanity.
Many kill themselves because there is no ultimately
schizophrenia, which is full-blown
meaning to this life. God's power heals us of
madness. Most of us live between the ranges of
the futility of this life.

normalcy and full-blown madness. Divine
healing tackles the full range of problems that
afflict us. Through the Word of God, we are

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 225

7. HE WILL PERMANENTLY HEAL THE NATIONS

in my life and ministry. Just believe that you will **OF THE WORLD.**

receive these miracles in your life too.

“And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, Most people think there is healing power

clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of when they see manifestations of the Spirit. They God and of the Lamb. In the midst of the street only believe in the presence of the power of God of it, and on either side of the river, was there when they see people fall and shake. The power

the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of

of God works through faith. Follow your faith.

fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and

the leaves of the tree were **FOR THE HEALING**

1. HEALINGS

DO

NOT

DEPEND

ON

OF THE NATIONS” (Revelation 22:1,2).

MANIFESTATIONS OF THE SPIRIT. HEALING

Many nations need healing. Rwanda needs

DEPENDS ON YOUR FAITH.

healing and so does Burundi. Sierra Leone

needs healing. During the civil war in Sierra

Walk by faith, and do not link healing to the

Leone, rebels cut off the hands of many

presence of manifestations of the Spirit.

civilians. Since the Liberian civil war over ten I have had meetings where there were strong

years ago, there is still no electricity in the

manifestations of the Spirit but no healings.

capital city, Monrovia. Nigeria is divided.

Recently at one of our Camp Meetings, I

Northern Nigeria has become an Islamic region.

ministered under a strong anointing. At a point, There is tension between the north, the south

I was so tired that I had to sit down to pray for and the eastern parts of Nigeria. It is not only the people. The anointing was so strong that

poor African countries that need healing. The

everybody who came forward to be prayed for

countries of Israel and Palestine for instance

just went down under the power. Soon, the area

need healing. America is divided by colour:

around my chair was littered with fallen bodies. black and white. India and Pakistan fight

constantly whilst many nations live with

On another occasion, I remember a man who

poverty, war and famine.

had had a stroke and was paralyzed on one side.

I did not even know that he was in the church
Thank God that he has leaves that will heal
service. This man had actually lost his job
these devastated nations. It is clear that no
because of his paralysis. The power of God was
political, economic or military remedy can ever
very strong at this miracle service. He was not heal the
nations of the world. The Bible says the even aware that the
healing power of God was
leaves will be shed to the nations to bring about working in
him. He just realized that he could
a permanent healing.

move his leg and arm again when he waved at
someone on his way home. The power of God

HEALINGS AND MANIFESTATIONS

moved his body. I want to tell you that Jesus is alive!

"Bless the LORD, O my soul: and all that is

within me, bless his holy name. Bless the

A M

Miracle H

Healing

LORD, O my soul, and forget not all his benefits: I love to tell the story of a 31 year old lady

Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth

who received a powerful miracle healing. She

all thy diseases" (Psalm 103:1-3). As a pastor

got married in 1991, and had her first

and also as a doctor, I can tell you that we need pregnancy in 1993 that turned out to be an

the healing touch of God. As you come before

ectopic pregnancy. She was operated upon and

the presence of the Lord, your heart must be

her right fallopian tube was cut off on the 1st of open to receive healing for your diseases and

August 1993. She had a second pregnancy in

ailments. I have seen many miracles of healing 1994 that was also an ectopic pregnancy but

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 226

226

/ CHAPTER 23

this time on the left side. She was operated on on the 26th of September, 1998 to hold another

and part of the left tube was cut off (the doctors Miracle Service in the same church, an excited

tried to save a part of the tube). In 1995, she and overjoyed Patricia Haborone came up stage

had a third ectopic pregnancy! She was

with her miracle baby, to give this testimony of operated on and the doctors still tried to save

what God had done for her. She named the

the tube. In the first week of August 1996, she child "Odirile", which means-"He (God) has had a fourth ectopic

pregnancy and this time she made it!"!

rest of the left tube was taken off. Her doctor You know, just like the woman with the issue

then told her that the only way she could have a of blood, Patricia felt something.

child was by a test-tube baby or by adoption.

Being a doctor, I would have given the same recommendation.

2. IT IS POSSIBLE TO FEEL THE POWER OF

A year later, during a Miracle Service I held at **GOD AND THE UNCTION OF GOD.**

the Grace Bible Church-Soweto, South Africa,

God did a wonderful miracle for Patricia. During Somebody might ask, "What is that feeling like?" the ministration, I asked all those who were sick It is very much like a normal feeling because it to place their hands where their illnesses were. is a feeling. The supernatural and the natural

Patricia placed her hand on her stomach. Her

are almost the same. I was preaching about the

husband was not sitting with her at that time so supernatural power when Patricia felt the

he ran to her to make sure she was praying. He

anointing. When some people feel the anointing,

thought she would not pray about their situation they dismiss it as something natural. I see God because it looked so hopeless.

healing your barrenness and turning it into

fertility. Believe it and receive it in Jesus' name. Patricia said, that she felt she was the only

one being spoken to. She testified that when

Hear the voice of the Spirit ringing in your

she placed her hand on her abdomen, she felt

heart and telling you that you are no longer

the power of God coming all over her. She said

barren but now you are bearing a child. He is

the sensation she felt was difficult to describe telling you that your rivers have been healed so but she knew within

herself at that moment,

that you can be fruitful. Just receive it and take that God had touched her! The best description

it as your own because God is doing it for you.

she could give of the healing power was a

God is healing your finances right now. Poverty feeling of "sweet pain".

is being replaced by dignity. Your dignity is

being restored in Jesus' name. God is bringing

After this healing experience, she went to see

you honour. He is fixing for you what has been

her Gynaecologist (the leader of the team of

spoilt all these years. God is repairing the

doctors who operated on her), claiming that she

waters of your life and the rivers of your home. was pregnant. She was driven away by the

Thank God for the healing anointing.

doctor who told her that she needed to see a psychiatrist! This doctor told her she was developing a mental problem because he knew it was not possible for her to get pregnant. But Patricia was so sure that she was pregnant, and she went to see other doctors. It was eventually proved that the impossible had happened: she was actually pregnant! There is no medical explanation for this miracle because a woman cannot conceive normally if she does not have fallopian tubes. When I returned to South Africa Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 227

The Purposes of Healing

24

“Then began he to upbraid the cities

REASONS WHY GOD DOES

wherein most of his mighty works were

MIRACLES TODAY

done, because they repented not" (Matthew 11:20).

1. God heals so that His glory is revealed.

6. God does miracles to authenticate His

"When Jesus heard that, he said, This servants.

sickness is not unto death, but for the glory

"Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of of God, that the Son of God might be

Nazareth, a man approved of God among glorified thereby" (John 11:4).

you by miracles and wonders and signs,

2. God heals so that His works will be

which God did by him in the midst of you, as

manifested.

ye yourselves also know: Acts 2:22. Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed “Jesus answered, Neither hath this man not: the works that I do in my Father's name, sinned, nor his parents: but that the works they bear witness of me” (John 10:25). of God should be made manifest in him” (John 9:3).

7. God does miracles in order to destroy the works of the devil.

3. God heals to confirm the preaching of His Word.

“He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For “And he said unto them, Go ye into all the

this purpose the Son of God was manifested,
world, and preach the gospel to every
that he might destroy the works of the devil”
creature. And these signs shall follow them
(1 John 3:8).

that believe ... they shall lay hands on the
sick, and they shall recover” (Mark 16:

8. God does miracles to announce the arrival of
15,17,18).

the Kingdom of God.

4. God heals in order to help people believe in

“And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom
Him.

of heaven is at hand. Heal the sick, cleanse
the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils:

“Believe me that I am in the Father, and the

freely ye have received, freely give”

Father in me: or else believe me for the very
(Matthew 10:7,8).

works' sake” (John 14:11).

9. God does miracles so that more people will

5. God does healing miracles in order to help
attend church and follow His servants.

people repent and change their ways.

“And a great multitude followed him, because

227

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 228

228

/ CHAPTER 24

they saw his miracles which he did on them

UNDERSTANDING WHY SOME ARE

that were diseased” (John 6:2).

NOT HEALED

The Reasons Why God Does Not Bother

There are some common misconceptions that
to Heal Everyone

exist about the healing ministry. Without
understanding these, they will linger in our

1. Many people believe in the Word of God
subconscious minds and influence our thinking.
even without seeing miracles.

“Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou

1. GOD

IS

NOT

TRYING

TO

MAKE

hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are

EVERYBODY BELIEVE.

they that have not seen, and yet have believed”

(John 20:29).

It is true that God heals so that people will

2. Some people (but not all) believe when they

believe. But on the other hand, there are people see miracles.

who believe the Word of God without seeing

anything. “Jesus saith unto him, Thomas,

“Then many (not all) of the Jews which came

because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed:

to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus

blessed are they that have not seen, and yet

did, believed on him" (John 11:45).

have believed" (John 20:29).

3. Some people do not believe even when they

There are many people who don't see any
see miracles.

miracle but believe in God. But there are some

"But though he had done so many miracles

people who have to see a sign before they

before them, yet they believed not on him"

believe. Maybe there are people who have to be
(John 12:37).

on their deathbeds before they believe in God.

Some people have to lose everything before they

4. Some people even hate you after they see

succumb to God's love. There are people who
miracles.

only get saved in prison. But you don't have to

“If I had not done among them the works

wait for that. “Blessed are those who have not which none other man did, they had not had sin:

seen any of these things but yet they believe.

but now have they both seen and hated both me

The reality is that not everyone who sees
and my Father” (John 15:24).

miracles believes in God. Then many of the
Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the

5. People require different catalysts to help
things which Jesus did, believed on him. But
them believe.

some of them went their ways to the Pharisees,
“For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks
and told them what things Jesus had done”

seek after wisdom" (1 Corinthians 1:22).

(John 11:45,46). Only a few people believe in

God when they see miracles. It would be nice if 6. The chosen method to bring salvation and

there were many more miracles but the fact is

repentance is preaching and not healing.

that miracles are only going to add a few more

"For after that in the wisdom of God the world

people to the faith.

by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the

foolishness of preaching to save them that

2. S

believe" (1 Corinthians 1:21).

OME PEOPLE DO NOT BELIEVE NO MATTER

WHAT THEY SEE.

They can see the dead rise before their eyes and yet they will still not believe. Abraham told the Dag Heward-Mills

THE PURPOSES OF HEALING / 229

rich man: "If they hear not Moses and the
therefore not in a hurry to impress anyone. I
prophets, neither will they be persuaded,
know that there are people who will still not
though one rose from the dead" (Luke 16:31). In believe
what I preach even if they see an angel
fact, some people will hate you because of the
appear by my side as I preach. I heard of a man miracles
they see. There are some people who
of God who had fire appear over his head in a
hate me because I preach the truth.
halo when he was preaching. Do you think that
Look at this Scripture: "Then again the
everybody believed in his ministry? Certainly

Pharisees also asked him how he had received not.

his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see. Therefore

3. WE MUST UNDERSTAND THEN THAT

said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of **MIRACLES OR NO MIRACLES, THE WORK OF**

God, because he keepeth not the sabbath day.

GOD STILL GOES ON.

Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was a division among

Those who will believe will believe with or

them. They say unto the blind man again, What

without the miracles. That explains why one of

sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine

the greatest evangelists of our time, Billy

eyes? He said, He is a prophet. But the Jews did Graham,
can preach to large crowds of people
not believe concerning him, that he had been
without any miracle occurring. The Bible says
blind, and received his sight, until they called that people
are saved by the foolishness of
the parents of him that had received his sight.
preaching and not by the stupefying nature of
And they asked them, saying, Is this your son,
miracles. "For after that in the wisdom of God
who ye say was born blind? how then doth he
the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased
now see? His parents answered them and said,
God by the foolishness of preaching to save
We know that this is our son, and that he was
them that believe" (1 Corinthians 1:21).

born blind: But by what means he now seeth,
we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we
know not: he is of age; ask him: he shall speak

4. PREACHING IS GOD'S METHOD FOR

for himself. These words spake his parents,
SALVATION.

because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had
agreed already, that if any man did confess that God has
determined that people should be
he was Christ, he should be put out of the
saved by preaching and not by miracles. Dear
synagogue. Therefore said his parents, He is of minister of
God, keep on preaching; just keep on age; ask him. Then
again called they the man
preaching! Evangelise and tell the truth
that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the
because it is the method by which God has

praise: we know that this man is a sinner. He determined that people should be saved. We answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or have miracle services in my church. We see no, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas God doing miracles.

"I was blind, now I see" (John 9:15-25).

We witness the power of God moving but we

The miracle Jesus did, however, brought

know that God is not trying to take away our

about a surprising division. You would have

common sense. We know that He is not trying

thought that a classic miracle that could not be to take away medicine. We know that He is not

disputed (the healing of a man born blind) would trying to displace doctors. Above all we know

make everybody believe. If God was trying to

that He is not replacing the need for powerful
make everybody believe by miracles then He
preaching. I believe that God has His reasons for failed
here. The fact is that no matter what God healing.
does, certain people will never believe. God is Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 230

230

/ CHAPTER 24

Decide today to allow preaching to affect you.

5. GOD IS NOT TRYING TO ERADICATE

Decide to believe the preaching of the Word.

SICKNESSES FROM THE WORLD.

“And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a
voice from the four horns of the golden altar
Some people think that God is trying to
which is before God, Saying to the sixth angel

eradicate sickness from the world through
which had the trumpet, Loose the four angels
preachers. God is not trying to remove the
which are bound in the great river Euphrates.
diseases of this world through anointed

And the four angels were loosed, which were
ministers. His anointed apostles and prophets
prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month,
are not agents for the eradication of all known
and a year, for to slay the third part of men.

illnesses. If that were so, then God has failed in And the
number of the army of the horsemen
his quest to do so.

were two hundred thousand thousand: and I

I want you to read this passage: "Now Peter
heard the number of them. And thus I saw the

and John went up together into the temple at

horses in the vision, and them that sat on them, the hour of prayer, being the ninth hour. And a having breastplates of fire, and of jacinth, and certain man lame from his mother's womb was

brimstone: and the heads of the horses were as

carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the the heads of lions; and out of their mouths

temple which is called Beautiful, to ask alms of issued fire and smoke and brimstone. By these

them that entered into the temple; Who seeing

three was the third part of men killed, by the

Peter and John about to go into the temple

fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone,

asked an alms. And Peter, fastening his eyes

which issued out of their mouths. For their

upon him with John, said, Look on us. And he

power is in their mouth, and in their tails: for gave heed unto

them, expecting to receive

their tails were like unto serpents, and had

something of them. Then Peter said, Silver and

heads, and with them they do hurt. And the rest gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: of the men which were not killed by these

In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up

plagues yet repented not of the works of their

and walk. And he took him by the right hand,

hands, that they should not worship devils, and

and lifted him up: and immediately his feet and

idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, ankle bones received strength. And he leaping

and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear,

up stood, and walked, and entered with them

nor walk: Neither repented they of their

into the temple, walking, and leaping, and

murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their

praising God. And all the people saw him

fornication, nor of their thefts" (Revelation 9:13 walking and praising God: And they knew that it 21). As you can see, the people in this Scripture was he which sat for alms at the Beautiful gate

refused to repent in spite of all that happened to of the temple: and they were filled with wonder

them. God knows that people will not repent

and amazement at that which had happened

even when they see certain things. This is

unto him. And as the lame man which was

unfortunate but it's real. We need to believe the healed held Peter and John, all the people ran

preaching of the Word when we hear it. We do

together unto them in the porch that is called

not have to look for signs before we believe. I Solomon's, greatly wondering. And when Peter

will never forget a certain man I visited on his saw it, he

answered unto the people, Ye men of

deathbed. He was about forty years old. He told Israel, why marvel ye at this? or why look ye so me that if God would give him a second chance,

earnestly on us, as though by our own power or

he would leave everything and serve him. But

holiness we had made this man to walk?" (Acts

it was too late. The miracle healing power of

3:1-12).

God does not exist to eradicate sickness from

this world.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 231

THE PURPOSES OF HEALING / 231

You will notice that this man had been laid at

seen the Father." "...he that hath seen me hath this Beautiful Gate of the temple for many years. seen the Father..." (John 14:9). What we saw

The Bible says he had been lame from his

Jesus do reveals what the Father is doing. If you mother's womb. His family and relatives had

want to understand God, understand Jesus.

carried him there many times to ask alms from

those who entered the temple. A few weeks

earlier, Jesus himself had been walking through

7. JESUS IS NOT TRYING TO HEAL EVERYBODY.

this Beautiful Gate of the temple. He had

BUT HE IS TRYING TO SAVE EVERY SOUL.

preached in this temple many times. Why didn't

Jesus heal this man himself? Why didn't Jesus

Jesus gave His life for the whole world. He

eradicate all diseases from Jerusalem? If God is invited everyone to Heaven. Your life on this

trying to eradicate illnesses from the world, why earth is very transient anyway. The Bible says, did Jesus not wipe out all crippling diseases

"For God so loved the world that he gave his only when He was here? Obviously, God does not begotten son that whosoever believeth in Him seem to have that goal.

should not perish but have everlasting life" (John 3:16). Everlasting life does not depend on I have watched as many people go back from your kidney, liver, your blood, your skin, eye, miracle services still sick. I remember watching brain or leg.

a programme on CNN when Pastor Benny Hinn was being interviewed about people who do not Jesus Himself walked on this earth. He knew get healed in his miracle services. There have that there are many reasons why people are sick been documentaries that are highly critical of and there are many reasons why God heals.

Benny Hinn and Reinhard Bonnke. One of their

There are equally many reasons why God
chief criticisms was about the many people who
doesn't heal. God is trying to give you
remain unhealed at their services.

everlasting life. Jesus came to give you
everlasting life. He loves us very much and he

In London, there was even a demonstration
does not want any of us to perish. God is not

by cripples against a famous healing evangelist. trying to
replace doctors, hospitals, or medicine. If all cripples were
healed at his services, they Paul moved around with a
doctor: Luke! There

would plead for prayer and not demonstrate
were also times that Paul instructed Timothy to
against his ministry. This confusion comes

do certain things for his health's sake. "Drink no about
because we do not understand what God

longer water, but use a little wine for thy
is doing and what He is not trying to do. That
stomach's sake and thine often infirmities" (1
was Jesus' explanation about why He healed
Timothy 5:23). Jesus did not close down the
only one man at the Pool of Bethesda. "Then
Bethesda Hospital. Neither did He say it wasn't answered
Jesus and said unto them, Verily,
a necessary centre.

verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but
what he seeth the Father do: for

what things soever he doeth, these also doeth

8. GOD IS NOT AGAINST MEDICINE.

the Son likewise" (John 5:19,20).

Unfortunately, extreme faith teachings have
given the impression that God is against

6. DO NOT BE DISAPPOINTED WHEN GOD DOES

medicine. They have left us with the impression **NOT HEAL EVERYONE.**

that God would like to replace all medical personnel with pastors. They left us with a

Do not be angry with God when only one out of

feeling that to take medicine was sinful or

several sick people is healed. Jesus said, "I and unspiritual. For instance, there was a time

my Father are one, and he that has seen me has

when many people were being healed through

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 232

232

/ CHAPTER 24

the faith revival. At that time, many ministers shouldn't pretend to know everything because

would not touch medicine. It was unheard of for we do not.

We definitely do not understand

a truly spiritual person to use medicine.

everything because we are looking through a

glass. "For now we see through a glass, darkly; I heard of a church in which over forty-five

but then face to face: now I know in part; but

people died because they refused to take

then shall I know even as also I am known" (1

medicine. There were little children who

Corinthians 13:12).

needed medication, but because of their parents'

belief in faith healing, they rejected all medicine All this does not mean that God doesn't heal.

for their children. Eventually, the pastor himself He does heal and if you believe in him you will

became ill but refused medication. By and by,

actually see people being healed. You will see

he was brought to church in a wheel chair, still miracles!
You will witness the power of God in

refusing medical help until he died. This kind of
manifestation! We have to understand the

thing throws the healing ministry into

balance between medical science and God's

confusion. We all tend to move away from an

power.

area of confusion. This is why many have

turned away from the healing ministry-confusion. But there
is real healing power. In **10. THERE MUST BE A**

BALANCE BETWEEN

spite of the confusion, you cannot discount the

MEDICAL SCIENCE AND GOD'S POWER

reality of God's healing power.

God does not want you to do away with common

There are reasons why we think the way we do

sense. In the book of Genesis, chapter 3, we

now. In this textbook, I would like to help you to read the account of Adam and Eve and how they

understand the place that the power of God and

fell into sin. Adam and Eve found out that they medicine have in your life. You will understand were naked. The Lord decided to help them

the place that common sense has in your life.

because you could get sick from being

unclothed.

9. GOD IS NOT TRYING TO REPLACE

Diseases like pneumonia, common colds, skin

HOSPITALS AND DOCTORS WITH PASTORS

diseases all come from being inadequately

AND EVANGELISTS.

clothed. God began to show them how to look

after themselves. He gave them wisdom and

God gave the wisdom for medical science. Both

showed them how to use skin to make clothes

streams of healing are ordained of God and are

for themselves. That was the first thing that he not contrary to each other. I cannot explain why did when he realized that man had fallen to the

divine healing takes place the way it does. I do mercy of the elements. He knew that man was

not claim to know or understand everything. No

now going to be subject to diseases, sicknesses, one does! The Bible says the secret things

and all sorts of things that were not there before belong to the Lord but those that are revealed

the fall. "Unto Adam also and to his wife did the belong to us. "The secret things belong unto

LORD God make coats of skins, and clothed

the Lord our God: but those things which are

them" (Genesis 3:21).

revealed belong unto us and to our children for

The Bible says that Jesus Christ is the power
ever, that we may do all the words of this law”
and the wisdom of God. “But unto them which
(Deuteronomy 29:29).

are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the
Again the Scriptures tell us that we look
power of God, and the wisdom of God” (1
through a glass dimly. This means that when
Corinthians 1: 24). Jesus Christ was not just
you look through a glass, you cannot see things
powerful.

clearly. It is not everything we know and we

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 233

THE PURPOSES OF HEALING / 233

When you become a Christian, Jesus comes

2. GOD HEALS TO MANIFEST HIS WORKS.

to help you by being the power and the wisdom of God in your life.

“Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: BUT THAT THE WORKS OF GOD SHOULD BE MADE MANIFEST IN HIM”

11. CHRISTIANS BECOME UNBALANCED WHEN

(John 9:3). Sometimes the problems we have

THEY JUST TAKE THE POWER OF GOD AND

are going to lead to the greatest blessings in our **LEAVE OUT THE WISDOM.**

lives. God is going to use that thing to bring a great miracle into your life. I see that miracle You need both the power and the wisdom, if you

coming into your life! God wants to make

want to make it in this life. Medical science can manifest His works; He wants to do His work.

transplant hearts today and solve many problems. Many children would be dead from various diseases like malaria, convulsions, and

3. GOD DOES THE MIRACULOUS TO CONFIRM

measles if there were no medicines.

HIS WORD.

God has given us the wisdom to think and to

“And these signs shall follow them that believe; have common sense. One time, Jesus told His

In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall disciples to go aside and rest awhile. He told

speak with new tongues; They shall take up

them to rest. “And he said unto them, Come ye

serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest a shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the while: for there were many coming and going,

sick, and they shall recover. So then after the and they had

no leisure so much as to eat” (Mark Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up

6:31). Why did Jesus tell His disciples to rest?

into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.

There are many diseases that come from not

And they went forth, and preached everywhere,

resting. My wife is always suggesting that I

THE LORD WORKING WITH THEM, AND

rest. It is common sense to rest when you need

CONFIRMING THE WORD WITH SIGNS

to. Jesus ministered to the sick but he did

FOLLOWING. AMEN” (Mark 16:17-20). God

sensible and practical things too.

heals to confirm the Word of God that has been

preached. Miracles have a primary function of

REASONS WHY SOME ARE HEALED

confirming the preaching of the Word of God.

This is different from eradicating all the

diseases in the community. Confirming and

1. GOD HEALS TO MANIFEST HIS GLORY.

affirming a sermon preached by a pastor is quite

“When Jesus heard that, he said, THIS

different from eradicating polio, measles or

SICKNESS IS NOT UNTO DEATH, BUT FOR THE

small pox from a community.

GLORY OF GOD, that the Son of God might be

glorified thereby” (John 11:4). This verse shows **4. GOD**

DOES THE MIRACULOUS TO HELP

that God heals for His glory to be revealed.

SOME PEOPLE BELIEVE.

When we have miracles in the church, it is
because God wants us to get glimpses of His
“If I do not the works of my Father, believe me
glory. He wants us to see His power. He wants not. But if I
do, though ye believe not me,
to show us that He is the Almighty God and that
believe the works: that ye may know, and
there is no problem too big for Him to solve.
believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him”
(John 10:37,38). “Believe me that I am in the
Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the
very works' sake” (John 14:11). Some

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 234

234

/ CHAPTER 24

people just want to see a miracle so that they

Jesus preached the Word. He said He was
can believe. Such people just need a miracle.
the Bread of Life, The Way, The Truth and The
When they see the works they are utterly and
Life. God approved of Him and showed that He
completely convinced about the truth of the
was speaking the truth by performing signs and
Word.

wonders. This also explains why people fall
under the power. It is a sign. People love
miracles. People love a display of power. The

5. GOD DOES THE MIRACULOUS TO SHOW

display of power shows God's approval of the
APPROVAL OF HIS SERVANTS

man of God. They know he can shout out a
sermon but it is not that easy to conjure a

God does miracles, signs and wonders to show miracle.

His approval of the person who is preaching.

God is not trying to make pastors into doctors.

He is not trying to use the evangelist to

6. GOD DOES THE MIRACULOUS TO DESTROY

eradicate malaria, sickle cell disease,

THE WORKS OF THE DEVIL

hypertension, and diabetes from the entire

community. He does miracles to show His

“He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the approval of His servants. These miracles

devil sinneth from the beginning. For this

therefore have specific functions. God is

purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he

expressing His approval of His servants. “Ye

might destroy the works of the devil” (1 John
men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of
3:8).

Nazareth, A MAN APPROVED OF GOD AMONG

You need to understand that there is a devil

YOU BY MIRACLES AND WONDERS AND

that rules this world. This is obvious when you SIGNS, which God did by him in the midst of

look at the chaos in the world: the dictators that you, as ye yourselves also know" (Acts 2:22).

are imposed on different nations, the

How did God approve of Jesus Christ of

wickedness that is manifested, the inequalities

Nazareth? He approved of Him by miracles,

that exist in the society, the starvation, the

wonders and signs. That is the way God

hunger, the sickness, the diseases and the

approves of His servant. I've been at places,

sufferings of many people prove that the overall where I have seen God approve of me with signs

ruler is a very wicked person.

and wonders.

The Bible calls him the "god of this world". In I remember once I was at a place preaching

whom the god of this world hath blinded the

when I heard the voice of the Holy Spirit in my

minds of them which believe not, lest the light

ear.

of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the

image of God, should shine unto them" (2

He said to me, "Today, I will honour you." Corinthians 4:4).

The Lord did such wonderful miracles at this

place. He did this because people who did not

Is it not true that you judge the type of leader really honour me surrounded me. All ministers

in a nation by the things that go on in the

of God are sometimes invited to churches where
nation? There is a song we used to sing:
they are honoured. Sometimes an invitation is
He's got the whole world in His hands
just a formality from someone who thinks he
He's got the whole wide world in His hands
must invite you back. They may not really
He's got the whole world in His hands
believe in you or like you. They may not
He's got the whole world in His hands
approve of your ministry. But God can honour
His servant with miracles.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 235

THE PURPOSES OF HEALING / 235

The words of this song cannot be true

DO NOT DENY THE POWER OF GOD

because the Bible clearly says that Satan is the god of this world. The devil said that the

“Is any sick among you? let him call for the

kingdoms of this world had been handed over to

elders of the church; and let them pray over

him: “And the devil, taking him up into an high him, anointing him with oil in the name of the

mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of

Lord: And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, the world in a moment of time. And the devil

and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have

said unto him, All this power will I give thee,

committed sins, they shall be forgiven him”

and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto (James 5:14,15).

me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou The Bible teaches us in these verses what to

therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine”

do when we need healing.

(Luke 4:5-7).

Some of the kingdoms in this world are

1. G

Ghana, England, America, Iran, Kosovo, Iraq,

OD HAS THE POWER TO HEAL OUR

Sierra Leone, Israel, Nigeria, Liberia, Cameroon,
SICKNESSES.

Angola, and India. The devil showed Jesus

Unfortunately, there are some people and some

some of these kingdoms. Jesus refused to bow

churches, who do not accept, recognize, preach

to the devil and so He was not given the control about or
mention the power of God. There are

of the nations of the world. They stayed within many good
ministers who would talk about good

the hands and the clutches of the devil. God is Christian virtues like love, patience etc. but do Almighty and reigns over all things. However,

not go on to talk about the power of God.

the devil is the one that controls this earthly

world now. He said He could give it to

whomsoever He would. This is why Germany

2. THE BIBLE HAS WARNED THAT IN THE LAST

for instance, may be developed but there is also **DAYS THERE WILL BE SOME PEOPLE WHO**

a lot of unhappiness among the people.

WILL HAVE GODLINESS BUT WITHOUT

Switzerland may have a lot of money but there

POWER.

is a lot of pain, sorrow and depression there.

Of course we know that one day "the

"This know also, that in the last days perilous

kingdoms of this world will become the
times shall come. For men shall be lovers of
kingdoms of our Lord and of his Christ and he
their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud,
shall reign forever and ever, (Revelation 11:15).
blasphemers, disobedient to parents,

The devil is the one ruling the world today. He unthankful,
unholy, Without natural affection,
causes the diseases and the sicknesses in this
trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent,
world. Jesus cast out devils from many of the
fierce, despisers of those that are good, Traitors, people
that He healed. So many problems are
heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more
caused by the devil. Until you get to the root of than lovers
of God; HAVING A FORM OF
the problem you often do not get them solved.
GODLINESS, BUT DENYING THE POWER

This is why Jesus is in the healing business.

THEREOF: from such turn away" (2 Timothy

This is why we believe in healing. We can never 3:1-5).

stop believing in healing. I have seen many

According to this Scripture, those who deny

miracles in my ministry. I want to encourage

the power of God can be godly. Such people will you to believe in miracles because miracles are

preach about the love of God and will extol

real and I see miracles happening to you right

Christian virtues but be silent about the power

now! Jesus is the Sun of righteousness with

of God. I believe that the power of the Holy

healing in His wings.

Spirit is real. May I make a suggestion? Take a Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 236

/ CHAPTER 24

pair of scissors and cut out all the pages and parts of the Bible that talk about miracles. You will find out that you are left with virtually nothing. The pages of the Bible are replete with miracles.

**3. GOD IS A GOD OF MIRACLES AND POWER.
YOU CANNOT SEPARATE THE SERVICE OF
GOD FROM HIS POWER.**

In this modern age, people have gradually moved away from the power side of God. People have withdrawn and become more sceptical. As people have become more and more educated, they have moved away from the supernatural. Unfortunately, people who believe in miracles are seen as weird and unbalanced. Some have

taught that it is poverty and backwardness that make people believe in supernatural power.

Because medical science is so advanced, many have thought subconsciously that miracles are no longer needed.

Most Christians do not call for the pastor to lay hands on them or to anoint them with oil

when they are sick. We more naturally go to see a doctor. God is not against medicine. Neither is He against common sense. God is fully aware of

the development of medical science and

common sense. But He is the same yesterday,

today and forever. That means that He is still a healing Jesus, ready and capable of much

miraculous power demonstration.

Understanding the Gift of Healing

25

Him. Jesus was saying that He could

HEALING: A SPECIAL GIFT

accomplish what He had to accomplish without bowing to the devil and without going in

Many of us do not realize the link between the another way. He said that God had anointed temptation of Jesus Christ and the preaching of Him to heal the broken-hearted.

His first message in the synagogue when He said that the spirit of the Lord was upon Him.

Different Kinds of Anointing

“The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the

There are different kinds of anointing. There is poor; he

hath sent me to heal the

an anointing for healing. The healing anointing
brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the

is peculiar to the New Testament. It is a special captives,
and recovering of sight to the blind, to anointing that God
has available for His church. set at liberty them that are
bruised" (Luke 4:18). The healing anointing is a peculiar
anointing

When Jesus was taken up to the high

made available to His church. Many people

mountain, He was shown all the kingdoms of the

think that the Old and the New Testaments have

world in a moment of time. In other words, the

many miracles. However, a closer look at the

devil gave Him a vision. Now, Jesus had come

Old Testament will reveal very few healing

to this world to save us and to rescue humanity. miracles.

He was planning to reach everyone. But in a

The miracles of the Old Testament had to do

moment of time, the devil showed him all that

with the preservation of the nation of Israel. Of he was coming to suffer for. The devil said:

all the prophets, Elisha was one of the few who

"Listen, let's make a deal. I will give everything ever ministered to someone who was sick. The

to you right now. You can have it all now. There rest of them did mainly miracles that had to do

is a quicker, shorter and simpler way. You do not with the preservation in time of war. Abraham,

have to go through all the struggles you have to Isaac, Jacob, Moses and Elijah never ministered

go through with the Pharisees and Sadducees." healing to anyone. Isaiah and Jeremiah came

Jesus saw an opportunity to win the whole

around preaching and teaching. Healing did not

world but He turned it down. When He came

occur in their ministries.

out of that temptation and went to church, Jesus began to preach. His first message was, "The spirit of the Lord is upon me." Jesus was announcing that He was going to accomplish

the work He had to do (salvation of the world) by the power of the Spirit of the Lord that was upon 237

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 238

238

/ CHAPTER 25

The Ministry of Jesus Christ

people for the Kingdom. It is the opportunity for ministers to accomplish what God has called

1. HEALING: A SIGN TO JOHN THE BAPTIST

them for. It was available for the twelve

disciples and for the seventy people that Jesus

The whole Bible is supernatural but when we

sent out. It is still available for all of us through speak of

healing, we speak of the Christ. When

the Great Commission. It is for all of us if we John the Baptist sent a message to Jesus asking

will begin to know and realize what God has

if He was the Messiah, Jesus sent back a

given to us.

message saying that the blind were seeing, the

deaf were hearing and the dumb were speaking.

He said that lepers were being cleansed, and the 1.

GOD'S STRATEGY AND METHOD FOR

dead were being raised. He knew that John the

REACHING THE WORLD

Baptist would understand that the healings

were the sign of Christ. He knew that when that Once, when election results were released from

message was delivered to John the Baptist, He

the different regions of my country, I realized

would know that a new era had begun. The sign

how many millions of souls lived in remote

of the Messiah was clear. The Old Testament

regions. God's heart is bleeding for lost souls. ministers predicted the healing anointing on

There is no need for us to bow to political

Jesus but none of them actually ministered

pressure to provide social services for the

healing. That is why Jesus announced that He

nation. It is not the provision of social services had been anointed by the Spirit of God to preach like schools and universities that make us useful and to heal.

to the nation. The church is a special institution anointed by God with special power and

anointing. By that power and anointing, we will 2.

HEALING: THE CLOSING PROPHECY OF

be able to do what God has called us to do. He **THE OLD TESTAMENT**

has chosen preaching, teaching and healing as

His method for reaching lost humanity.

“But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun
of righteousness arise with healing in his wings”
(Malachi 4:2). The Old Testament closed with a

2. THE OPPORTUNITY FOR THE CHURCH TO

prediction of healing. The prophet Malachi saw
COME OUT OF OBSCURITY.

hundreds of years into the future and predicted
that there would arise the Sun of righteousness
Jesus was brought up in an insignificant
who would be the light of the world.

carpenter's home, but God gave Him something
special. What would bring Jesus out of

Jesus said, "I am the light of the world." But obscurity?
What would make anyone listen to

how would we know who the real Messiah was?

his message? What could Jesus do without

The prophet said he would have healing in his

modern methods of advertisement? The

wings! Is it any wonder to you that the main

healing anointing is what brought Jesus out of

characteristic of Jesus' ministry was healing?

obscurity. The healing anointing is our chance

to rise out of obscurity. Jesus never wrote a

THE HEALING ANOINTING IS OUR

book, travelled in a car, took a train or plane but he became

famous. The Bible says that, "His **ONLY CHANCE**

fame spread abroad", and the whole city

gathered at his door. If we want the cities of this The

healing anointing is our only chance to

world to gather at the door of our crusades, then reach the

world for Jesus Christ. It is our only we need the healing

anointing. If we want the

chance to reach every kindred, nation and
cities of this world to gather in our churches,

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 239

UNDERSTANDING THE GIFT OF HEALING / 239

then the healing anointing is that key. The

asking for prayer for their pathetic and often

healing anointing will bring the whole city to our hopeless
conditions. People have needs and the

door so that we can tell them about Jesus Christ. healing
anointing will meet those needs.

3. HEALING FOR THE BROKEN-HEARTED.

4. THE HEALING ANOINTING MAKES THE

CHURCH OF GOD RELEVANT.

Jesus said that He was anointed to heal the

broken-hearted. There is more to having a

"To be relevant", means "to be important". We broken-

heart than breaking up with your

become relevant to the world when the healing

boyfriend or girlfriend. Broken hearts are

anointing is in operation. It is when the broken caused by disappointments in general. Many hearted are restored and the poor have the

people have been surprised by what life has

good news preached to them that we become

brought them. People live as though everything

relevant. Evil spirits torment people and bring is okay but they are bleeding, disappointed and

fear into their lives. The healing anointing will hurting inside. Many of man's problems cannot

deliver people from evil spirits. Many African

be cured by drugs, or by the psychologist or by

nations are ruled by fear and superstition.

the psychiatrist. Many people need a touch from Through the healing anointing, the curses are

God to give them hope. God is in the business of broken and healing comes. Many tribes in

coming into your life to heal your broken heart. Africa understand supernatural power.

He is ready to lift you from where you are and take you forward!

If you have the healing anointing, you can stand before natives who dabble in evil

Many politicians wonder why people keep supernatural power and challenge them.

coming to church because they think that the

However, if you just have a little Sunday school pastors are just taking money from the masses.

sermon, you will be no match for the witches

They wonder why the people do not see through and wizards of our time. There is so much

the supposed deception. You see, the problems

superstition in Africa. There are rivers where

that people have are often not apparent. People fishing is not allowed and dams cannot be built

are smiling on the outside but are crying on the because of the belief in the presence of gods.

inside. Those who criticize the church don't

Sometimes people are not even allowed to fetch

know what the church does for people. I

water from these rivers. People are afraid of so remember watching an interview of a famous

many different things. Sometimes out of

healing evangelist on television. He was asked

superstition, we fear to put on certain clothes at many questions about his salary, his house and

certain times. You cannot put streetlights on

his car. The talk show host was trying to make

certain roads because of the presence of gods

him look foolish.

who supposedly inhabit these roads. People are Then they opened the phone lines and a

afraid to use certain roads at certain times.

gentleman called in to be prayed for. Suddenly

They are afraid to turn off the lights. People are the atmosphere changed. The caller had cancer

sometimes afraid to travel on Fridays. There is and was dying. He wanted the evangelist to

a kind of superstition surrounding travelling on pray for him. All the cynical questions that the the 13th of any particular month. If the 13th

host had asked meant nothing now. The

falls on a Friday, it makes it worse. Even

television host was faced with a desperate,

airlines are aware of this. There is no seat

weepy caller who urgently needed help. Only

number thirteen in many aircrafts. There is no

the evangelist could offer that help. The

thirteenth floor in many apartment buildings.

relevance of the evangelist's ministry was

One day, I was travelling on an aircraft. We had obvious to all. More people kept calling and

a rough landing and the pilot apologized for that Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 240

240

/ CHAPTER 25

and explained that the reason for the rough

problems of infertility bring are beyond

landing was because it was Friday, the 13th.

comprehension." We are all so afraid of snakes Many
people live in fear. The church becomes

that we do not even want to go near them when

relevant when it has something to offer. We

they are caged. We all have goose pimples when

become relevant when we have the answers to

we even see a snake on television. To see a

people's needs. No government can offer what

woman willingly permit a snake to be inserted

the church offers through the power of the Holy

into her body in order to have a baby, shows the Spirit. No politician can give what the church extent of her need.

People have asked me why I

gives. Neither teachers nor medical doctors can left the medical profession to preach. They

give what the church gives. Only God can heal

wonder if I am doing anything important as a

our broken hearts and save us. Every part of the preacher. What I do today is far more important world needs the healing anointing.

than practising medicine full time. If Jesus

Our relevance as a church does not come

could have helped the world better through

about by starting schools or universities. The

medicine, He would have been a doctor. But He

government is the one supposed to provide

was a preacher and that should tell you

education. When the church does provide

something.

education, it must be seen as assistance that we Jesus
announced that He had come to set at

give to the nation. The salvation of mankind is liberty them
that were bruised. A bruised

provided through the cross of Jesus Christ. We

person is someone who is hurt. Life is full of have been
charged with the Great Commission.

pain, hurt and disappointments, and Jesus'

No other institution has been charged with this healing
anointing is to heal the hurt and the

Great Commission. Our relevance comes from

bruised. "The Spirit of the Lord is upon me,

preaching and teaching about Jesus. Our

because he hath anointed me to preach the

relevance comes from healing the sick. It comes gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the

from casting out devils.

brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the

captives and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised" (Luke 4:18). **5. THE CAPTIVES**

ARE SET FREE

People are possessed with devils. One day, I saw **6. THE BASIC NEEDS OF MAN ARE MET.**

a friend of mine who was high on drugs. I just

felt so sad. These problems cannot be solved

In the Old Testament, Elisha went to heal the

except for the healing anointing. It is the only waters of a town because there was something

thing that can deliver people from drugs,

wrong with the water. "And the men of the city

alcohol, and immorality. Many people are
said unto Elisha, Behold, I pray thee, the
bound. They can't be free. The healing
situation of this city is pleasant, as my lord
anointing will set people free from everything
seeth: but the water is naught, and the ground
that keeps them in bondage. The healing
barren. And he said, Bring me a new cruse, and
anointing will bring children to a woman. What
put salt therein. And they brought it to him.
a woman goes through when she cannot have a
And he went forth unto the spring of the waters, child is
agonizing.
and cast the salt in there, and said, Thus saith the LORD, I
have healed these waters; there
I happened to watch a documentary in which

shall not be from thence any more death or

a snake was inserted into a woman as a

barren land. So the waters were healed unto this treatment for infertility. She had been to see a day, according to the saying of Elisha which he

fetish priest for help and this is the kind of help spake" (2 Kings 2:19-22).

they had offered her to enable her to have a

child. I said to myself, "The difficulties that the Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 241

UNDERSTANDING THE GIFT OF HEALING / 241

Water defines your living conditions. When

rubble. He was asked how he had been able to

God heals your waters, He is meeting the basic

stay alive under the collapsed building for such needs of your life. God is showing you that

a long time. He replied, "I am a man of strong there are many needy people in this world.

willpower. When I determine to do something,

There are people who have no treatment for
nothing can stop me. I am able to stay on

their sicknesses. In poor African countries,

course. I don't swerve to the left or to the right. some
women deliver their babies under trees.

I am a man of strong determination and

This is why we are anointed to preach the gospel willpower
and so I refused to die. I was

to the poor. The poor of this world far

determined to live and that is why I believe I

outnumber the rich. God is extending our

stayed alive."

hearts to the poor. You cannot go to the poor of His wife
was interviewed as well. She said,

this world and talk to them unless you have

"Well, I know my husband and I have been

some good news. They want to know how the
married to him for many years. He is a man of
gospel will practically affect their lives. How very strong
willpower. When he determines to
can they understand the doctrines of the gospel
do something, nothing can move him to the left
with all their problems, their sicknesses and
or to the right. He is a firm man. He is a very their extreme
poverty? We need to pray for
determined person. He carries through his
more miracles. Our hearts must desire more
projects. He has a choleric personality. He
miracles; otherwise, we will continue to stay in moves
forward. He is the type who does not
our little corners having a good time while the
waver in spite of adversities. I know my man.
masses go to Hell.

I've been married to him for twenty-seven years

"Heal me, O LORD, and I shall be healed;

so I think when he determined he would live, he

save me and I shall be saved: for thou art my

just stayed alive."

praise" (Jeremiah 17: 14). The healing methods

This man's doctor was interviewed as well.

of man are greatly deficient. The fact that God He was asked, "What do you have to say about heals does not mean that he does not approve of

your patient who has survived this amazing

medical science. God is not against medicine.

experience?" He answered, "Well, I know my In fact, the intelligence that has been given to patient; he is a man of very strong willpower.

human beings to develop drugs by isolating

He has survived because willpower is very

chemicals is from God. He is the source of that important in

a patient's life. When a patient

gift.

decides to die, he dies. When he decides to live, As a doctor, I believe in medical science.⁹

he lives." Eight days later this man with the Thank God for medical science and for doctors.

strong will-power was struck with a heart

We cannot do without them. They are a part of

attack. He died instantly. Then I asked myself, us and of our lives. However, God has more in

"Where was his willpower?" It is true that the store for us than medical science. He can do

tractors and bulldozers had been able to rescue

what medical science cannot do. He does things

and save him. The doctors had been able to

which medical science cannot do. Sometimes,

resuscitate him in hospital but he was not really he does things that medical science can do. We

saved. It was just a few days more before
often don't really know what God does. All we
everyone was able to see that he had not truly
know is that he does good things. I like telling been saved
or healed. That is why we must turn
the story of a man who was saved from an
our eyes to the Lord and say, "Heal me, Oh Lord
earthquake in San Francisco. He was
and I will be healed. Save me and I will be
interviewed after his earthquake experience.
saved." It is when the Lord stretches out his He had
survived three days and nights during
hand to heal you that you will be truly healed.
the earthquake, under the building and in the
Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 242
242

6. THE HEALING ANOINTING IS THE REASON

7. ESTABLISHES THE KINGDOM OF GOD.

WHY JESUS DID NOT BOW TO THE DEVIL.

“And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto The devil offered Jesus a fast and easy way to

them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto

obtain all that he wanted. But Jesus knew that

you” (Luke 10:9). The arrival of the Kingdom of He had something that would help Him save the

God is demonstrated by the undoing of the

whole world. That was the healing anointing.

things that were done by the devil's kingdom.

This is why He ignored the devil and totally

That is why Jesus healed the sick. He undid the refused Satan's suggestion. He announced that

sicknesses that were brought on by the devil.

He was anointed when He came out of His

He cast out evil spirits, which had inhabited temptation: "The spirit of the Lord is upon me human beings. The devil has distorted nature because he has anointed me (or equipped me) to such that storms and earthquakes kill people. preach the gospel to the poor. He has equipped Jesus demonstrated his ability to stop all these me to heal, to preach deliverance, to set the distortions of nature. That is why he could captives free, to set at liberty them that are rebuke storms, walk on water and demonstrate bruised and to proclaim the acceptable year of his power over all the distortions of nature. the Lord" (Luke 4:19).

Jesus even overcame death. Before he went

Notice that Jesus always taught the Word of

to the grave himself, he raised some people
God. Remember that the Word of God is very
from the dead who had been killed by the devil.
important no matter how you minister to people.
He demonstrated that the Kingdom of God and
The Word of God must always be taught and
the Kingdom of Heaven had actually come. That
spoken. That is why I preach and teach the Word
is why Jesus sent his disciples to go and heal the of God
and do not just pray for people. People sick and inform
them that the Kingdom of God
can receive their healing when they receive the
had arrived. The sign of the new kingdom was
Word. I want you to notice Jesus' preaching
the undoing of the works of the devil. "And the topic. He
preached deliverance. We need to
seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord,

preach certain things if we are going to have even the devils are subject unto us through thy name" (Luke 10: 17).

miracles on Sundays or at weddings. They wonder why we don't preach about love during

8. P

miracle services. The Word of God is described

PRODUCES JOY

as "seed".

There is much joy when you see the power of

The kind of response you get depends on the

God manifested. You begin to get excited.

kind of seed that is sown. You do not get any

Some people do not know that the Kingdom of

response before you preach. That is why I

God is exciting. The only excitement they have
preach about the healing anointing. If I don't
is in nightclubs and in worldly pleasures. When preach
about it, we are not going to have it.

you do the work of God in his way, you

When you preach about the healing anointing,
experience such joy and excitement beyond
the anointing begins to feel free in the midst of description.
That is why the Bible says the

the people. The people receive a certain
seventy returned with joy. Demons ran and fled
understanding and perception of what the
as they prayed. Sicknesses were healed. The
healing anointing is and what it can do. They
healing anointing is our chance for a certain
are then able to receive the anointing into their level of joy
and excitement. I believe that God lives.

is bringing that rejoicing back into our midst.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 243

UNDERSTANDING THE GIFT OF HEALING / 243

9. EXTENDS

THE

INFLUENCE

OF

THE

12. THE OPPORTUNITY TO GO DEEPER WITH

PASTORAL MINISTRY.

GOD.

It is difficult to gather one hundred people in a room or under a tree. People have interesting
It is our opportunity to go deeper in God and

with God. Many of us don't know that there are

programmes to watch on television. There are

deeper things in God. The Bible says, "deep lots of things to entertain the people of today. calls unto deep". In other words, if you are not People will not just leave their pleasures to

deep you cannot reach for the deep things that

attend your boring church service. The healing

are in God. Everybody has his deep things. If

anointing is the chance for pastors to gather

your "deep" is not calling or speaking, my "deep" crowds for the glory of God.

will not respond. If the conversation we have is like "Hi" and "Bye" and "Hello", the deep part of me will not come forth to you because it is your **10. EXTENDS**

THE

INFLUENCE

OF

THE

shallow part that is coming forth to me. But

TEACHING MINISTRY.

when you relate deeply with a person, the

"deep" part in you comes forth.

It is a chance for the teaching ministry to be

taken more seriously. Many years ago, when I

When you tell a friend what is in your heart,

first came into contact with Kenneth Hagin

the deep part in the person who is listening

through his books and tapes, I took what he said responds.
That is why the Bible says, "deep very seriously because of
the supernatural

calls unto deep". As far as God is concerned, element of
his teaching. I noticed that he

people who are just relating to Him on a shallow always
shared a lot of supernatural stories when level are not going
to experience the deep

he taught the Word of God. He wrote about his

things of God. God longs for the deeper part of visions and the miracle healings at his meetings. you to begin to call out to Him. There is more These made me develop a special interest in his

to God than we know. There is more to God

other teachings. If God has called you to be a

than we see. There is more to the ministry than teacher, the healing anointing is the chance for what we are doing. There is more than just

your teaching ministry to go further than you

preaching and teaching.

have ever imagined.

God is bringing that "more" into our lives. Sometime ago, while I was in the presence of

11. THE OPPORTUNITY TO SEE GOD'S GLORY.

the Lord in a deep moment, the Lord told me

that He had given me a healing anointing. He

Thank God for preaching and teaching but the

told me He was going to use me in the healing

healing anointing is our chance for the glory of ministry because He had anointed me to heal

God. It is our opportunity to see the glory of the sick. That is why I am praying for the sick God. Jesus said, "Did I not tell you, that if you and preaching about the healing anointing.

will believe you shall see the glory of God?" That is why I have seen so many healing

"Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, miracles in my "Healing Jesus Crusades". We if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the have experienced God's power and we are going

glory of God?" (John 11:40).

deeper. The anointing is a river. People don't know that the anointing is a river. You have to We have to believe in Him. We have to

allow the river to start flowing. Until it begins encourage the healing anointing. We have to

to flow, you will never see the things contained say, "Yes, Lord." Preaching and teaching are all in the river. As it flows, different experiences part of the power of God. But I am talking about will come to you. In the end, the total picture healing now. The healing anointing is our

will be that God anointed you to do good.

chance to experience the glory of God.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 244

Healing and the Power of the Holy

Spirit

26

Once again, the Bible makes a difference

HEALING: THE POWER AND

between the anointing of the Holy Spirit and the **FIRE OF
THE HOLY SPIRIT**

power of the Holy Spirit. These two are

mentioned separately for a reason. You see,

The healing anointing is the power of the Holy

there are many other dimensions of the Holy

Spirit. It is a special aspect of the Holy Spirit's Spirit.
Perhaps one of the most prominent

work. Why do I say that? You will notice that things about the Holy Spirit is His love. The

the power and the fire of the Holy Spirit are

Bible speaks of the fruit of the spirit.

mentioned as distinct dimensions. In the book

The Bible separates the anointing and the

of Luke, Chapter 4, the Bible says that Jesus was power for you to see that they are two separate

led by the Spirit into the wilderness: "And Jesus things. Why did the Bible not just say that

being full of the Holy Spirit returned from

Jesus had been anointed with the Holy Spirit?

Jordan, and WAS LED BY THE SPIRIT into the

It's because there is a difference between having wilderness" (Luke 4:1). Jesus was "led by the the Holy Spirit and having the power of the Holy Spirit" to go into the wilderness. However, Spirit.

when He came back, the Bible says He came in

the "power of the Spirit". "And Jesus returned in Dear
pastors, teachers, elders, church leaders

THE POWER OF THE SPIRIT into Galilee: and

and whoever you are, God is showing us that

there went out a fame of him through all the

there is a power dimension to the Holy Spirit.

region round about" (Luke 4:14).

Thank God you are anointed. But God is trying

to give you both the anointing and the power.

1. T

Notice what John the Baptist said about

HE

SCRIPTURES

SHOW

A

CLEAR

Jesus. He said Jesus would have both the Holy

DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE ORDINARY

Spirit and fire. "John answered, saying unto

ANointING AND THE POWER DIMENSION OF

them all, I indeed baptize you with water; but

THE ANointING.

one mightier than I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose: he shall

Jesus went away being led by the anointing but

baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire"

returned under the power of the anointing. The Bible (Luke 3:16). Once again, you will notice that fire tells us in Acts 10:38 that God anointed Jesus Christ with is mentioned separately. There is a fire

the Holy Spirit and with power. "How God

dimension of the Holy Spirit. Fire is a type of anointed Jesus of Nazareth WITH THE HOLY

power. Jesus would have not just the anointing, GHOST

AND WITH POWER: who went about

but also the power and the fire of the anointing. doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of Every pastor can be anointed with the Holy

the devil; for God was with him” (Acts 10:38).

244

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 245

HEALING AND THE POWER OF THE HOLY SPIRIT / 245

Spirit. But every pastor can also be anointed

3. THE HOLY SPIRIT IS A SPIRIT BUT HE ALSO

with power.

**OPERATES IN THE PHYSICAL, TANGIBLE
DIMENSION.**

2. YOUR MINISTRY WILL CHANGE WHEN YOU

Sometimes, people experience the Holy Spirit at

HAVE BOTH THE HOLY SPIRIT AND THE

miracle services and even feel Him. They say

POWER OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.

things like, "I felt a cool breeze come over me." If witches and idols can speak, how much more

You can be a beautiful teacher of the Word of the Holy Spirit?

God but you can also have a power dimension to your teaching ministry. There is a fire

We are used to the love, patience, goodness dimension of ministry. The fire of the Holy

and gentleness of the Spirit. We are used to the Spirit will burn every chaff and every wicked

speaking of tongues. We are used to all these

work of the devil. That is the dimension of the things. But we need to open up to the other

anointing that God is trying to bring us into. It dimension where the Holy Spirit does things in

is the tangible dimension. It is the power and

the tangible and physical dimension.

the fire. Many of us know the fruit of the Holy It is in this dimension that you begin to see

Spirit, such as love, patience, peace and joy. We healings taking place. That is when the invisible believe that these qualities are what the Holy

becomes visible and physical changes happen.

Spirit brings to our lives. We know that He

Would there not be some sound if somebody

baptizes us and helps us to speak in tongues.

walked into a room? That is why they heard the

But there is more. I want you to understand that sound of wind when the Holy Spirit descended

the Holy Spirit came to replace Jesus. When

on the day of Pentecost. They saw tongues of

Jesus was going away, he said, "I am sending fire and they heard the sound of wind. The

somebody who is going to be with you and He is

invisible had now become visible. The
going to be another Comforter. He is going to
untouchable had now become tangible.
be with you and He is going to help you. He is
going to do the things I did" (John 16:7). Jesus listen to
people carefully when they testify at
was the first Comforter and the Holy Spirit is
miracle services. Somebody said that he heard
another Comforter.
a voice saying certain things to him. Perhaps
you are not used to such things. Possibly, you
"On the day of Pentecost, when the Holy
are outside that dimension. It is time to come
Spirit fell on the disciples, the Bible tells us that into the
power dimension of the Holy Spirit.
there was a sound. And when the day of

Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one After the sight and sound of the Holy Spirit,

accord in one place. And suddenly there came a

their bodies began to react to that dimension of sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind,

the Holy Spirit. Their tongues began to move

and it filled all the house where they were

and they started to speak in tongues. That is the sitting” (Acts 2:1,2). There is a physical

power dimension. This is an experience we read

dimension of the Holy Spirit. There is a tangible about in the Bible that is for us today.

dimension. There is a dimension in which the

There is a difference between a pastor and a

Holy Spirit moves out of the invisible, the

schoolteacher. God is going to make the

intangible, to the visible, the tangible and the difference between you and a schoolteacher

touchable.

clear through the power dimension of the Holy Spirit.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 246

246

/ CHAPTER 26

At different times, when I have spoken in

4. THE POWER OF THE HOLY SPIRIT WILL

tongues, people claimed I was speaking a

CHANGE YOUR MIND.

language they understood. The Holy Spirit is real. Secular magazines now claim that prayer

Many years ago I attended a Christian

works. They have done scientific studies to

programme. I was a young convert then and I

prove that church members have more peaceful

slept through the programme. But the Spirit of

sleep than non-church members. They were

the Lord came upon me and I was changed.

able to establish that people who are prayed for I
remember meeting a friend after that

are healed and more blessed than those who are

programme. He said to me, "You have changed not prayed
for. It has been proven that prayer

greatly." What happened to you? You see, the affected
mice and killed bacteria.

Spirit of God had come upon me even though I

fell asleep at the programme. You will be turned She FFelt
the H

Healing PPower

into a different kind of person when the Holy

Going back to the story of the woman with the

Spirit touches you. He is real. He is the secret issue of

blood, we know that she had a bleeding

behind the miracles.

problem. She had suffered a lot from physicians but was still sick. "Then, she touched Jesus and felt within herself that she was healed. And

5. JESUS DIDN'T TRY TO DO ANYTHING BEFORE

Jesus went with him; and much people followed

THE HOLY SPIRIT CAME.

him, and thronged him. And a certain woman,

which had an issue of blood twelve years, And

The discussion between the Father, the Son and

had suffered many things of many physicians,

the Holy Spirit could be compared to a situation and had spent all that she had, and was nothing

in which you and I would deliberate on how to

bettered, but rather grew worse, When she had

save an ant that has broken one of its six legs. heard of Jesus, came in the press behind, and

We would have to decide to become an ant so
touched his garment.

that we could attend to the problems of the ant. For she
said, If I may touch but his clothes, I

So the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit had
shall be whole. And straightway the fountain of a discussion
on how to rescue mankind.

her blood was dried up; and she felt in her body Somebody
had to pay the legal price for the

that she was healed of that plague. And Jesus,
redemption of mankind. There would be no

immediately knowing in himself that virtue had
further discussions after the price is paid. The gone out of
him, turned him about in the press,

Lord Jesus decided to go to the Earth for that
and said, Who touched my clothes? And his
purpose. However, at a point He said to the

disciples said unto him, Thou seest the

Holy Spirit "I am going to need you because you multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who

are the one who has the power." The Holy Spirit touched me? And he looked round about to see

said, "Okay, you take the lead. At the right time, her that had done this thing. But the woman

I will join you."

fearing and trembling, knowing what was done

Jesus came to the Earth and He was born in

in her, came and fell down before him, and told

a manger. He grew up with His father and

him all the truth. And he said unto her,

mother. He had favour before God and man.

Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in

He behaved in a Christian way. He had a good

peace, and be whole of thy plague" (Mark 5:24 character, and people liked Him. By his 34).

character He witnessed to people and they were

This woman experienced the physical

impressed. He even taught in the synagogue

dimension of the Holy Spirit.

and some people were amazed. "And all that

heard him were astonished at his understanding

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 247

HEALING AND THE POWER OF THE HOLY SPIRIT / 247

and answers. And Jesus increased in wisdom

real! Then Heaven and Hell are delusions of the and
stature, and in favour with God and man"

psychologically imbalanced. Dear friend, don't

(Luke. 2:47,52).

let anyone deceive you. Pastors must walk in

But that is not all there is to ministry. When the power
dimension of the Holy Spirit.

Jesus was thirty years old, the Holy Spirit led

Whatever your calling is, you must have the

Him into the wilderness. During Jesus' baptism, power dimension.

the Father told the Holy Spirit, "It is time to go." Jesus had been waiting for the Holy Spirit. He

knew that great things were going to happen

with the coming of the Holy Spirit.

6. IT WAS WHEN THE HOLY SPIRIT ARRIVED THAT JESUS WENT OUT PREACHING.

His first message was that the Spirit had come

upon him and had anointed him. "The Spirit of

the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed

me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath

sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach

deliverance to the captives and recovering of

sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised” (Luke 4:18).

That was when the miracles began to happen.

The chance for any ministry to do something is the healing anointing. People were impressed with Jesus when He debated as a child in the synagogue. Perhaps people are impressed with you but God wants you to go a step further. He wants to put a certain anointing on you so that your life will begin to affect thousands of people. The healing anointing is not just for one or two people. As soon as Jesus Himself began to

operate with it, he called the twelve and sent

them out. Then he called the seventy and said,

"Go and heal the sick; do what I am doing." He didn't wait till He went away. He just said, "You go ahead and do it." Then when He was leaving the earth He gave us the Great Commission:

"Go into all the world, preach the gospel, these signs shall

follow you."

At first, I used to wonder if the testimonies of people were real. It would then be easy to say

that the sound of the rushing wind was

superstition. It is also easy to say that the

tongues of fire were not real. Then nothing is

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 248

Dimensions of the Healing

Anointing

27

wants to shorten your life. But God will give you **THE SIX
DIMENSIONS OF**

long life and prolong your days. In many African **HEALING**

countries, the life expectancy (the number of

years an average person born in a particular

country is expected to live) is low. The healing **1. HEALING**

OF SICK BODIES

anointing will extend it! You will live and not die because there is a healing anointing coming

“And when Jesus was come into Peter's house,
your way right now.

he saw his wife's mother laid, and sick of a fever. And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose, and ministered unto them”

2. HEALING THE BROKEN-HEARTED

(Matthew 8:14,15). The healing anointing heals
fevers, sicknesses, headaches, and pains. It

The heart of a person speaks of the very centre

also heals heart diseases and cancers.¹ God is a and core of the human being. A broken heart is

healer and Jesus is a healing Jesus. I remember a disappointed heart. It is a shocked and

once I was in a certain city, ministering at a

bereaved heart. Many broken-hearted people

miracle service. A lady came up with breast
become depressed. I have had many depressed
cancer. As a doctor, I know what breast cancer
people in my miracle meetings testify about how
is. I prayed for her. As I was praying for her, I they felt the
spirit of depression leaving them. said, "Heal me, Lord, and
I will be healed, save Thank God for the healing anointing
which can
me and I will be saved."

heal the heart. The church is a place where the healing
anointing will heal every disappointed

Doctors can do very little about breast cancer.

heart. Jesus is in the business of healing

Cancer is often a death sentence. This lady

disappointed hearts. Depression is a common

went back to the hospital because she was

and serious illness. You would often not realize supposed
to have an operation. She told the

how devastating depression is until you become
doctors she believed the cancer had vanished.
depressed yourself.

She reported how the doctors examined her and
were surprised that the cancer had disappeared.

Suicide is a common thing among depressed

They were so amazed they asked her to return

people. I have seen different people commit

for further examination. A few months later,

suicide. Medical students have committed

these same doctors confirmed that there was no

suicide. I have seen doctors commit suicide. I trace of
cancer in the lady's breast. God is a

have seen men with good jobs in the United

healer. I have witnessed many lumps and

Nations commit suicide. I have seen church

tumours disappearing at miracle services. The

members with apparently normal and blessed

healing anointing prolongs your life. The devil lives commit suicide. These people were

248

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 249

DIMENSIONS OF THE HEALING ANOINTING / 249

probably depressed and felt life was hopeless.

great multitude of people out of all Judaea and

God can heal depression through his power. In

Jerusalem, and from the coast of Tyre and

the medical world, drugs and electric shocks are Sidon, which came near to hear him, and to be

used to treat depression. Thank God for the

healed of their diseases; AND THEY THAT

healing anointing which heals the brokenWERE VEXED WITH UNCLEAN SPIRITS: AND

hearted and depressed people of this world.

THEY WERE HEALED” (Luke 6:17,18). In this

Scripture, we see how people who were set free

from evil spirits were described as being healed. **3.**

HEALING THE WILL

The healing anointing touches lives afflicted by The healing anointing heals the soul, which

demons. The healing anointing is not just for

consists of the intellect, the will and the

the healing of sicknesses but for healing the

emotions of man. The inability of some people to effects of demon oppression. When the healing

say "no" to things that destroy them is a sign of anointing is present, it drives away evil spirits. a diseased will. Some people cannot say "no" to

“How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the

drinking, smoking and sex. The healing

Holy Ghost and with power: who went about

anointing heals you of the inability to take
doing good, and HEALING ALL THAT WERE
OPPRESSED OF THE DEVIL; for God was with
decisions.
him” (Acts 10:38).

Many people have evil spirits. Anybody who

4. HEALING THE SOUL

is oppressed by the devil or has any demonic
activity in his life needs the healing anointing.

“He restoreth my soul:...” (Psalm 23:3). The

Jesus healed people who were vexed with
soul is devastated by sin. Our emotions and
unclean spirits. Demons see people as homes
minds are often damaged by experiences we
where they can live. Many people who were

have had. Through the healing anointing, we delivered from evil spirits testified that they felt receive restoration to our minds, our wills and something go out of them. The human being is our emotions. Some people cannot love anyone. like a house with many rooms. Jesus described Others cannot receive love. These are all how evil spirits see human beings as houses symptoms of damaged and wounded people who where they could live. A house has many need healing. I once watched a documentary of rooms. Some of the rooms of the house are used a nineteen-year-old black American who was a more than others. The rooms of a human being serial bank robber. He escaped from jail many could be his mind, temperament, the flesh, the

times until he was put in a maximum security

hearts, the attitudes, the emotions, the will and prison for life. I watched with compassion as

the understanding. "When the unclean spirit is

this teenager with a diseased mind was caged

gone out of a man, he walketh through dry

like an animal for life. Why do you think one out places, seeking rest, and findeth none. Then he

of every four black American males is in jail?

saith, I will return into my house from whence I They are wounded and diseased in their souls.

came out; and when he is come, he findeth it

These are people broken by years of

empty, swept, and garnished. Then goeth he,

discrimination, poverty, racism and

and taketh with himself seven other spirits more fatherlessness.

wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there..."

(Matthew 12:43-45).

5. HEALING THE DEMON-POSSESSED

There are people whose emotions and moods are occupied by evil spirits. We all do have “And he came down with them, and stood in the emotions. We are happy sometimes and sad at plain, and the company of the disciples, and a other times. But some people become moody

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 250

250

/ CHAPTER 27

very often. No one is able to stay around such you to. The anointing of the Lord is breaking people when they get into their moods. Such every yoke, every power, and every wicked thing people often have demons working through

in the name of Jesus Christ! The healing
their moods. Some people have evil spirits
anointing is coming into your life right now as
occupying their sexual lives. Others have evil
you read this textbook.

spirits in their minds and understanding.

You will realize that almost everything about

Through the power of the Holy Spirit, healing

our lives requires healing. I wonder if pastors comes to all
these afflicted areas.

should be called pastors if they are not involved with
healing. The example of Jesus is before us. **6. BREAKING
YOKES**

Healing was central to his ministry. Most of us
ministers are more like schoolteachers rather

“And it shall come to pass in that day, that his than pastors.
When the healing anointing

burden shall be taken away from off thy

begins to flow, the burdens will be taken off the shoulder, and his yoke from off thy neck, and the shoulders of the people.

yoke shall be destroyed because of the

The yokes will be removed from the

anointing" (Isaiah 10:27). A yoke is something

Christians through the healing anointing. God

that keeps you captive in such a way that you

will destroy the yokes in the Christian's life

can't come out. A yoke is something you can't

through the anointing. You can't help but see

stop or get away from. Blindness and paralysis

the healing anointing everywhere in the New

for example are yokes. A yoke is a heavy burden
Testament. It is part of our calling.

that keeps you fixed in a particular state so that your
movement and freedom is limited. A cow,

Jesus told us, "Go preach the gospel, heal the which is under a yoke, is being kept in a

sick and inform them that a new kingdom has

particular state. It cannot move to the left or to arrived." This is part of our work. That is why the right. It's under a yoke.

I have been conducting healing meetings. That

is why I do not withdraw from the healing

The anointing of the Holy Spirit is a yokeministry. There are many easier things to do breaking and a yoke-destroying anointing. It

than to conduct healing meetings. To preach is

will heal anything that has tied and fixed you,

relatively easier than ministering to the sick.

for your destruction. The healing anointing can The Prophet Branham had the opportunity to

break that yoke in your life. The Bible says, "The minister to thousands because of the healing

yoke is destroyed because of the anointing." anointing that was upon his life. Pastors will

Some people seem doomed to die tragically
have the opportunity to preach to thousands
no matter what they do. That is the yoke of
because of the healing anointing on them.

death. There are some people who are told by

There is a difference between the church and a

the devil that they will divorce when they marry. school or
hospital.

Divorce seems to be their destiny. They seem to There is a
difference between the church and

be destined and tied to unhappiness in

every other social organization. The difference marriage.

is the anointing of the Holy Spirit. We are not Some nations
are under yokes. No matter

afraid of any disease. The Bible says that every what they
do and what type of governments

knee shall bow and every tongue shall swear

they have, they go in a particular direction. A that Jesus Christ is Lord. Jesus demonstrates

yoke is something that is tied around your neck

his power over every kind of sickness and

that pulls you in a particular direction. I want infirmity.

you to know that God has loosed you from that

yoke and everything that the enemy has fixed

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 251

DIMENSIONS OF THE HEALING ANOINTING / 251

It is time to gather whole cities! And at even,

when the sun did set, they brought unto him all

that were diseased, and them that were

possessed with devils. And all the city was

gathered together at the door. And he healed

many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils; and suffered not the devils to

speak, because they knew him. Mark 1:32-34.

The healing anointing is our opportunity to gather the whole city to our churches. The healing anointing is our opportunity to gather the whole city to our crusades. The work of God will enter a new dimension when we operate in the healing anointing of Christ. If God anointed Jesus, then God can anoint you.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 252

Characteristics of the Healing

Anointing

28

The healing anointing is however another

AN OVERVIEW OF THE

anointing that God places upon the minister.

HEALING ANOINTING

That is why Jesus said that, "The Spirit of the Lord is upon me...." "The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to

1. THE

HEALING

ANOINTING

IS

THE

preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me

ANOINTING UPON YOU AND NOT THE

to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance

ANOINTING WITHIN YOU.

to the captives, and recovering of sight to the

blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised"

"But the anointing which ye have received of

(Luke 4:18).

him abideth in you, and ye need not that any

It is like a cloak that comes upon the minister. man teach you: but as the same anointing

When the Lord told me that he was giving me a

teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no healing anointing, He was not filling me with a

lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide new anointing. I was already filled with the

in him" (1 John 2:27).

Spirit. He was putting an anointing upon me.

The anointing upon you is different from the

That is why the anointing is sometimes referred

anointing in you. Many people do not

to as a cloak or a mantle. A mantle is something understand the difference. The Bible teaches

you put on. It is not something that you swallow that we can all be filled with the Holy Spirit and or you take in. It typifies the anointing that

out of our bellies shall flow rivers of living water. comes

upon a person for a special ministry.

“He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water” (John 7:38). Since we all have these

2. THE HEALING ANOINTING IS ACTIVATED BY

rivers of living waters flowing out of us, don't we **FAITH**.

all have the healing anointing? The anointing every Christian has is the anointing within.

The anointing will not work when there is a lot

Jesus also claimed to have something within of doubt. The woman with the issue of blood

Him. He claimed to have God in Him. And yet had faith in the power of God upon Jesus. She

he knew when the mantle of the healing

didn't know Him personally. She had just heard anointing had come upon Him. “But if I do,

that there was power around Him. She felt that

though ye believe not me, believe the works:

the power could even be in His clothes. She

that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is touched
the hem of His garment and virtue and

in me, and I in him" (John 10:38).

anointing flowed out of Jesus and into her body.

"For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I 252

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 253

CHARACTERISTICS OF THE HEALING ANOINTING / 253

shall be whole. And he said unto her, Daughter,

notices anything at all. She told her husband, " thy faith hath
made thee whole; go in peace, and Let's do something for
this man of God who is

be whole of thy plague" (Mark 5:28,34).

passing through the town." He said, "Okay, give Jesus was
going to somebody's house to heal

the man a room in the house." One day, Elisha a little girl who was dying. Jesus was surprised asked the lady, "What do you want from God?" when He felt the pull at His clothes. Suddenly, That is the question that the anointing asks

He knew that virtue had gone out of Him. Jesus everyone who has faith.

turned round in the crowd and asked who had What do you want? When you have faith, the touched Him.

anointing is stirred up and begins to ask-what

The disciples were not happy when they do you want? What do you need? What is your found out who it was. They were not happy

desire?" "And it fell on a day, that Elisha passed about what was going on in the service. It is

to Shunem where was a great woman, and she often like that. The disciples who should have constrained him to eat bread. And so it was,

been in the flow were walking around and
that as oft as he passed by, he turned in thither probably
yawning, and getting tired of all the
to eat bread. And she said unto her husband,
people. They just wanted to enjoy their
Behold now, I perceive that this is an holy man
privileges as Jesus' bodyguards. The lady told
of God, which passeth by us continually. Let us
Jesus all that had happened. She was uneasy
make a little chamber, I pray thee, on the wall; because she
felt people might think that she was and let us set for him
there a bed and a table,
trying to undress Jesus in public. But she had and a stool
and a candlestick: and it shall be,
felt the power of God going through her.
when he cometh to us, that he shall turn to
The only thing Jesus said to her was,

thither. And it fell on a day, that he came

"Daughter, thy faith had made thee whole." thither, and he turned into the chamber, and lay Jesus gave the key to the flow of the anointing. there" (2 Kings 4:8-11). The woman said, "I live Faith is the key that draws out the anointing

in my own hometown and with my own people." from the anointed one. I have noticed that

She needed a child. And God gave it to her

people who have faith in me draw out the gift of because she stirred up the anointing in Elisha.

God in me. It makes it easier for me to even

God is going to give you what you have asked

receive a word of knowledge about them. The

for. Your faith is what will make you whole.

faith they have in me actually draws out the gift Have faith in God. Have faith in God's servants. in me and makes a demand on the anointing.

Have faith in the healing anointing.

Since I was born, nobody has tried to touch

the hem of my garment. You must really believe

3. THE HEALING ANOINTING IS QUENCHED

in a person to touch the hem of his garment for

AND KILLED BY FAMILIARITY.

your healing. That faith and absolute trust in

the person, causes the anointing to be stirred

In the textbook of Mark, we learn how Jesus

up. It is real. I notice that as I experience love went to his own hometown to preach. He was a

and trust from my spiritual children, the

known carpenter in that town. They couldn't

anointing that is UPON me is also made to flow.

believe that the same carpenter was saying he

This is what the Bible says in Hebrews: "And let had been anointed to preach, heal and set

us consider one another to provoke unto love

captives free. "How absurd," they must have and to good

works" (Hebrews 10:24). One day,
thought to themselves. "And he went out from
Elisha was passing through a town. A woman
thence, and came into his own country; and his
asked her husband to make a room for the man
disciples follow him. And when the Sabbath day
of God. Once again, we see a woman
was come, he began to teach in the synagogue:
recognizing the anointing before the man

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 254

254

/ CHAPTER 28

many hearing him were astonished, saying,

b. Familiarity is inversely propotional to the From whence
hath this man these things? And

anointing

what wisdom is this which is given unto him,
This is why men of God seem to be more
that even such mighty works are wrought by his
anointed when they are out of their own
hands? Is not this the carpenter, the son of
churches. The further they are from the familiar Mary, the
brother of James, and Joses and of
people, the more the anointing flows. The
Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here
greatest move of God in my life and ministry has with us?
And they were offended at him. But
been where I was thousands of miles away from
Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without
home. It is not because they are more anointed
honour, but in his own country, and among his
when they travel. It is because there is less

own kin, and in his own house. And he could familiarity when a minister travels away from there do no mighty work, save that he laid his his home territory. Jesus Christ Himself could hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them” not do much when He came to His own country. (Mark 6:1-5).

Jesus had repaired their beds, cupboards and wardrobes for many years. They knew him as

4. THE HEALING ANOINTING HAS BEEN

the carpenter and not as a deliverer. The

PROVEN BY MEDICAL SCIENCE.

anointing is quenched by familiarity. Familiarity breeds contempt. This saying may not be in the

Medical science is not at variance with the

Bible but it is true. Sometimes, it is better for healing anointing. Remember, in the book of

you to stay at a good distance so that you can

Mark, when Jesus healed a man who was a

receive. Sometimes while coming near in a

leper; He asked him to go to the place where

particular way, you tend to despise the man of

people are officially declared healed. That is

God and the anointing on his life. It takes grace today's
equivalent of a hospital. "And there

to be close and still be able to receive. It takes came a
leper to him, beseeching him, and

something that not everyone has.

kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, If

thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. And

a. Seeing the anointing

Jesus, moved with compassion, put forth his

Familiarity breeds questions, which kills the

hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I
anointing. But this daughter with the issue of
will; be thou clean. And as soon as he had
blood believed that if she could touch the hem of spoken
immediately the leprosy departed from
Jesus' garment, she would be made whole. She
him, and he was cleansed. And he straitly
didn't know whether He was a carpenter or a
charged him, and forthwith sent him away; And
plumber. And it didn't matter to her. It is a
saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any
good thing if Jesus was a carpenter but that is
man: but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, not the point
when it comes to the power of
and offer for thy cleansing those things which
God. You must set aside analytical or critical
Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them”

thoughts and think in terms of the power of
(Mark 1:40-44).

God. The woman didn't care whom His father or
Healing can stand the test of medicine.

mother were. She didn't know how much Jesus

Jesus knew that His power could stand the test

had charged to make one king-size bed. It was

of science. If God has healed you and you are

the last thing on her mind. She could not see

truly healed, your healing can stand the test of good, she
could not see bad, she could only see

any medical examination. I want you to know

the power of God. And that is what she got!

that God's healing is as real as any other

She received the anointing.

healing. I remember the miracle healing of a

diabetic lady who lived on daily insulin

injections. She had fasted and believed that

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 255

CHARACTERISTICS OF THE HEALING ANOINTING / 255

God would heal her. She would check her blood

One of the most extensive reviews demonstrates

sugar levels all the time during the meeting I

that the connections between religion and

was holding, to be sure she was all right. After health cut
across age, sex, cultural, and

the miracle service, she went back to see her

geographic boundaries. It includes more than

doctors. The doctors did a couple of tests and

200 studies in which religion was found to be a

found no evidence of diabetes. They apologized

factor in the incidence of a disease, explains

to her for mistakenly diagnosing her as diabetic. Jeffrey S. Levin, a former professor at Eastern Virginia Medical School in Norfolk. Levin found a. Scientific Evidence of Prayer and H

Healing

an association between good health and religion

Science is now documenting the fact that faith

in studies of children and older adults; of U.S. in God is able to heal the sick. I would like to Protestants, European Catholics, Japanese

quote a very interesting article from the

Buddhists, and Israeli Jews; of people living in Reader's Digest: *"The notion that religious

the 1930's and 1980's; of patients suffering from faith can promote physical well-being is not

acute and chronic diseases.

new. Most of us have heard of cases in which

someone, seemingly by sheer faith and will, has

c. H

How PPrayer H

Heals

miraculously recovered from a terminal illness

Why does faith appear to have such a powerful

or survived far longer than doctors thought

protective effect? Experts offer several possible possible.
What is new is that such rewards of

explanations. Going to religious services

religion are becoming the stuff of science.

guarantees contact with people. Social support

"We cannot prove scientifically that God

is a well-documented key to health and

heals, but I believe we can prove that belief in longevity.
Faith gives a sense of hope and

God has a beneficial effect," declares Dale A. control that
counteracts stress. "Commitment Matthew, M.D., associate
professor of medicine

to a system of beliefs enables people to better

at Georgetown University Medical Center in

handle traumatic illness, suffering, and loss," Washington, D.C. "There's little doubt that says Harold G. Koenig, M.D., director of the

healthy religious faith and practices can help

center for the study of religion, spirituality, and people get better."

health at Duke University Medical Center.

Praying evokes beneficial changes in the

b. C

Compelling Evidence

body. When people pray, they experience the

Just how powerful is the evidence linking faith

same decreases in blood pressure, metabolism,

and health? More than 30 studies have found a

heart and breathing rates as the famous

connection between spiritual or religious

"relaxation response" described by Herbert commitment and longer life. Among the most

Benson, M.D. of the Harvard Medical School.

compelling: A survey of 5,286 Californians

Reciting the rosary, for example, involves the

found that church members have lower death

same steps as the relaxation response:

rates than non-members, regardless of risk

repeating a word, prayer, phrase, or sound, and

factors such as smoking, drinking, obesity, and

returning to the repetition when other thoughts

inactivity. Those with a religious commitment

intrude. While the relaxation response works

had fewer symptoms or had better health

regardless of the words used, Benson says,

outcomes in seven out of eight cancer studies, those who choose a religious phrase are more four out of five blood pressure studies, four out likely to benefit if they believe in God. of six heart disease studies, and four out of five general health studies. People with a strong

d. T
The PPrayers oof O

Others' C

Can H

Heal

religious commitment seem to be less prone to Researchers are investigating whether the depression, suicide, alcoholism, and other prayers of others can heal. Benson and his addictions, according to one research analysis. colleagues, studying coronary-bypass patients,

/ CHAPTER 28

and Matthews, studying people with rheumatoid

prayer can help people recover from illness or

arthritis, are trying to confirm findings of an oftinjury, and more than 60% think doctors should quoted 1988 study by cardiologist Randolph Byrd, M.D. talk to patients about faith and even pray with

Dr. Byrd divided 393 heart patients in San

those who request it.

Francisco General Hospital Medical Center into

This yearning for a connection between

two groups. One was prayed for by Christians

religion and medicine is partly a reaction to a

around the country; the other did not receive

health care system that has become increasingly

prayers from study participants. Patients did not rush and impersonal. "In medicine, the

know to which group they belonged. The group

pendulum had swung so far toward the physical

that was prayed for experienced fewer

that it almost totally excluded anything

complications, fewer cases of pneumonia, fewer

spiritual," Dr. Dossey says. "This didn't feel right cardiac arrests, less congestive heart failure,

to patients or many physicians, and the

and needed fewer antibiotics.

pendulum has begun to swing back."

Even more confounding are controversial

e. H

How D

Does Faith Fit In?

studies suggesting prayer can influence

So what does this mean for the average person?

everything from the growth of bacteria in a lab

It does not mean adding worship to the list of

to healing wounds in mice. "These studies on healthy things you can do. You can't adopt faith lower organisms can be done with great

as you would a low-fat diet. What you can do is scientific precision, and the findings can't be

speak up if you're facing illness or surgery and explained away by, say, the placebo effect," says would like your belief to be part of your health Larry Dossey, M.D., author of Prayer Is Good

care. That doesn't mean you should expect your

Medicine.

doctor to pray with or for you. But it's

Dr. Dossey became so convinced of the power

reasonable to expect him to listen to your needs, of prayer that he began to pray privately for his arrange a visit from

the hospital chaplain, or

patients. Nevertheless, he and other experts

allow time for prayer before you're wheeled into tread cautiously in this area. "We certainly don't the operating room.

want to start selling religion in the name of

"Faith" Koenig maintains, "offers people some science," he says. "People need to make their control over their lives as opposed to just

own choices."

depending on a medical profession that's

And yet, health care institutions are

becoming more distant and mechanized every

beginning to pay attention to the faith-health

day." The healing anointing is real!

connection. Conferences on spirituality and

health have been sponsored by Harvard Medical

School and the Mayo Clinic. Nearly half of U.S. **5. THE**

HEALING ANOINTING IS A LINGERING

medical schools now offer courses on the topic.

ANOINTING.

In a survey of 269 doctors at the 1996 meeting of the American Academy of Family Physicians,

We read the story of a man who died in battle

99% said they thought religious beliefs could

and was mistakenly put into Elisha's grave. This contribute to healing. When asked about their

man was raised from the dead when he came

personal experiences, 63% of doctors said God

into contact with Elisha's bones. Apparently

intervened to improve their own medical

there was a lingering anointing in the grave.

conditions. Clearly, their patients agree that

“And Elisha died, and they buried him. And the

prayer is a powerful tool in healing. Polls by
bands of the Moabites invaded the land at the
Time/CNN and USA Weekend show that about
coming in of the year. And it came to pass, as
80% of Americans believe spiritual faith or
they were burying a man, that, behold they
spied a band of men; and they cast the man into

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 257

CHARACTERISTICS OF THE HEALING ANOINTING / 257

the sepulchre of Elisha: and when the man was
brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the
let down and touched the bones of Elisha, he
captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to revived,
and stood up on his feet" (2 Kings 13: 20-21). set at liberty
them that are bruised" (Luke 4:18). Elisha's grave still
contained some anointing.

So, with the introduction of Jesus' ministry,

Earlier on we heard of Elisha being sick and then prosperity and healing are linked together.

dying. "Now Elisha was fallen sick of his

When the healing anointing is flowing,
sickness whereof he died" (2 Kings 13:14).

prosperity abounds. When people are receiving

Someone may ask, "Why did Elisha's

healing, they are also receiving prosperity.

anointing not heal Elisha himself?" The healing These two
miracles move together.

anointing is a mysterious anointing. Many

Why did God heal you and extend your life?

wonder why one person is healed and another is

To bless you with more years of abundance over

not. How is it that someone who has died of

here. "And he said unto them, Ye will surely say some
sickness, can still minister healing?

unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself:

Anyone who has had hands laid upon him in a

whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum,

miracle service has the anointing resting upon

do also here in thy country. But I tell you of a him. Now he needs to have faith to make the

truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of anointing begin to soak into him and affect him. Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years

The anointing stays around for a long time. It is and six months, when great famine was

a lingering anointing.

throughout all the land; But unto none of them

was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, a city of

Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow. And

6. THE HEALING ANOINTING IS ASSOCIATED

many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus **WITH THE ANOINTING FOR PROSPERITY.**

the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian” (Luke 4:23-27).

The healing anointing is associated with

In Jesus' famous hometown sermon, He

prosperity. Healing is usually accompanied by

spoke about both healing and prosperity. He

prosperity. God doesn't just heal you but He

spoke of the healing of Naaman the Syrian. In

gives you something extra. God has added to

the same breath, He spoke of the financial

your life, something that helps you to prosper in miracle of the widow of Zarephath. These two

this life.

blessings seem to be linked in the spirit. I see Throughout the Bible and even in the

the Lord giving you the prosperity and the

charismatic world, you will notice that people
healing that you need. "Beloved, I wish above
who preach about healing often preach about
all things that you thou mayest prosper and be
prosperity. In fact, they are known as healing in health, even
as thy soul prospereth" (3 John 2). and prosperity
preachers. Somebody may
wonder why they always teach about these two
John the apostle also linked these two
things. It is because they go together.
blessings. He declared that his greatest wish
Remember when Jesus spoke of the anointing,
was for his spiritual children to have both
"The Spirit of the Lord is upon me," He declared prosperity
and healing. Once again, the two
that He had been anointed to preach the Gospel
blessings are together. You will see it practically to the
POOR. First of all, He addressed the

happening in your life in Jesus' Name! If God
needs of the poor. Then in the very next
has given you healing, he's given you prosperity
he spoke of healing the broken as well. It's real. I believe
that your prosperity is hearted. "The Spirit of the Lord is upon
me,
will be so much that people will wonder. They
because he hath anointed me to preach the
will ask where you are from, what job you do
gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the
and who has employed you. They would like to

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 258

258

/ CHAPTER 22

know what business you do. You will speak
about Jehovah Rophe. His kindness and his

goodness that has prospered you. There is

healing on the left and prosperity on the right. Don't take these things lightly; they will happen practically in your life. Prosperity and healing walk together. When you receive one, open your

eyes because the other one is nearby.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 259

Channels of the Healing Anointing

29

People often don't understand other people's

THE ONE BEHIND THE

problems. Many times we try to sympathize

HEALING

with the victims but we don't really understand

the extent of the problem they face. Sickness

“Mine eyes do fail with tears, my bowels are

and disease is one of the greatest problems of

troubled, my liver is poured upon the earth, for mankind.
Who can heal thee? The Lord can

the destruction of the daughter of my people;

heal thee!

because the children and the sucklings swoon in

the streets of the city. They say to their mothers, **FIVE
CHANNELS OF THE HEALING**

Where is corn and wine? When they swooned as

ANOINTING IN YOUR LIFE

the wounded in the streets of the city when their soul was
poured out into their mothers' bosom.

What thing shall I take to witness for thee? what **1. THE
HEALING ANOINTING PASSES INTO**

thing shall I liken to thee O daughter of

YOUR LIFE THROUGH THE LAYING ON OF

Jerusalem? what shall I equal to thee, that I may **HANDS.**

comfort thee, O virgin daughter of Zion? for thy beach is

great like the sea: who can heal thee?"

"...they shall lay hands on the sick, and they

(Lamentations 2:11-13). This Scripture is

shall recover" (Mark 16:18). One of the ways

asking who can solve a problem as big as the

that God can touch you and bless you is through

sea. If somebody likens a problem in terms of its the laying on of hands. Don't take the laying on size to the sea, then the person is really talking of hands for granted. Something wonderful

about a big problem. The question is very clear, happens when hands are laid on you by an

"Who can heal thee?"

anointed person.

As a member of the noble profession of

I remember a few years ago, I was in Korea at

medicine, I must say that I have seen many of

the prayer mountain of Pastor Yonggi Cho's

the diseases in this world and I know that many church. When he finished preaching, I noticed of them cannot really be cured by medicine. that many people had queued up for prayer.

Usually, doctors only control the effects of

When I saw the queue I said to myself, "Well, diseases. Many things are done just to keep a

once I can see a hand being stretched out, I shall patient alive. God is a healer and that is why He not leave this place without that hand being laid introduced Himself in the Old Testament as

on me." I joined the queue immediately and Jehovah Rophe. He is Jehovah your healer, the

hands were laid on me.

bridge builder, the healer of your life, the healer of your situations, and the giver of hope.

/ CHAPTER 29

I said, "Thank you Lord, something is

If you can believe that it is no more ordinary

happening to me right now." I believed and I olive oil, but the healing anointing of the Holy knew that I had received something. I know

Spirit, it will heal every disease in your life. It is that the anointing is passed on when hands are

the anointing oil that healed the sick and cast

laid on you and so I believe that even shaking

out devils in the Bible. It is real!

hands with the man of God can transmit the

Remember what Jesus said about the anointing.

communion. He said it was His body and His

I remember a story I heard about Archbishop

blood. He told us to eat His body and drink His Benson
Idahosa when he was returning to

blood. "And as they were eating, Jesus took

Nigeria from Bible School. He was just about to bread, and
blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to start out in ministry
and his church officials had the disciples, and said, Take,
eat; this is my

come to the airport to meet him. As he shook

body. And he took the cup, and gave thanks,

hands with them, they began to fall under the

and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; power. It is
faith in the contact that activates For this is my blood of the
new testament, which the anointing.

is shed for many for the remission of sins"

(Matthew 26:26-28).

The laying on of hands is a very powerful

thing. It is the principle that the power of God When some
people took the communion and

is transmitted through physical contact. Even a believed

that it was no longer bread or just wine hug, a handshake or mere physical contact can

but actually the body and blood of Jesus, they lead to transmission of the anointing.

were healed. When others treated it disrespectfully they became sick and some died.

A simple hug can become as powerful as

Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and

laying on of hands depending on what you are

drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be believing God for! When a dead body fell into

guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. But let Elisha's grave, the contact caused the dead man

a man examine Himself, and so let Him eat of

to come alive. Even contact with bones leads to that bread, and drink of that cup. "For he that the transmission of the anointing.

eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and

drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning

2. THE HEALING ANOINTING COMES INTO

the Lord's body. For this cause many are weak

YOUR LIFE THROUGH THE ANOINTING OIL.

and sickly among you, and many sleep" (1

Corinthians 11:27-30).

"And they cast out many devils, AND ANOINTED

In the same way, you must understand that

WITH OIL MANY THAT WERE SICK, AND

when we pray over the oil, it is no longer oil but HEALED THEM" (Mark 6:13). "Is any sick

the power of the anointing of the Holy Spirit

among you? let him call for the elders of the

passing into your body.

church; and let them pray over him,

ANOINTING HIM WITH OIL

IN THE NAME OF

Everybody needs healing. Sometimes a

THE LORD: And the prayer of faith shall save

normal person suddenly begins to have a little

the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if pain in the leg. This pain may turn out to be

he hath committed sins, they shall be forgiven

something evil. God's healing anointing comes

him" (James 5:14,15).

to heal us of things we are not even aware of.

Before the thing is manifest, God has healed

Praying for the sick with anointing oil is a

you. What a healing anointing we have! It

very scriptural practice. As we dedicate the oil, restores and refreshes our lives and souls.

it is transformed from simple olive oil to the

Thank God for the healing anointing! What a
Balm of Gilead and the anointing of Almighty
healing Jesus we have!
God.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 261

CHANNELS OF THE HEALING ANOINTING / 261

3. THE ANOINTING PASSES THROUGH THE

One day, two prophets were walking by the

GARMENTS.

river, one was anointed and the other was not.

The one who was not anointed wanted

Many people do not recognize the power of the

desperately to get the anointing. As they walked anointing
that resides within the clothes of

along, the younger prophet asked the older

anointed people. The healing anointing seems

prophet if he could have twice as much of the
to be able to stay in the garments of anointed
anointing. The older prophet laughed and said
people.

that he had asked a hard thing.

The woman with the issue of blood believed

He said that if the Lord willed, it might be so. that she did
not need to be prayed for or

Suddenly, a chariot of fire appeared and even

anointed with oil. She didn't need to know

though the younger prophet tried to stay so

Jesus personally. If only she could touch His

close, the older prophet was whisked away to

garment, she knew the anointing would heal

heaven. The younger prophet was so sad that

her. "For she said, IF I MAY TOUCH BUT HIS

he cried. When he had finished crying, he wiped
CLOTHES, I shall be whole” (Mark 5:28).

his tears and looked around him. But there was

The healing anointing is an invisible power of
the GARMENT! It had been left behind. The

the Holy Spirit but it translates into the physical. young
prophet knew that the anointing could be

That is why physical methods like the laying on
in the garment. He took up the garment

of hands, the anointing with oil and the coming

(mantle) and smote the water and asked, "Where into
contact with garments can transmit the

is the Lord God of Elijah?" He wasn't sure
power of the Holy Spirit.

whether it was an anointed garment or not.

In another instance in the Bible, a whole city

The river decided to obey. Suddenly, the
just wanted to touch the garments of Jesus.

young prophet knew that the anointing was still

They were not interested in prayer, counselling

around. The garment contained the anointing

or anything like that. "And when they were

and he had the garment. "And it came to pass,

gone over, they came into the land of

when they were gone over, that Elijah said unto

Gennesaret. And when the men of that place

Elisha, Ask what I shall do for thee. before I be had
knowledge of him, they sent out into all that taken away
from thee. And Elisha said, I pray

country round about, and brought unto him all

thee, let a double portion of thy spirit be upon that were
diseased; And besought him THAT

me. And he said, Thou hast asked a hard thing:

THEY MIGHT ONLY TOUCH THE HEM OF HIS

nevertheless, if thou see me when I am taken

GARMENT: AND AS MANY AS TOUCHED WERE

from thee, it shall be so unto thee; but if not, it MADE
PERFECTLY WHOLE” (Matthew 14:34 shall not be so. And
it came to pass, as they still 15:1).

went on, and talked, that, behold, there

appeared a chariot of fire, and horses of fire, and When
people believe, the anointing is

parted them both asunder; and Elijah went up

activated. The people realized by experience,

by a whirlwind into heaven. And Elisha saw it,

that they could touch the garment, which had

and he cried, My father, my father, the chariot of been in
contact with the anointed person and be

Israel, and the horsemen thereof. And he saw

healed. There seemed to be something about

him no more: and he took hold of his own

the garment. "Garment" stands for all types of clothes, and
rent them in two pieces. HE TOOK

clothes. They just wanted to touch the hem of

UP ALSO THE MANTLE OF ELIJAH THAT FELL

whatever Jesus was wearing. The hem, apron,

FROM HIM, AND WENT BACK, AND STOOD BY

handkerchief, or anything He wore on Him.

THE BANK OF JORDAN; AND HE TOOK THE

MANTLE OF ELIJAH THAT FELL FROM HIM,

AND SMOTE THE WATERS, AND SAID, WHERE

/ CHAPTER 29

IS THE LORD GOD OF ELIJAH? AND WHEN HE

right. He inquired of them what time the son

ALSO HAD SMITTEN THE WATERS, THEY

had improved and he found out that it was at the PARTED
HITHER AND THITHER: AND ELISHA

same time that Jesus had spoken to him. Only

WENT OVER” (2 Kings 2:9-14).

six words had been spoken. “So Jesus came

When your pastor gives you a tie, don't take it

again into Cana...there was a certain nobleman,

lightly. You can't define God and put Him in a

whose son was sick at Capernaum. When he

box and expect Him to behave in a particular

heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into

way. The healing anointing is mysterious! All Galilee, he went unto him and besought him these different ways are biblical methods that that he would come down, and heal his son: for make the anointing flow.

he was at the point of death...Jesus saith unto him, 'Go thy way, thy son liveth.... And as he was now going down the servants met him, and

4. THE ANOINTING IS WITHIN THE SPOKEN

told him, saying, Thy son liveth. Then enquired **WORD.** he of them the hour when he began to amend.

And they said unto him, Yesterday at the One of the ways in which the healing anointing seventh hour the fever left him. So the father works is by the spoken word. It is called the knew that it was at the same hour, in the which

"rhema". Many healings don't take place by the Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth..." (John

laying on of hands.

4:46,47,50-52).

Jesus hardly laid hands on people. He mostly

Try not to think so much about hands being

ministered by speaking words to them. He

laid on you. God will touch you and change your would say, "Go thy way, thy son liveth" or He life through the spoken word of his anointed

would say, "Daughter, thy faith has made thee servant.

whole." On another occasion, He said, "Young man, I say unto thee, arise." Most people want hands to be laid on them but many miracles take

SUPERNATURAL LAWS

place through the spoken word. Even Elisha

operated in that anointing. In the healing of

Every field of endeavour has its rules and

Naaman the leper, Elisha sent a message to

bylaws. You must learn the rules of the

Naaman: "Go and wash and thou shalt be made supernatural if you want to operate in it. The whole."

way God does things is sometimes different

The healing was in the message that had

from the way we would operate. For my

come. "So Naaman came with his horses and

thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your with his chariot, and stood at the door of the

ways my ways, saith the Lord. For as the

house of Elisha. And Elisha sent a messenger

heavens are higher than the earth, so are my

unto him, saying, Go and wash in Jordan seven

ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts

times, and thy flesh shall come again to thee,

than your thoughts. Isaiah 55:8,9.

and thou shalt be clean" (2 Kings 5:9-10). There Supernatural healing is different from natural

was a nobleman's son who was not well. The healing.

man came to Jesus for the healing of his son.

One of the biggest questions facing all

Jesus said to him, "Go thy way, thy son liveth." miracle ministries is, "Why is everyone not No prayer. No laying on of hands. No anointing healed?"

oil. No garment. Just a word!

Another question is: "Why do some people

Speaking a word is a valid way of ministering

seem to have all the blessings and others have

healing. On his way home, this nobleman met

no blessings at all?"

his people who told him that his son was all

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 263

CHANNELS OF THE HEALING ANOINTING / 263

The existence of these questions in your mind

SEE THROUGH A GLASS, DARKLY; but then

can keep you away from experiencing the

face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I supernatural.
Please remember that there were

know even as also I am known" (1 Corinthians

questions in the minds of the people in Jesus'

13:12).

hometown. They questioned his background as

As the song goes, "We will understand it

well as his source of power. Generally speaking, better by
and by."

Somebody may ask the

they were questioning the validity of his

question, "Why then do pastors preach as if ministry.

everyone is going to be healed?" They ask, Let us now consider the following laws, which

"Why do evangelists raise our hopes when we will help you gain a better understanding of the may not get healed?"

supernatural.

Dear friend, there is no other way to raise up

the faith of people except you stand boldly and

1. THE LAW OF DIVINE SELECTION

speak in faith. Any pastor who begins his

sermon by saying, "Some will not be blessed in The supernatural operates by the law of divine

this miracle service," is not raising up the faith selection. Jesus spoke about this law in Luke

of the people. If you want miracles, you have to chapter 4. He said, that there were many

preach faith. If you want the power of God, you widows in the days of Elijah the prophet,

have to preach about the power of God. Jesus
however, only one widow received a miracle.
preached about the anointing.

God knows about the masses of humans

He said, "The spirit of the Lord is upon me." suffering and
he cares. It seems to me that

He spoke about how God had anointed Him.

when God is ministering, He selects out of the

When you preach about the anointing, the
masses and ministers to some.

anointing will flow. When you talk about

"There were many sick and dying lepers in

healing, healing will happen. "Faith comes by

the days of Naaman the Syrian. Jesus again

hearing and hearing by the Word. So then faith

spoke about how Naaman was divinely selected

cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of
for a miracle. But I tell you of a truth, many God" (Romans
10:17).

widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when As a
pastor who cares for his sheep very
the heaven was shut up three years and six
much, I pray for miracles and breakthroughs for
months, when great famine was throughout all
my people. I once prayed for a group of ladies
the land; But unto none of them was Elias sent,
who had not been able to have children. Some
save unto Sarepta, a city of Sidon, unto a woman of them
became pregnant and now have their
that was a widow. And many lepers were in
children. Some years later I prayed again and
Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet; and
some that had not been able to have children

none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the
still did not have any children. Some who
Syrian" (Luke 4:25-27).

already had a child, were blessed with

It is the same principle that favoured the
supernatural pregnancies.

lame man at the Pool of Bethesda. Some people

I would ask myself, "Oh God! Why don't you may say it is
because of their faith. Others may share this thing evenly?
So many don't have any say it is because of the anointing
on the man of children at all, why don't you at least answer

God. What I would simply say is that there is a their prayers
and give at least everybody one

law of divine selection. We do not understand
child?"

everything. Nobody does! The Bible says that
we are looking through a glass dimly. We

Jesus made it very clear in His sermon.

neither see nor know everything! "For now WE

There are many sick people like Naaman, who

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 264

264

/ CHAPTER 29

need help. There are many more poor people

receive grace. Your day for a miracle is around like the
widow of Sarepta, who need a financial

the corner.

miracle. But God will have His own way of

This woman did not even want to meet Jesus.

ministering to them.

All she wanted to do was to touch the tip of

When it comes to the supernatural move of

Jesus' garment. That is humility indeed!

the Holy Spirit, you can often not tell what God Humble yourself in the sight of God and He will

will do. We do know that He will do something.

raise you up! "Humble yourselves therefore

But we do not always know "who" He will do it under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt

for and why He will do it.

you in due time" (1 Peter 5:6).

2. THE LAW OF HUMILITY

3. THE LAW OF REPEATED AND SUSTAINED

MINISTRATION

When you study the testimony of the woman

with the issue of blood, you will realize that she I have also thought that if God ministers to you, had been through many things. "And a certain

you should instantly recover. This is a natural woman, which had an issue of blood twelve

expectation. However, I have come to see that

years, And had SUFFERED MANY THINGS of

there is often a need for repeated and sustained many physicians, and had spent all that she had, ministrations to the same person. You will see

and was nothing bettered, but rather grew

this law in operation many times in the Bible.

worse" (Mark 5:25,26).

A common example, is when Naaman was

The Bible records that she had been bleeding

asked to dip himself in the River Jordan seven

in this manner for twelve years. It declares that times. He was asked to bath seven different

she had suffered at the hands of several doctors. times in the same river. The question is why not She had been humiliated time and time again by

once? Why not three times? Why not six times?

different doctors. Even with modern medicine,

The answer is, "I don't know." God wanted to women with

gynaecological problems have

bless Naaman after the seventh ministration.

humiliating experiences at the hands of

“And Elisha sent a messenger unto him, saying,

different doctors. I wonder what it was like two Go and
wash in Jordan seven times, and thy

thousand years ago.

flesh shall come again to thee, and thou shalt be By the
time this woman came to Jesus, she

clean...Then went he down, and dipped himself

had no confidence in herself. She had no hope

SEVEN times in Jordan, according to the saying

in man. She had no trust in human medicine.

of the man of God: and his flesh came again like She had
been completely softened by the

unto the flesh of a little child, and he was clean”

experiences of life. This had made her humble

(2 Kings 5:10,14).

and open to receive. The Bible says that God

Elijah prayed for rain seven times. On seven

resists the proud, but He gives grace to the

different occasions, he sent his assistant to look humble.

God gives miracles and blessings to

at the clouds. "...And Elijah went up to the top

humble people.

of Carmel; and he cast himself down upon the

When you are proud, you often don't know it.

earth, and put his face between his knees, And

Experiences of life can calm you down and allow

said to his servant, Go up now, look toward the

you to begin to trust in the grace of God. Don't sea. And he
went up, and looked, and said,

be worried by the difficult times you are going

There is nothing. And he said, Go again SEVEN

through. Perhaps, you are on the road of

TIMES" (1 Kings 18:42,43). "There was no sign

humility. God is breaking down your resistance. of rain until after the seventh prayer. ...And it He is causing you to be ready and open to

came to pass at the SEVENTH TIME, that he

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 265

CHANNELS OF THE HEALING ANOINTING / 265

said, Behold, there ariseth a little cloud out of crashing down. Receive a divine blessing from

the sea, like a man's hand..." (1 Kings 18:42the Lord right now! Study the ministry of Jesus. 44).

He prayed for a blind man in Mark 8:24. "And

After that session, Elijah's assistant noticed a he cometh to Bethsaida; and they bring a blind

very small cloud in the form of a man's hand. I man unto him, and besought him to touch him.

see God giving you a miracle. I see the miracle And he

took the blind man by the hand, and led

appearing after several ministrations. Do not be him out of the town; and when he had spit on

tired of being prayed for. Greater men had to

his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked

pray seven times and were not angry with God.

him if he saw ought. And he looked up, and

Please do not be angry with God; do not develop

said, I see men as trees, walking. AFTER THAT

a bitter spirit and attitude!

HE PUT HIS HANDS AGAIN UPON HIS EYES,

and made him look up: and he was restored,

When Elijah prayed for a dead boy, he prayed

and saw every man clearly" (Mark 8:22-25).

three times. "And he stretched himself upon the child
THREE TIMES, and cried unto the Lord,

After the first ministration, the man saw men

and said, O Lord my God, I pray thee, let this
as trees. Even Jesus had to minister a second
child's soul come into him again. And the Lord
time before the miracle finally came through.

heard the voice of Elijah; and the soul of the

Someone may ask, "If he was truly the Son of child came
into him again, and he revived" (1

God why did he have to pray twice?" That was Kings
17:21,22). He lay on the boy three times

the law of repeated ministration at work.

and prayed. Is this just a mystical ritual? No it If you have the
time, study about the Holy

is not! It is the law of sustained and repeated Spirit in the
New Testament. The disciples did

ministrations at work.

not receive the Holy Spirit only once. In John

Do you remember when Joshua led the

20:24, Jesus breathed on them and said receive

people of God around the walls of Jericho? They ye the Holy Spirit. That was their first

had the greatest breakthrough of their lives.

anointing. “And when he had said this, he

But it came only after the seventh round of

breathed on them, and saith unto them,

ministration. “And it came to pass at the

RECEIVE YE THE HOLY GHOST...” (John 20:24).

SEVENTH time, when the priests blew with the

Later in Acts 2, the disciples received a baptism trumpets, Joshua said unto the people, Shout;

of the power of the Holy Spirit. “And THEY

for the Lord hath given you the city. So the

WERE FILLED WITH THE HOLY GHOST, and

people shouted when the priests blew with the

began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit trumpets...

that the wall fell down flat...”

gave them utterance” (Acts 2:4).

(Joshua 6:16,20).

In Acts 4, the Bible says that they were filled

The walls of opposition in your life are

with the Holy Spirit again. “And when they had

crumbling right now in the name of Jesus! Keep

prayed, the place was shaken where they were

up the sustained ministration. You may be

assembled together; and THEY WERE ALL

anointed seven times, before your miracle will

FILLED WITH THE HOLY GHOST, and they

finally come. I see the walls of hindrance to

spake the word of God with boldness” (Acts

your marriage crumbling before the mighty

4:31).

anointing of the Holy Spirit. Walls erected by
If the first filling was enough, then why did
the devil and his agents cannot keep you out of
the Bible show this three times? This was the
his blessings.

law of repeated ministration. I love praying for As you read
this textbook, the power of God
my church members --it is very biblical. One
is flowing into you to bring the gates of
day, something will happen and their lives will
wickedness and the high things in your life
never be the same again.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 266

4. THE LAW OF SPIRITUAL TIMING

necessary. Fear not my little flock, for I have laid a table for you in the presence of your enemies. It is a known fact that we all need a blessing

Do not be afraid of the enemies you see all

from the Lord. It is important to understand the around you.

law of the timing of miracles. Why did Jesus

come into the earth only two thousand years

For in that day, saith the Lord, I will pour out ago? The Bible says when the time was right,

my anointing so strong that you will taste of my God sent his Son. "But when the fulness of the

goodness and my mercies. Those that despise

time was come, God sent forth His Son, made of

you will stand and declare, "The Lord has done a woman, made under the law" (Galatians 4:4).

great things for them."

Jesus was a gift of God to the Jews, but in the

day of their divine blessing, they did not receive the gift.

It is important for you to recognize the time

of your visitation. Just as you have a time when you do certain things. God has a time in his

timetable when He is going to bless you with

certain gifts.

God's T

Timing Its B

Best

In 1988, God placed me in the office of a

teacher. At another time, He placed on me the

anointing to pastor. He then gave me an

anointing to minister prophetically and later an anointing to minister miracles.

Why didn't he do it all at once? God has a

time for your breakthrough. As you flow with

him, you will come into special days for your life and you will

be truly blessed.

Do not be angry with God because He is keeping to His schedule. God may not come when you want Him to come. But He will come in time. Be a man or woman of understanding. You will have your miracle baby. You will have your healing. You will have your financial breakthrough. Trust in the Lord with all your heart and understand the time. When it is your time, walk in it and be blessed.

Prophecy

For there shall come a time, saith the Lord, when you will not seek for miracles but you will seek for my wholeness. When you seek after me, I will add unto you all things that are

Jesus and the Healing Anointing

30

1. WHATEVER TEMPTATIONS YOU HAVE,

HOW GOD ANOINTED

JESUS EXPERIENCED THEM TOO.

JESUS OF NAZARETH

If you have a temptation to drink, He was

“HOW GOD ANOINTED JESUS OF NAZARETH

tempted to drink. If you have temptations to

WITH THE HOLY GHOST AND WITH POWER:

commit fornication, Jesus was tempted to

who went about doing good, and healing all that

commit fornication. If you are tempted to lie,

were oppressed of the devil; for God was with

He was tempted to lie. If you are tempted to

him" (Acts 10:38). "Let this mind be in you,
steal, He was tempted to steal. If you are
which was also in Christ Jesus: Who, being in
tempted to bear a grudge against someone,
the form of God, thought it not robbery to be
Jesus was tempted many times to hold a grudge
equal with God: But made himself of no
against the people who persecuted Him all
reputation, and took upon him the form of a
through His life. If you are tempted to be afraid, servant, and
was made in the likeness of men:
He was. He was tempted to be afraid of going
AND BEING FOUND IN FASHION AS A MAN, he
to the cross and to face all the wicked people.
humbled himself, and became obedient unto
He was tempted because He was a normal

death, even the death of the cross" (Philippians human being.

2:5-8).

He is the greatest example for all of us. If we Many people do not understand that Jesus

follow Him, we are not following someone that

Christ, although He was the Son of God often

cannot be followed. We can follow Him because

referred to Himself as the Son of Man. I believe He became like we are. He had the weaknesses

that one of the reasons He did that was for us to that we have because all men are imperfect.

recognize that He took upon Himself the form of

This is why he had to pray like we do. If he were a man. The Scripture tells us that, "He humbled God on Earth, He wouldn't need to pray.

himself and was found in fashion as a man." The question we ask ourselves is, "How was

Becoming a man means that He had all the

this man able to do the miracles that He did?

frailties and weaknesses of man. The Bible says How was He able to raise the dead? How was

that He was tempted in all points like us. "For He able to call back to life a man who had been

we have not an high priest which cannot be

dead for four days, and whose body had

touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but decomposed? How was He able to call a man out

was in all points tempted like as we are, yet

of His coffin and make Him come alive again?

without sin" (Hebrews 4:15).

How was He able to heal blind people? How

come people who were suffering from certain

diseases were healed?"

/ CHAPTER 30

We can find the answer from the Bible. It

hope and we know that just as God anointed

tells us about how God anointed Jesus Christ of

Jesus, he will also anoint us. I see God

Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with power.

anointing you in the name of Jesus!

That was when He went about doing good and

healing all that were oppressed of the devil. The anointing is the explanation for miracles.

**3. THE GOOD THINGS THAT JESUS DID ARE
THE GOOD THINGS THAT GOD IS CALLING
US TO DO.**

**2. JESUS WAS ABLE TO DO MIRACLES BECAUSE
OF THE ANOINTING THAT WAS PUT ON HIM**

It is good to build schools and provide social

BY THE FATHER.

amenities but the good works that Jesus did

were healing the sick, casting out devils, raising God
anointed Jesus with the power to cast out

the dead and cleansing the lepers. It is

devils, the power to bring solutions, and the

important for us to understand this revelation.

power to break the yoke of the enemy. Jesus,

As you do, you will begin to think in the right

who was now in the form of a servant, was a

way when you are relating with people.

special servant because He was anointed to do

the things that He was called to do. Many

Elisha and the A

Anointing

people think that Jesus was called Jesus Christ

Elijah lived with Elisha for many many years.

because His surname was Christ. They think

At the end of Elijah's life, he asked him, "My son, that He was the son of Mr. & Mrs. Joseph and what would you like me to leave you when I die?

Mary Christ. That is not the case. Jesus was

Do you want my house? I've got three houses

known as Jesus of Nazareth but He was actually

down in Bethel. I've got a house in Jericho. I've given a nickname, "Christ", which means "the got a house down here and houses all over

Anointed One." This was because He was so town."

much associated with the presence of GOD and

Elisha said, "I don't want your house." the anointing.

Elijah asked Elisha, "What would you like to This anointing explains to us the miracles

have? I've got a land in Bethlehem, and another that Jesus did. It explains why Jesus Christ, plot in Jericho."

although He took on the lower form of man, was able to do great things. The Bible says He went But Elisha said, "I don't want your lands." about doing good. What were the good things

He asked again, "Do you like my donkeys? I that Jesus did? The good things were, healing

have 27 donkeys which I travel with all over the people that were suffering and people that were

world. Do you like my cars?"

oppressed by the enemy. I see the Lord healing

you of every oppression of the enemy in Jesus'

But Elisha was too wise for that. He said, "I name! The anointing that was upon Jesus

don't like your donkeys. I don't like your cars. I shows us a great example so that we may also

don't want anything. I want the anointing that

desire the anointing.

you have. I can see that the secret behind the power and the miracles is the anointing."

When you recognize the secret behind the miracles and anything that any man of God Elisha said, "All I want is the anointing.

does, then your interest will not be in the man

Touch me with the anointing. Let me have two

of God. Your interest will not be in his car, his times the anointing that you have. Keep your

house, his educational background, his wife or

cars, keep your donkeys, keep your houses, but

his money but in the anointing that is upon his

give me the anointing."

life. Because of this great example, we have

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan

JESUS AND THE HEALING ANOINTING / 269

Many people don't know that the secret

in my Ministry I wrote the book, "Catch the behind the blessing of the Lord is the anointing. Anointing" to help others who want to learn When Jesus lowered himself and became a man,

about the anointing. I was teaching all right

born of a peasant woman, into a carpenter's

but you see, there's a difference between a

house and under questionable circumstances,

schoolteacher and an anointed pastor. A

he seemed very lowly. But the anointing makes

schoolteacher teaches and a pastor also teaches

all the difference! I see the anointing making

but the difference is the anointing.

the difference in your life! I want you to

understand that the anointing is the most

How Some Attempted to Explain Away

perfect thing that you must seek for.

the Anointing on Jesus

It takes a lot to be anointed. When Elisha

asked Elijah for his anointing, Elijah said, "You **1. THE PEOPLE AROUND HIM DID NOT**

have asked for a hard thing." "And it came to **RECOGNIZE THAT HE WAS A PRECIOUS GIFT.**

pass, when they were gone over, that Elijah said unto Elisha, Ask what I shall do for thee, before I've noticed that people want to find a reason for I be taken away from thee. And Elisha said, I

everything and they want to explain everything

pray thee, let a double portion of thy spirit be away. They usually end up with the wrong

upon me. And he said, THOU HAST ASKED A

reason. Jesus Christ was the greatest person

HARD THING: nevertheless, if thou see me

that ever lived but he was killed.

when I am taken from thee, it shall be so unto

thee; but if not, it shall not be so" (2 Kings 2:9 The Bible says that unto those who believe, 10). It is not easy to be anointed. You may go he is precious but unto those who believe not he to school but not become anointed. You may be

is a stone of stumbling. Wherefore also it is

qualified from a Bible school but still not be

contained in the scripture, "Behold, I lay in Sion anointed. You may read books but still not be

a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that anointed. But God wants to anoint us.

believeth on him shall not be confounded. Unto

you therefore which believe he is precious: but

unto them which be disobedient, the stone

4. THE ANOINTING IS WHAT MAKES THE

which the builders disallowed, the same is made

DIFFERENCE IN THE LIFE OF EVERY

the head of the corner, And a stone of

CHRISTIAN.

stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them

which stumble at the word, being disobedient:

It was the anointing that made the difference in whereunto also they were appointed" (1

the life of Jesus.

Peter2:6-8).

The Apostle Paul was anointed. He said, "He God will use somebody who will become

that hath anointed us is God." "Now he which precious to some but a problem to others.

stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath

Sometimes, when you stay away from people or

anointed us, is God" (2 Corinthians 1:21).

you look from afar, the enemy gives you various

When I started teaching in the Ministry, I
reasons why certain miracles happen.
didn't know what the anointing was. But I
One time, the people who were criticizing
realize that you don't need to understand how
Jesus said he was using the power of Satan to
the anointing works. Many of us do not
cast out devils. Then was brought unto him one
understand how the television works, for
possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb: and he
instance, yet we use it. So when I got started, I healed him,
insomuch that the blind and dumb
just wanted to serve the Lord. I didn't know
both spake and saw. And all the people were
what it meant to be anointed. That is why later amazed, and
said, Is not this the son of David?

270

/ CHAPTER 30

But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This As this person spoke to me I said to myself, "A fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub headache has turned into death." Yet, we often, the prince of the devils. Matthew 12:22-24.

medically, despise healing miracles where

You immediately see people trying to ascribe

headaches are healed.

a reason for the power.

There are people who try to say that the

3. NOT MANY OF JESUS' MIRACLES WOULD

anointing is not the anointing but that it's

SURVIVE THE TEST OF MEDICAL ANALYSES.

something else.

However, if you were to analyse Jesus' miracles medically, not many of them would survive the

2. JESUS WARNED THEM AGAINST SPEAKING

test. For instance, in the healing of the boy

EVIL OF THE HOLY SPIRIT BY WHOM HE

suffering from epilepsy, the demons shook him

WAS DOING THE MIRACLES.

and then he fell to the ground as though he had

died. "And oftentimes it hath cast him into the

Jesus at one time, had to sound a strong

fire, and into the waters, to destroy him: but if warning that anyone who speaks bad things

thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us,

about the Holy Spirit would not be forgiven.

and help us. Jesus said unto him, If thou canst

"Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin

believe, all things are possible to him that
and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but
believeth. And straightway the father of the
the blasphemy against the Holy Spirit shall not
child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I
be forgiven unto men" (Matthew 12:31).
believe; help thou mine unbelief.

Whenever God does great things, people
When Jesus saw that the people came
seem to have an explanation for the miracles
running together, he rebuked the foul spirit,
other than the power of God at work.
saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I
charge thee, come out of him, and enter no
When people see Reinhard Bonnke and the
more into him. And the spirit cried, and rent

large gathering of crowds at his crusades,
him sore, and came out of him: and he was as
people like to explain that it is because he is a one dead;
insomuch that many said, He is dead”

German that he has a lot of money to organize
(Mark 9: 22-26).

large crusades. Behind any man of God, is the
anointing. Don't let the anointing draw out the Now, if we
were to analyse that medically,
evil that is in you. Don't let the anointing draw what we could
say is that this boy just had
negative comments from you.
another convulsion after Jesus had prayed for
him and went into what is known as "post-ictal Sometimes,
I watch as people try to demean
sleep". In the disease known as grand-mal
miracles and try to belittle the power of God.

epilepsy, the patient experiences what is known

Many people do not regard testimonies of the

as "tonic-clonic seizures" (violent contractions of healing of headaches, for instance. But as a

the large muscles of the body). After these

medical doctor I know that a headache could

seizures, the patient goes into a deep sleep for mean many things. I once met someone whose

some time. This deep sleep is known as the

friend had developed a headache. He took

post-ictal sleep. This is the normal pattern that medicine but the headache did not go away. It

always occurs in grand-mal epileptic seizures

was discovered later that he had a tumor in his

brain and he was actually dying. The doctors

Indeed, some could criticize this miracle of

told him to go and put his house in order

Jesus and say that the boy was not healed of
because he was going to die.
epilepsy but simply experienced a post-ictal
sleep.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 271

JESUS AND THE HEALING ANOINTING / 271

There are many questions you can ask about
I have seen paralyzed people come out of
many miracles. In fact, many times the Lord
their wheel chairs. I remember one woman in
has had to rebuke me. Sometimes, he even
South Africa who was paralyzed and had been in
used the people who got healed to rebuke me.
the wheel chair for sometime. She came to
I remember one time I prayed for the sick and

church to give a testimony that she had been

a certain man testified that he had been healed. healed.
The interesting thing about this was

I kept asking, "Are you sure you are healed?" that when she came to give her testimony, she

The man was irritated and said, "Look here, I am came in her wheelchair. I was wondering what

not a child! I said I am healed. If I had not been she was going to do with the wheelchair on

healed, I would not come here to testify." I had stage. I could not ask her to leave so I allowed been rebuked soundly by this irritated

her to stay.

testimony-giver.

Then as I got to her to give her testimony, she

At another time while I was praying for the

said, "I have never been able to stand,

sick in Malaysia, a lady doctor came to testify

sometimes I crawl but now, since you prayed, I

that she had been healed. I asked her

can stand."

repeatedly, "Are you sure you are healed?" She She said to me, "Watch!" She came out of the became irritated at my doubtfulness. She

wheel chair and said, "I could never do this, looked at me and said resolutely, "Listen, I'm never on earth." By the end of the programme, healed." This was a medical doctor testifying she was walking to church on her own. The

that the Lord had healed her. I immediately felt amazing thing is that her unbelieving husband

foolish and realised that I was the one who had

said, "I now believe in the God you're serving no faith.

and the church that you're going to." I have witnessed the blind receive their sight. I have witnessed miracles similar to all the twenty-one

5. WE NEED TO OPEN OURSELVES UP AND

recorded miracles that Jesus did in His lifetime. **RECEIVE THE POWER OF GOD.**

I realize that just like it was with Jesus, when We need to

recognize men of God when they are

the anointing is present, it will bring out the

amongst us, before they die. We must not kill

good thing or the bad thing in you. There was

the prophets that are sent to us. "O Jerusalem, something good in even the tax collectors. They Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and

wanted to serve God, and the anointing brought

stonest them which are sent unto thee, how

out the good thing that was in them. Pilate was often would I have gathered thy children

supposed to be a just ruler. The principles he

together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens

had been using to rule the country were what

under her wings, and ye would not!" (Matthew

he used in the case of Jesus. He proved that he 23:37).

had been running the country with injustice.

He demonstrated that he did things to please

When I look back in my ministry, I realize that

men. His meeting with Jesus brought out the

I have witnessed many live occurrences of

evil that was in him.

miracles similar to almost every single miracle

recorded in the Bible. For example, I have seen women
healed of long-standing bleeding

problems. I have listened to the testimonies of people who
have not had their periods for a long time, receive healing. I
see you being healed

right now in Jesus name!

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 272

272

/ CHAPTER 30

THE ANOINTING

ON JESUS

3. MAY THE ANOINTING PROVOKE IN YOU A PROVOKED REACTIONS DESIRE TO TAP INTO IT.

You must allow yourself to be open to receive

Tell yourself, "I'm going to have this anointing the anointing because every anointed person is

myself." I see you receiving this anointing in surrounded by different kinds of responses and

the name of Jesus! T.L. Osborne, the famous reactions.

American evangelist, sat in a church service

where Prophet Branham was preaching. He said

to himself, "I can feel him, I can feel him." That's **1. JESUS
ALWAYS BROUGHT OUT THE HIGHEST**

what must be stirred up in you.

REACTIONS OF PEOPLE TO HIMSELF.

The Anointing Makes the Difference

He always brought out the deepest responses from people. If you were evil, He brought out God anointed Jesus with the Holy Spirit and the most evil that was in you, and if you were with power. This is what made Him do the good, he brought out the best in you.

miracles that he did.

He made people leave their jobs and follow Him to become preachers till they died. He

1. WE CANNOT PREACH JESUS WITHOUT

made the Pharisees get to the point where they **TALKING ABOUT THE MIRACLES.**

requested Barabas over Jesus. That brought out the extent of wickedness and evil that was in

If you take the Bible and cut out all the miracles them. His

presence brought out the best and the

from it, you will be left with nothing. There are worst in everyone.

miracles from the beginning to the end. I see

the Lord doing a wonderful thing in your life! | **2. T**

see the Lord anointing you! I see the Lord

HE ANOINTING MUST BRING OUT THE BEST

making you into a different person!

AND NOT THE WORST IN YOU.

One day, somebody was talking to my mother

It is important that when the Lord presents you

and she told the person, "Sometimes, when I see with the anointing, it must bring out the best in my son on the stage, I'm not sure whether I'm

you instead of bringing out the worst in you.

the one who gave birth to him." When the

Instead of bringing out the worst criticism and

anointing is on your life, you're a different

the worst offensive remarks and comments,

person. People will like to draw you back to the rather let the best in you come forth. When the old times and say that you're nobody.

blessing of God comes to us, it may bring out

the worst that is in us.

2. WHEN THE ANOINTING IS ON YOU, YOU'RE

Make sure that the worst that is in you does

TURNED INTO ANOTHER MAN.

not come out when the Lord presents you with

the anointing. There are people who have been

I see the anointing of the Lord coming upon

presented with the secret of catching the

your life! You may be known as a thief today but anointing and it brings out the worst criticisms one day, you'll be known as an anointed person.

from them. The anointing is the principal

The anointing changes you and makes you into
reason behind what people are doing. May the
a miracle worker. It changes you into a
anointing bring out the best that is in your life!
supernatural person. You become a blessed
person. The anointing heals you and brings the
power of God into your life.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 273

JESUS AND THE HEALING ANOINTING / 273

3. IF YOU CAN BELIEVE IT, YOU'LL RECEIVE THAT ANOINTING.

When the anointing comes near you, let it bring
out the best in you. Become like the woman

with the issue of blood. The Bible says she said within
herself, "If I may but touch the hem of his garment, I shall be
made whole."

You see, the anointing that was passing by

brought out the best in her. It brought out the desire to touch the hem of his garment. It

brought out the desire to get close and to get

into contact with the power and the anointing of God. Let the anointing bring out the best in you. Whenever I see an anointed man of God, I

always respect him.

One day, the Lord spoke to me about a

prominent man of God in my country. He told

me never to fight him, but to honour him. He

told me that if I honour him, the anointing

would come upon me. What you fight cannot

come to you. This is your time to be healed

because He is a healing Jesus!

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 274

Humility and the Healing Anointing 31

anointed you above thy fellows." "Thou hast **GOD**
ANOINTS THE HUMBLE

loved righteousness, and hated iniquity;

therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee

If you study the life of Jesus, you will discover with the oil of gladness above thy fellows"

certain things he did, which explains how He

(Hebrews 1:9).

became anointed. Now I want us to look at a

verse from the book of Luke. "Now when all the God doesn't just anoint everybody and just

people were baptized, it came to pass, that

anyone. You can see here Jesus Christ humbling

Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the

and submitting Himself to the person who was

heaven was opened, And the Holy Spirit

there before He came. Sometimes I look at
descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon
people who want to be anointed and you see
him, and a voice came from heaven, which said,
them fighting with everybody who was there
Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well
before they came. Why do you fight with
pleased" (Luke 3:21,22).

somebody who was there before you? You don't
necessarily have to preach what he's preaching
or teach what he's teaching. You can have a

1. JESUS, EVEN THOUGH HE WAS GREATER

different message. We all have to learn to

THAN JOHN THE BAPTIST, SUBMITTED

acknowledge the fathers that God puts before

HIMSELF TO HIM.

us.

He actually joined his ministry by allowing John to baptize him. God will anoint someone who

2. HUMILITY PLEASES GOD.

will humble and submit himself to another.

Notice that before Jesus even had the chance to

There are many rebellious elements in the

heal one person, a voice came from Heaven

church that are looking for anointing. They are saying, "This is my beloved Son." If you really looking for God's gifts. God does not anoint

want to please God, it is not necessarily in

illegal things. That is why the Bible says that preaching and teaching. You will please God by

everyone that uses the name of Christ should

just humbling yourself. The first fall was caused depart from iniquity. "Nevertheless the

by pride. That first fall of Satan, has caused

foundation of God standeth sure, having this

every other fall since then. I remember talking seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And,

to an American pastor who used to be a general

LET EVERY ONE THAT NAMETH THE NAME OF

superintendent of the Assemblies of God

CHRIST DEPART FROM INIQUITY" (2 Timothy

Church. He said that in his term of office as the 2:19). Again the Bible says, "Because thou hast superintendent, he had dealt with one thousand

loved righteousness and hated iniquity, God has

and five hundred pastors who fell into various

274

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 275

difficulties and problems. He remarked that the When they see the pastor eating at a

one common factor in all these cases was pride.

restaurant they think about their offerings.

It was not immorality but pride. If you want to So I told the Lord, "I cannot," and the Lord be great in the house of God, it is not by

said to me, "You are nothing, you are nobody." preaching or sitting on the stage. Jesus told us who the greatest in the Kingdom is when He

That is true because we are all nothing.

was asked. He called a child and said, "This is Maybe you haven't been to the mortuary before.

the greatest in the Kingdom of God." At that If you die right now, you will be surprised to find time the disciples came to Jesus, saying, "Who yourself lying naked at the mortuary. We are

then is greatest in the kingdom of heaven?" what we are by the grace of God. That's why we

"Then Jesus called a little child to Him, set him should humble ourselves in the sight of the Lord in the midst of them, and said, "Assuredly, I say and allow Him to lift us up at the right time.

to you, unless you are converted and become as

This is exactly what Jesus did when He came

little children, you will by no means enter the

down to earth. He didn't want to be exalted.

kingdom of heaven. Therefore whoever humbles

That's how Jesus became anointed because he

himself as this little child is the greatest in the humbled Himself. He joined the masses for

kingdom of heaven" (Matthew 18:1-4).

baptism.

If you become as humble as a child, you will

Stop trying to be special. Stop trying to be

be the greatest in the Kingdom. That is why the different. Stop trying to be some unique person. Son of God went to John the Baptist's ministry

Just become nothing. When you humble

to be baptized like everyone else. He did not ask yourself God will pour His grace on you.

to be treated specially. "Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord and he shall lift you up" (James 4:10). There are two jobs at stake here. **3. IF WE DO NOT HUMBLE OURSELVES, WE**

There is a job offer and God has decided to play **CANNOT LEARN AND RECEIVE FROM THE**

musical chairs with you. If you sit on the chair, **PEOPLE THAT GOD SENDS TO US.**

He will stand, and if you stand, He will sit. If you choose to humble yourself, He will exalt you We will just look on and analyse them. Many of

but if you choose to exalt yourself, then He will us are outside the grace of God because we can't bring you down. You have to choose.

receive from the people that God has put in our lives.

My C

Call to the M

Ministry and H

Humility

When the Lord called me into the Ministry and I

Jesus told a parable about a certain nobleman

started out in obedience, one day my father said who made a vineyard for some people and when

to me, "I cannot stand the fact that my son will he wanted fruit from his vineyard he could not

live from collections or offerings of people. It is get any. His people were all beaten and sent

below you."

away. "Hear another parable: There was a

certain householder, which planted a vineyard,

But the Lord told me to enter into ministry

and hedged it round about, and digged a

and to humble myself. I struggled with this

winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out because I reasoned with God, that I am a doctor. to husbandmen, and went into a far country:

I argued that I did not need the coins and little And when the time of the fruit drew near, he

contributions of people to take care of myself.

sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they

Sometimes, people even look at you and pass

might receive the fruits of it. And the

comments about using the church's money.

husbandmen took his servants, and beat one,

When you drive a car, they are thinking about

and killed another, and stoned another. Again,

their offering.

he sent other servants more than the first: and

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 276

/ CHAPTER 31

they did unto them likewise. But last of all he
God is sending you power. He's sending you
sent unto them his son, saying, They will
something higher than electric power. Humble
reverence my son. But when the husbandmen
yourself and receive it. God will raise you up
saw the son, they said among themselves, This
and bless you in the ministry. He will bless you is the heir;
come, let us kill him, and let us seize in life when you learn
to humble yourself. If
on his inheritance. And they caught him, and
some ladies would humble themselves, they
cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him”
would have husbands. Because you are proud,
(Matthew 21:33-39). This is what happens in

there's nobody you find suitable for you. Nobody the Church. When God sends people into our

is good enough for you. You feel so big!

lives, we cannot receive from them because we

One day, I met a sister in my church and I

are not able to humble ourselves. It is only

asked her, "Sister, are you not getting married?" because Jesus humbled Himself before John the

Baptist that God anointed Him. That was the

She told me, "You don't have my type of

hour that the Holy Spirit descended. That was

husband in the church." So I asked her, "Which the anointing.

type are you?"

Jesus could have said, "My type is not being **4. THE ABSENCE OF HUMILITY IS THE REASON**

baptized now. I'm waiting for my type to be

baptized."

WHY MANY OF US ARE NOT BLESSED.

There are some people who walk around with

We're expecting somebody to come from

big briefcases as if they are some big

somewhere to be a blessing to us. We must

businessmen. When you get closer you find out

humble ourselves to receive from the people

that the briefcase is filled with newspapers. You that God sends to us. If you need electricity in must humble yourself and get a job. God wants

your home, you do not have to go to the dam to

to pour His love on you but you're too big.

tap from the source. People will think you are

mad. You cannot claim that you want direct

You see, the anointing is poured downwards

power. You cannot argue that you don't know

and not upwards. The Bible says it came down
how the cables run and so you must get the
on Aaron's beard. It is like the precious
direct connection. People will ask, "Don't you ointment
upon the head, that ran down upon
have a socket in your house?"
the beard, even Aaron's beard: that went down
to the skirts of His garments; Psalm 133:2. It
That's what the Lord is asking you. Is there
can only come on you when you're lowly and not
no pastor in your church? Is there no man of
when you are high. It is coming down on the
God in your land? Why do you want to come to
people that are down. Humble yourself in the
me directly for the anointing? The anointing is sight of the
Lord. The way up is the way down.

right there. The socket is right here. Connect

The way high is the way low. I see the Lord
and receive your blessing! I see you becoming
anointing you!

connected to power! One day, one of my little
sisters was playing with a lamp. She didn't
know the power she was playing with. The lamp

HUMILITY AND PRAYER

was high. She put her finger in the lampshade
and I saw her jump. She was connected to the

"If my people, which are called by my name,

electric dam directly. By the time she was able shall humble
themselves, and pray, and seek my

to take her finger out, the whole finger had been face, and
turn from their wicked ways; then will burnt. Even though it
was only a lamp, it was

I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin,

the power right there.

and will heal their land” (2 Chronicles 7:14).

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 277

HUMILITY AND THE HEALING ANOINTING / 277

1. PRAYER AND THE ANOINTING

you have, the more powerful you will be. Some

years ago, our church had a problem with the

“Now when all the people were baptized, it

government. Our church had been vandalized

came to pass, that JESUS ALSO BEING

and we needed some help. We needed to get

BAPTIZED, AND PRAYING, the heaven was

close to the highest authority of the land, so we opened”
(Luke 3:21). You must note that the

found someone whom we knew was close to the

anointing came upon Jesus when He was

President. I remember going to his house to praying. The fact is that there's no anointing explain the problem to him. I remember that without prayer. Prayerless people are powerless every time I saw him in his house, there was an people. Prayer is what gives rise to the aura of importance around him because this intangible aura around someone who is person was always with the President.

anointed. It is the aura of the presence of God. It is something inexplicable. Someone would

Sometimes, we had to wait for him in his wonder why the Pharisees were afraid to arrest house till he would come and meet with us. We Jesus. He was preaching openly. He had been always knew that he had been with the

in the temple, casting out thieves. He had

President. We took our files to him and when he marched into Jerusalem on a donkey.

asked us to leave the matter with him, we

expected that he would be able to see the

Jesus moved openly. Why were they afraid to

President and do something about the problem.

arrest Him? Why did they need Judas to betray

We believed everything he told us because we

someone who walked openly in public? It is

knew that he had power. We knew he was close

because there was an aura around Jesus. There

to the real source of power. We were attracted

was something about Him. The Pharisees

to him because of his authority. Although he

themselves knew that there was no one who

never really helped us, we kept on going there
spoke like He spoke. There was something
because of his authority and the fact that he was about His
words. His words have lasted for
always with the President. It was not his
more than two thousand years. He never wrote
physical strength that attracted us to him. We
a book but two thousand years later, millions
went to him because he was close to the
read His words. In fact, His disciples noticed it President.
People received Jesus Christ because and asked Him,
"Teach us how to pray." They they could tell that He had
been with the
did not ask Him to teach them how to preach or
highest of powers. They knew that He had been
to become anointed. "And it came to pass, that, with the
Almighty El-Shaddai. They knew that
as he was praying in a certain place, when he

He had been with Jehovah Rophe. The presence

ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, of the
Lord around Him came from the fact that

teach us to pray, as John also taught his

He had spoken to the Lord. As we come close
disciples" (Luke 11:1).

to the Lord, we get close to His presence. We
will begin to get as near to Him as Jesus was.

2. P

When you don't know what to do, look at Jesus

RAYER IS THE CHANNEL FOR AUTHORITY

and do what He did. As Jesus prayed, the Holy

AND ANOINTING.

Spirit descended in a bodily shape like a dove

You see, when you have been with someone,

upon Him and a voice came from Heaven which

you can speak about the person with authority.

said, "This is my beloved Son." "...And the Holy The authority comes because you have been

Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove

with the person. This authority is a

upon Him, and a voice came from heaven, which

manifestation of the anointing that is on your

said, Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well life. The more anointed you are, the more

pleased" (Luke 3:22). I see the anointing upon

authority you will have. And the more authority you as you come into His presence today!

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 278

278

/ CHAPTER 31

3. IT IS IMPORTANT TO PRAY FOR GRACE.

God listens to prayers. Sometimes, we pray

amiss. We do not pray for grace. Grace is the prayer that God never refuses. There are many

things you will ask and God may never listen to

you, but if we pray for grace in every difficult situation, He will answer. You know why? It's

because grace is something that you do not

deserve. When you are asking for something

you don't deserve, nobody in Heaven can bring

any issue against you. Nobody can bring an

accusation. It's because you are asking for

grace, something that you don't deserve.

Apostle Paul said the grace of God is

sufficient for us. The grace of God is sufficient for that problem in your life. The grace of God is sufficient for every situation. "And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most

gladly therefore will I rather glory in my

infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest

upon me” (2 Corinthians 12:9). I see the grace of God moving into your life! I see his grace moving over your finances. The grace is moving into your body and into your life! It is moving into every situation! His grace is coming into your ministry! His grace is coming into your church! It is what you don't deserve, but He's giving it to you to bless you and to lift you up!

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 279

Seasons for the Anointing

32

Chronicles 23:3). In fact, David began to reign **THE RIGHT TIME AND THE**

when he was thirty years old. “David was thirty **RIGHT SEASON**

years old when he began to reign, and he

reigned forty years" (2 Samuel 5:4). There is a
"AND JESUS HIMSELF BEGAN TO BE ABOUT
season for everything that God has planned for
THIRTY YEARS OF AGE, being (as was
your life. Be patient and wait for Him. When it's supposed)
the son of Joseph, which was the son
the season for your blessing to come, it will
of Heli..." (Luke 3:23). This particular verse is surely arrive.
There will be no delay. Pray and significant because the
experience of Jesus
cry no more. Don't think that you have done
becoming anointed did not happen to Jesus until
something wrong. It's only because the season
He was thirty years old. This shows us that
for your anointing has not come. There is a time some of
the things we have prayed for and have
for God to lift you up. Enter into your season of not
received, are not because we did not pray

lifting. The season of blessing, the season of
aright. Sometimes it's because we are not yet
healing and the season of promotion shall come
"thirty years" of age. Jesus began to enter into at the right
time! I see you entering into the
the blessings that had been determined for Him
season of God for your life!
when He was thirty years old. There is a time
Do not give up on your faith. Keep believing
for certain experiences. The Bible talks about a and hoping
that the right season will come for
tree bringing forth fruit in its season. "And he your anointing.
Maybe you are a woman
shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, believing
God for a miracle to have a child. Do that bringeth forth his
fruit in his season; his not stop believing. Maybe God has a
special
leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he
season for your baby to arrive. The mother of

doeth shall prosper" (Psalm 1:3).

John the Baptist did not know that her son had

to arrive at the right season. John the Baptist **THE KEY OF WAITING IN FAITH**

had to be born a few months before Christ was

born so that he could prepare the way for Jesus'

1. T

Ministry. That was God's season for him. He

HERE IS A SEASON FOR YOUR BREAKTHROUGH.

could not have come earlier, or later. Elizabeth John the Baptist was about thirty years old

had to wait for the right season to have her

when he began his ministry. The Bible says that child. The Lord was pleading with Elizabeth,

the priests that were counted for the work of the

"Please, please don't give up!" The Lord is Lord were those that were thirty years old and

pleading with you too and saying, "Please,
above. "Now the Levites were numbered from
please don't give up!"

the age of thirty years and upward" (1

279

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 280

280

/ CHAPTER 32

Until you begin to be about "thirty years", when I told them
about a vision in which angels

nothing will happen. If you are a pastor, don't were
distributing parcels to those who stretched give up. The
time for your anointing and

out their hands to receive. He said I pointed to
breakthrough is coming. Your time will come as him and
said, "You are the next star." He said surely as the night
follows the day. It will come he was not known at that time.
Nobody knew

at the season that God has determined for it.

him to be anything. But he became a star. His

Even though you may be full of the Word and

season had come. He was now playing with

the Holy Spirit, there is still the right time to some of the top
gospel stars in the United

receive certain blessings.

States. That is the power of God through the

spoken Word. Hands may not be laid on you; I

You may be a beautiful and faithful sister in

may not touch you. But the words I speak to you the church.
You may diligently do your nails and have the anointing
power. Believe that the right your hair but no one shows up.
When the time

season is coming upon you!

that God has ordained for you comes, you may

not even wash your face or put on make up, but

b. T

The Season for a Man

Megachurch

your husband will walk to you.

Years ago, I preached mainly to small groups. When it's the rainy season, you don't have to

begin to complain to the Lord that even though

call for the rain. You won't need to fast and pray. I was always preaching, I never preached to a

for the rain. The rain itself will pour on you

large group of people. I was always starting

because its season has come. Have you seen

little groups and preaching to them but none of

somebody praying for rain in the rainy season?

these groups ever became large. The Lord told

We sometimes rather pray that the rain should

me not to give up. He promised me that there

go away.

was a megachurch down the line for me. At the

right time and at the right season, I began to see There is the right time for God to send you a

the megachurch the Lord had promised. You

husband. You may be a fertile wife but there is are just about to enter into your season! You are the right time for God to give you a child.

just about to be "thirty years" of age. It's You may be a good businessman but there is

wonderful! It's marvelous! It's happening in

the right time for God to lift you up and put you your life! It will come suddenly! The Lord will where you are supposed to be. There is the

do a great thing. He'll heal your mind. He'll

season, and there is the right time!

heal your soul and heal your life. He'll turn you I see you beginning to be in "about" the time around. He will put your feet on a rock to stay. of certain things in your ministry! I see the Lord I see a light! Somebody is in darkness but the

doing a great thing in your life! I see a lifting up Lord is beginning to send a light because it is

coming into your life! I see God lifting you

about time that there should be some light in

higher! Believe in the spoken Word.

your life. You have been walking in the darkness for a long time but the Lord is bringing you

light. The Lord is saying that the sun is about to **2.**

BELIEVE TO RECEIVE A MIRACLE THROUGH

rise. It's around the time for light to come.

THE SPOKEN WORD.

Receive the blessing! Receive the healing!

God anointed Jesus Christ with power. That

a. C

Christian A

Artiste iin H

His SSeason

power is coming into your life now! There is

I was preaching in one of the nations of Africa

power to heal and save you. There is power to

when one of their top Christian gospel stars

destroy the work of the devil. There is power to come to
sing a song. He announced that he was

lift you higher. There is power to receive the

dedicating the song to me. He explained that

Holy Spirit.

the year before, I was in their church preaching Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 281

SEASONS FOR THE ANOINTING / 281

THE POWER OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

(Acts 10:38). I want you to know that Jesus can **AT WORK
IN SEASON**

heal situations that doctors cannot solve for you. I have
seen God do many miracles. One day, a

man came to me. He stammered badly. He

1. THE HOLY SPIRIT'S POWER WORKS

stammered so badly that he had to hit himself

EVERYWHERE.

before he could speak a word. Stammering is

something doctors cannot heal. At the miracle

One day, I received a letter from a lady in

service I was having, Jesus touched him and he

Malaysia. She said that once when I was in her was healed of that disease. He began speaking

church preaching, I pointed at her and I said, "I fluently to his own amazement! Imagine how

see you getting a car." She told me about how someone who had to hit himself in order to

the miracle happened. She said she just had to

speak was healed of that stammering tongue!

write because of the supernatural way in which

it happened. The healing power of Jesus works

in Malaysia, it works in Colombia and it works in **3. THE POWER OF THE HOLY SPIRIT HEALS**

Ghana. It works everywhere in the world.

THE OPPRESSED.

Receive the power of the Holy Spirit in your life!

Let that power work in your life! Let it work in The Bible says Jesus went about doing good and

your finances! Let it work in your business! Let healing all that were oppressed of the devil.

the power of the Holy Spirit work in your school!

“How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the

Receive the touch of the Lord upon your mind!

Holy Ghost and with power: WHO WENT

ABOUT DOING GOOD, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him”

2. THE HOLY SPIRIT’S POWER WORKS IN ALL

(Acts 10:38).

SITUATIONS FOR GOOD.

A few years ago, an 11-year-old young girl

The healing power of the Holy Spirit works on

attended a miracle service. This young girl had all kinds of problems. It works on difficult

had her left eye damaged years earlier in an

problems. It works on marital problems. It

explosion involving two live wires. The other

works on financial problems. It works on

child who was there when this accident

sicknesses. It works on unsolvable problems. It happened was killed. This little girl had escaped works on all sorts of problems. It worked

with damage in one eye. She could not see at all yesterday, it works today and it will work

with that eye. God touched and healed her in

tomorrow. It's coming into your life right now. the miracle

service. Suddenly, her eye opened

He is a healing Jesus. He is the same yesterday, and she could see with that eye. Jesus is

today and forever. You'll never be the same

healing you right now. Receive your healing!

again. No one who came into contact with His

With all our advancements and

anointing was ever the same again. You'll see

developments, there are many questions we

practical change in your life in the name of

cannot answer. Human beings have created

Jesus. God has turned your life around and

airplanes, ships and rockets. We have taken

taken you out of the miry clay. He has placed

trips to Mars and to the stars. We have

your feet upon a rock to stay. It is your season journeyed to the moon. With all our education

to be blessed!

and achievements, no man is able to change the

“How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with

heart of a man. We are also still faced with

the Holy Ghost and with power: who went

many diseases we cannot heal. But I see God

about doing good, and healing all that were

healing you and changing your life. I see Jesus oppressed of the devil; for God was with him”

doing good to you. Jesus went about doing good

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 282

282

/ CHAPTER 32

and healing all that were oppressed. Jesus is

4. VICTIM OF CANCER WALKS AGAIN.

healing you right now. He heals mad people.

Many mad people have been healed by Jesus.

A lady had cancer in her spinal cord. She had

He is the Son of the Living God. God is healing undergone an operation and the tumor was

you. He is touching you. Healing is flowing to removed but she could not walk for five months.

you.

She was in a wheelchair. God emptied her wheelchair.

Testimonies of Jesus Doing Good to

Jesus did a good thing and helped the woman

Men within God's Timing

to walk.

There are many testimonies of Jesus doing good. Jesus is still doing good today. I was

5. CRIPPLED BOY HEALED.

once holding a miracle crusade in Columbia; the Lord glorified Himself and healed many people. There was a little boy who had not been able to walk for three years. God healed him and he walked that night.

1. LADY IN WHEELCHAIR WALKS AGAIN.

There was a lady who had not walked for a year.

6. THROMBOSIS CURED

She came to the crusade in a wheelchair. God healed her and she came out of her wheelchair

There was also a lady who was suffering from a at the crusade. Jesus is the same yesterday, thrombotic disease and had not been able to today and forever. He is still doing good. walk for one year due to the thrombosis. She

was in a wheelchair. God healed her. It is wonderful and marvelous what God can do.

2. TIBIA BONE HEALED

There was a man who had had his tibia bone

7. SUPERNATURAL EYE SURGERY.

shattered. He had had three operations and he still could not walk. He had been in this

This little boy could not see because he had condition for eight months. He walked at the cataracts in his right eye. He always had his crusade by the healing power of Jesus. Jesus eyes closed. God touched him and healed his did it again!

eyes!

3. L

8. L

ADY HEALED OF DEAFNESS AND DUMBNESS.

AME LEGS RECEIVE STRENGTH.

A deaf and dumb lady who had been in this

There was another lady who had not walked for
condition for twenty-five years was touched by
six months but Jesus healed her.

the power of God and healed. Her mother

testified that she had never been able to hear or **9. BLIND
EYE OPENED.**

speak since she was born. She heard and spoke
for the first time. She called her mother,

There was a man who could not see with the left

"Mama" for the first time in her entire life. That eye. God
healed his eye. Jesus is the same

night Jesus did what doctors had not been able
yesterday, today and forever.

to do. Jesus is still doing good and He will do good to you.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 283

SEASONS FOR THE ANOINTING / 283

10. DELIVERANCE FROM EPILEPSY

cannot overcome. “Jesus Christ the same

yesterday, and today, and for ever” (Hebrews

A lady brought her son who was epileptic to the
13:8).

crusade grounds. That night, God healed her

son of epilepsy. This woman confessed that she had seen
a vision of Jesus in the meeting. Jesus **2. JESUS DOES
NOT HAVE TO COME TO US**

told her that her son had been healed. Her son

PHYSICALLY FOR US TO RECEIVE ALL THE

was healed in the service as Jesus had told her.
MIRACLES WE NEED.

One day, an important man whose servant was

MIRACLE-WORKING JESUS

sick invited Jesus to his house. The servant was dying and this centurion had asked for Jesus to

I present to you the Jesus of miracles. I want come and heal him. Jesus agreed to go and

you to meet the Jesus who works miracles. How
heal his servant.

can these things be? How can these miracles

On His way to the centurion's house, the

be? I want you to know that the secret behind

centurion sent a message to Jesus not to bother

these miracles is the Holy Ghost! You cannot do to come to his house. He told Jesus, "Just stand anything for God without the anointing of the

there and say something and my servant will be

Spirit of God. Jesus was born into this world

healed." "Wherefore neither thought I myself and for thirty

years he did no miracle. He was a worthy to come unto thee: but say in a word,

carpenter working with his father. But the Bible and my servant shall be healed. For I also am a

says, the time came when God called him to the

man set under authority, having under me

wilderness to fast and pray. He waited on the

soldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth;

Lord and God blessed him and anointed him. It

and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my

was this anointing upon him that healed the sick servant,
Do this, and he doeth it" (Luke 7:7-8). and cast out demons.

Physical distance is not a barrier to the

anointing.

1. JESUS IS THE SAME YESTERDAY, TODAY AND

As the Word of God is preached, you will be

FOREVER. HE IS A HEALER.

healed, even if the man of God does not touch
you. God sent His Word and healed His people.

“He sent his word, and healed them, and

I see Jesus coming to heal you. I see Him
delivered them from their destructions” (Psalm

sending His Word to heal you. I see Him healing 107:20).
God does not like proud people. He

you right now. I see you coming out of your
does not like people who boast about things He
wheelchair.

has given them. You must humble yourself and

I remember a vision I once had. God told me

believe in God. If you are a young person, you

that he had put fire in my mouth and that when

must know that the life you have today is from

I speak, fire would come out of my mouth in the

God. When God blesses you, you must give the

realm of the spirit and people would be healed.

glory to Him. Don't be like the San Francisco

I do not have to touch you before you receive the man. You must not say that it is your strong will power of God into your life.

power that has saved you. If you're alive today, thank God for his mercy. God wants you to give I bind every blind spirit in your life in the

Him the glory. If you are healed, God wants you name of Jesus! I bind the spirit of paralysis in to give Him the glory.

the name of Jesus. Receive your healing in the name of Jesus. God is opening the eyes of the

He will heal you, save you and cast devils out

blind. Receive it now in Jesus' name! God is

of you. There is no problem or difficulty that He Dag
Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and
Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 284

healing you of cancer. He is healing you of

3. WEAK BONE CONDITION CURED

arthritis. His power is like ointment. Receive its warmth all over you! He is healing the barren.

A lady with osteoporosis for more than five

He is healing epilepsy. God is healing you of the months was brought to the meeting. She could

spirit of madness and depression.

not walk. She was in bed all the time because

she could not even get out of bed. She was

Your marriage may not be working but God is

brought to the crusade in a wheelchair. The

bringing healing to it. You will not be divorced power of God brought her out of the wheelchair

because God is healing your marriage. You will

and she was able to walk on her own. I never

not die! You will live!

touched her or spoke to her personally. He sent

God is giving you a car. He is building new

His Word and healed them.

houses for you. Receive these blessings right

now. Receive the spirit of prosperity. God is

4. P

taking away reproach and shame from your life.

ANALYSIS MIRACULOUSLY HEALED.

I see God giving you a blessing. Receive your

There was also a man who was totally paralyzed.

blessing. I see you being blessed! I see God

He had been in the wheelchair for five years.

blessing you! I see God healing you! I see God Since he
had not walked for a long time, his legs delivering you and I
see God giving you houses

had become smaller than the usual size because

and cars! Your life will never be the same again! the muscles had not been exercised. He could not walk at all. In fact he could not even move

TESTIMONIES OF MIRACLES BY

his legs on his own. The Lord touched him and

JESUS

life came back into his legs. Power returned to his legs and he began to walk. As a medical

I once preached at a crusade in which there

doctor, I know that when you have been

were thousands of people present. There was

paralyzed for some time, the muscles atrophy.

no way I could lay hands on anybody. But Jesus

Sometimes, the nerve supply is cut off and the

healed many people.

legs become like sticks that cannot do anything. It is a miracle even medically speaking, for a

paralyzed person who had to be bathed daily to

1. ACCIDENT VICTIM HEALED.

start walking. He sent His Word and healed His people! Actually, there seems to be more power

There was a man who had been knocked off his available when the Lord Himself touches us.

motorcycle by a car. As a result, he could not walk. He could not even stand. He had a

fracture in his hand as well. The Lord touched

5. A LADY RISES FROM HER WHEELCHAIR.

him and healed him by His Word.

There was yet another lady who had not been able to stand for three months. She was

2. LAME MAN WALKS AGAIN.

brought to the meeting in a wheelchair. But she got out of the wheelchair by the power of God. | Another person who for nine years could not

never touched her and I never laid hands on her. walk without a walking stick, was healed. I

He sent His Word and healed her.

never touched any of these people but the Lord healed them. He sent His Word and healed them.

6. BOY'S TWISTED LEGS STRAIGHTENED.

Children also receive their healing when the Word of God is sent to them. There was a child

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 285

SEASONS FOR THE ANOINTING / 285

who had a twisted leg and walked with difficulty. little strength and could not do any strenuous

The Lord touched him and he was healed work. The mother was praying for a miracle as completely. The leg was straightened out

she sat down in the service. She saw the power completely. Isn't that wonderful? This little of God touch her son. In a moment he began to boy broke down crying, because he was so take a few steps. The mother was so overcome overwhelmed by the miracle. His auntie told me that she broke down crying. She told me, that he needed to have surgery but she did not "Because God has healed him I want you to pray have the money for it. His legs had been totally for him that God continues to strengthen him." out of shape. They became arched and so he

Jesus is the same yesterday, today and forever! was given orthopedic shoes to straighten them. He sent His Word and healed them.

God touched those legs that night and healed them completely!

10. HEARING RESTORED TO DEAF EARS.

7. BREAST TUMOUR HEALED.

A deaf man was brought to the service by his friend. His friend testified that he was deaf in In the same meeting there was a lady who had both ears. The power of God touched him and a tumor in her breast. She said when prayer was he was healed in both ears. He had never been going on, she suddenly felt some warmth in her able to hear in those ears! I am sharing these chest. She did not even touch her breast. testimonies so that you will be encouraged to Suddenly, she realized that she was bleeding in believe in the power of God. that spot. She found out to her surprise that the tumor had disappeared.

11. PARALYZED MAN AND WOMAN HEALED.

8. YOUNG BOY TAKES FIRST STEPS.

A young man who had been paralyzed for thirteen years was healed by the power of God.

Jesus continued to touch little children in the

He had come to the meeting in a wheelchair. He

crusade. Another young boy had been brought

was able to walk and do what he could not do

to the meeting by his grandmother. He had

before. The Lord touched him and healed him.

crutches because he could not walk at all.

He is the Lord that healeth thee!

Whenever he tried to walk, he would drag his

There was yet another lady who had been

feet and not be able to walk. The Lord touched paralyzed for three years. She had been

him and healed him. He took his first few steps suffering from arthritis and the disease had

as the grandmother looked on with joy and
crippled her. The Lord touched her and healed
excitement.

her so that she could walk again.

9. DELIVERED FROM EFFECTS OF MENINGITIS.

12. EPILEPTIC GIRL RECEIVES THE WORD VIA

A lady brought her two-year-old son to the

RADIO AND IS HEALED.

meeting. This woman had three children, two

daughters and a son. Her first two children

People were even healed through the radio.

were born normally and grew well. Her only

How could I lay hands on people who were far

son, however, contracted meningitis when he

away from me? They heard the Word of God

was seven months old. The disease had affected

through the radio and received their healing.

him so badly that he could not walk. Every time There was a little girl who tuned in to the radio. he made an effort to walk he would just stand

She was epileptic and had attacks everyday. In

and wriggle his waist and sit down. He had very fact, she experienced at least ten epileptic

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 286

286

/ CHAPTER 32

seizures everyday. As she listened to the radio, As the Word of God comes forth, believe that

God healed her. In the middle of the programme

God will heal you. He sent His Word and healed

and as prayer was going on, she started having

them. Miracles are going to come into your life attacks. Then it ceased. This was about eight

as you hear the Word of God.

o'clock in the evening. She knew she had been healed because she did not have any seizures the following day. She would have had at least ten seizures in a day. This is a powerful miracle by any standard. The miracles continued as His Word was preached.

13. MAN SET FREE FROM WHEELCHAIR.

There was another paralyzed man brought to the crusade in his wheelchair. This man had blocked arteries and could not walk. He had been to see many physicians but they could not help. In fact, they had suggested that he have his legs amputated. He did not know about the crusade until his daughters informed him about it. They promised to bring him the next day. For four years

and four months he had not walked.

He could not even lift his hands during the worship time at the crusade. He had so much pain. He was in a wheelchair when the power of God touched and healed him. His daughters confirmed that it was a miracle. As he walked, they said he had never done it before. God did a miracle!

14. HYDROCEPHALUS HEAD SHRINKS BY THE POWER OF GOD.

One of the amazing testimonies was that of a baby's large head which shrunk at the crusade.

Is it not wonderful that God does great things even when no one touches you? A baby had been brought to this crusade with

hydrocephalus. This is a condition in which the head of the

child is greatly enlarged. His head just began to shrink. It reduced dramatically

and the mother testified that the head of her

baby had reduced in size.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 287

The Works of Jesus

33

POWER OVER THE ENEMY

THE POWER OF GOD AT

CALLED "DEATH"

WORK

1. THE WIDOW AT NAIN'S SON RAISED TO LIFE.

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth One day, He saw a certain woman whose only

on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and child was dead by the city of Nain. The woman

greater works than these shall he do; because I was crying over her dead child. The Bible says go unto my Father" (John 14:12). Jesus came that Jesus had compassion on her. He said to into this world many years ago. He did a lot of the young man, "Young man, I say unto you, miracles while He was on earth. I want to arise." "And when the Lord saw her, he had announce to you that He is doing those same compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not. miracles today because Jesus told His followers And he came and touched the bier: and they that, "The works that I do shall you do also, and that bare him stood still. And he said, Young greater works, shall you do, because I go to my man, I say unto thee, Arise. And he that was Father."

dead sat up, and began to speak. And he

We will live to see the power of God. We will

delivered him to his mother” (Luke 7:13-15). I

see the works of Jesus. Angels are real and God command you to arise from your wheelchair, or

gives His angels instructions to accompany His

your stretcher. Jesus is saying unto you to arise. servants. Jesus Christ is alive. He is saving and You will experience Jesus and the power of the

healing us today as He did yesterday.

Holy Spirit in your body!

As with the thief on the cross, He is right by

you even in your darkest hour. You can turn to

2. JAIRUS’ DAUGHTER RAISED TO LIFE

look at Him just as the thief did. You can ask

Him to have mercy on you. Jesus told the thief

The Bible tells us that Jesus was called to a

that He would be with Him in Paradise. The
certain man's house. This man was a ruler of
blessings of God are right beside you. He will
the synagogue. His daughter died. But Jesus
forgive you and save you when you call upon
laid hands on her and she rose from the dead.
Him. God is opening your eyes to see His
“And he put them all out, and took her by the
power and His goodness. Today, Jesus is here.
hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise. And her
He is working through His servants to do the
spirit came again, and she arose straightway:
same things that He did yesterday. He promised
and he commanded to give her meat” (Luke
that they would do the same works that He did.
8:54,55).

/ CHAPTER 33

I am a doctor. I have witnessed many people

THE POWER OF GOD IS STILL AT

die. I have seen people in the mortuary. I have **WORK
TODAY**

seen how death takes away people's lives.

Doctors cure most diseases, but when the hand

Jesus is saying to you today: "Don't be afraid, of death comes over a body, the doctors retreat. only believe." He will turn your night into day. One day, I was in the emergency room

He will turn your darkness into light. Perhaps,

attending to a dying lady. As a young doctor, I you are dying but I want you to know that you

was witnessing such a case for the first time.

will come into contact with the power of Jesus.

We tried to save her. My boss was standing by

Maybe your daughter or son is not well; but I

me, and the nurses were all around. We did all

want you to know that Jesus is alive with the

that we could to save her life. Unfortunately,

power of the Holy Ghost. The power of Jesus is

she stopped breathing and died whilst we were

entering into you as you read this textbook. He working on
her. When my boss noticed that she

is the Lord that healeth thee. Wherever you are, was dead,
she turned around and walked away.

the Holy Spirit is present with you. Receive your She didn't
try anything anymore because death

miracle! Place your hand where you have pain.

had taken over. Death is the greatest enemy of

Place your hand on the disease. The power of

man. It is the unsolvable problem of man. It is God will fall upon you like heat, and like the

the problem that doctors cannot cure.

wind. You will feel like the power of electricity passing through you. You will feel the touch of Years ago, we witnessed the death of Princess

God. The power of the Spirit is with you right

Diana. There was nothing human beings could now.

do. They had all the money in the world, they

had all the doctors in the world, but human

Sometimes, you may not feel anything but

beings looked on helplessly. But it was not so

you will notice that the power of God has healed with Jesus. Jesus was not afraid of death.

you in the name of Jesus.

Jesus was not helpless when He stood before

I command the paralytics to be loosed in the death. He conquered death. He pulled people name of Jesus. I command those in bondage for out of the grave with His awesome power. many years to rise out of that wheelchair. I Jesus began the journey to Jairus' house. On command the deaf and the dumb to begin to the way, something terrible happened. The speak and hear in the mighty name of Jesus child died and people were sent to tell Jairus, Christ. I speak to cancers, to the diseases of the "Your daughter is dead, there is no hope." But mind, mental diseases, spirits of madness, Jesus turned to Jairus and said to him, "Don't be epilepsy, to depart in Jesus' name. I command afraid. Only believe." When Jesus got to Jairus'

migraines and arthritis to depart in the name of house, the place was filled with people who

Jesus. Receive strength. Begin to move your

were crying. They were so sad. They told

leg, begin to move your limbs. God is lifting you Jesus, "You came too late. The doctors and the up. God is healing you because He is the Lord

nurses couldn't help us." But Jesus asked, "Why that healeth thee. You may have kidney failure, are you crying?" You may be in anguish but liver failure or heart failure. God is healing you. Jesus is asking you, "Why are you crying?" I He is touching you. You may be in hospital.

want to announce to you that there is hope

Receive your healing. Rise up in the name of

because of Jesus.

Jesus! You will not remain in the hospital! You will not remain in that stretcher or wheelchair!

"How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with

the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about

doing good, and healing all that were oppressed

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 289

THE WORKS OF JESUS / 289

of the devil; for God was with him” (Acts 10:38). **4. BRAIN TUMOUR**

I believe in the miracle-working power of God.

The same power healed these:

God also healed someone with a brain tumour.

She came to the crusade to be prayed for and

said that she felt something leave her body

1. PARALYSIS

during the prayer. She went back to her doctors for examination. She had her x-rays done again. There was a lady in one of my miracle crusades

The tests all came back negative. Doctors

who was suffering from paralysis. She had been

testified that the cancer was gone. He is a

confined to a wheelchair for three months.

wonderful God and He will heal you today! He

When she was healed, she pushed her own

is still doing His works! He has promised that

wheelchair around on the platform. God healed

the works that He did will we do also!

another lady of polio so that she could walk. She was a student in the university and she had

asked for healing so that she could continue her **THE SECRET BEHIND THE MIRACLES**

studies.

IS THE HOLY SPIRIT

In the same meeting, two men who had been

bound by paralysis for ten and twenty years

The secret behind the miracles is not a man. It respectively were healed by the power of God.

is the mighty Spirit of God. Whenever we

Whoever you are, receive the power of God and
gather in the name of the Lord, the Holy Spirit
your life will never be the same in the name of
is there. He is always ready to help many
Jesus!
people. Not only does he heal the sick but He
also raises up several people to do His work and **2. O**

His will. There is no greater work than the work
STEOPOROSIS

of Jesus. I want you to know that God is

Again, in the same service, there was a lady who
appointing you and calling you to do His work.

had osteoporosis for more than a year. The

He is sending you to go out there for Him. God

doctors had told her that her condition was

is going to raise up many people to do His work.
deteriorating. There were times she could not

Jesus was baptized by John the Baptist in the
move at all because of the pain. The Lord had
River Jordan. As Jesus was praying and coming
told her two months before the meeting that she
out of the water, a dove descended from Heaven
was going to be healed. At the crusade, she
upon him. That was the Spirit of the Lord.
suddenly felt something snap in her back. She
When the dove descended Jesus knew that the
then felt some pain and the feeling of soft hands power had
arrived. He knew that the anointing
touching her back and she was healed. She was
had come. “ And Jesus, when he was baptized,
grateful because she did not have money to get
went up straightway out of the water: and, lo,
the medical attention she needed.

the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and

3. KIDNEY PROBLEM

lighting upon him” (Matthew 3:16).

I want you to know that you cannot do

There was yet another lady in one of my anything for God without the anointing of the meetings who had a kidney condition. Her Holy Spirit. When the Spirit came upon Jesus kidneys were swollen and she could not bend He went into His own country, and preached over. Her abdomen was also swollen. She was there. He preached a very important message. healed and was able to bend over.

He said the Spirit of the Lord was upon Him.

“The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he

/ CHAPTER 33

hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the
by Blind Bartimaeus. I see Jesus stopping by
poor; he hath sent me to heal the
you. He has noticed you praying and knows
brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the
about your situation.

captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to In the same
way that Jesus asked Blind
set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach
Bartimaeus, "What do you want me to do for
the acceptable year of the Lord" (Luke 4:18,19). you?" He
is asking you the same question. You One of the most
important messages He

need to have the faith of Blind Bartimaeus. As preached was about the Spirit of God being you read this textbook, understand and believe upon Him. He said hHe was going to preach the that Jesus is passing your way. There is nothing gospel to the poor because the Spirit of the Lord too hard for Him to do. The Bible says there is was upon him. Jesus knew that the Spirit of the nothing impossible for God. There is no river

Lord had come upon Him and that was why He too wide that God cannot cross it. There is no announced to the people that the Spirit was mountain too high that God cannot move it. I there. He could feel Him. He could sense the see you experiencing the power of the Holy power and the anointing to heal.

Spirit! You are receiving healing right now. I declare and confess that you are being healed of **THE HOLY SPIRIT**

EMPOWERED

cancer. You are getting up from your wheelchair. God is healing you by His Word!

JESUS TO DO MIRACLES

The Holy Spirit is the one who heals the sick.

The secret is the Holy Spirit. That is why Jesus He is the invisible power of the Church. He is

did not do any miracle until the Holy Spirit came the secret behind the miracles. Below are

on Him. After the mighty Spirit of God had

examples of miracles generated by the Holy

come upon Jesus, He went about doing good

Spirit.

and healing the sick.

Jesus met blind Bartimaeus and healed him.

1. BLINDNESS HEALED

Blind Bartimaeus had heard that Jesus was

passing by. He shouted for help. He asked for There was a blind man who was healed in one of
mercy. The people around him tried to shut him
my meetings. This man was blind in his right
up. They said he was disturbing the peace.
eye and had a cataract in his left eye. He had
They told him, "Shut up! You blind man, keep undergone surgery twice but still could not see
quiet and do not disturb Jesus." But the man with the right eye. The Lord touched him and
continued to shout and to cry louder for help.
healed him. He could clearly see with the right
"And Jesus answered and said unto him, What
eye when he had the left one covered.
wilt thou that I should do unto thee? The blind
Blindness is something that medical science has
man said unto him, Lord, that I might receive

struggled with. But two thousand years ago,
my sight. And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way;
Jesus conquered blindness. The Holy Spirit is
thy faith hath made thee whole. And
the key to experiencing healing.

immediately he received his sight, and followed
Jesus in the way” (Mark 10:51,52). I want you
to understand that the same Jesus who passed

2. HERNIA DISAPPEARS

by Blind Bartimaeus is passing by you today.

There was also a little girl who came to a
Don't be discouraged If people are telling you
miracle service with a hernia that she had from
that Jesus will not heal you. That is what they birth. She had
a lump that was always present.

did to Blind Bartimaeus. Jesus will hear your

The Lord healed her and the hernia

cry. I see Jesus hearing your cry! Jesus stopped disappeared. After being examined by a doctor,

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 291

THE WORKS OF JESUS / 291

it was confirmed that the hernia was gone. The

little girl could say nothing but point her finger **THE
MIRACLE POWER OF**

there and smile.

GOD AT WORK

3. D

“For with God nothing shall be impossible”

IVINE SURGERY ON URETHRA

(Luke 1:37). We serve a God who is alive. We

There was a twelve-year-old boy in a miracle

do not serve a stone or an idol.

service who had a problem with his urethra. As

a result, he had problems urinating. He could

Inanimate Gods Have No Power

only pass urine in little drops. He would take a very long time to urinate. There had been plans One day, I went to a traditional ruler. As I talked for surgery but his mother could not afford it.

with him, he realized I was a minister of God

The Holy Spirit miraculously touched and

and he said to me, "I serve the river. I worship healed him. That is the secret behind the

the river that runs by my house."

miracles: the Holy Spirit. After he had been

I said to him, "Dear Sir, with all due respect, I touched by the Lord, he was taken to the rest

want you to know that I serve a living God." room to urinate. He did this freely and came

back to give glory to God. He had felt the power Some years ago, a friend of mine went to his

of GOD coming over him. He had felt

village in Africa. There are usually many idols something touch him during the service. The

and images in African villages. This friend felt Holy Spirit is the secret behind these wonderful like passing urine and since there was no real

miracles.

bathroom in the village he went into a corner

and began to urinate. As he was urinating, some

people began to shout at him, saying, "Hey!

4. PARTIAL PARALYSIS HEALED

Hey! Hey! Hey! Hey! Hey! What are you doing?" I remember a certain man whose legs were

But he was already urinating and could not

totally shattered. He had had a surgery that left stop till he finished. He then turned around and him almost paralysed. He ended up walking

saw a lot of people looking at him angrily. He

with crutches. He lamented that he wanted to
was wondering what he had done wrong.
walk because he had little kids and wanted to
Then they told him, "Did you know that you
play with them. The Holy Spirit touched him
were urinating on our god?"
and he started taking a few steps as the Lord
healed him.

Nobody can urinate on our God. He is alive
today and that is why he opens the blind eye and makes the
dumb to speak. If you are a god why

5. HEALING OF A DEAF MUTE

don't you speak out in protest when someone is
urinating on you? Even a chicken would run
One of the outstanding miracles I have seen was
away if you "wee-weed" on him.

that of a lady who had not been able to hear or

talk for thirty years. She could not say anything. In Luke 1:34-37 Mary asked the angel, "How

Neither could she hear anything. She could not

can these things be?" The angel replied, "The stop nodding and crying when she realized that

Holy Spirit shall come upon thee, and the power she had been healed. He is still a healing Jesus of the Highest shall overshadow thee... For with today! The secret is the Holy Spirit. He is the God nothing shall be impossible." I declare that invisible healer sent by the Father to bless our nothing shall be impossible for you. Every

lives.

impossible situation shall be made possible.

One day, Jesus Christ received a message from

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 292

some sisters that he loved. The message was

IMPOSSIBLE SITUATIONS THAT

that his friend Lazarus was dying. Jesus knew

WERE MIRACULOUSLY HEALED

the family very well. Lazarus' sisters, Mary and Martha were his personal friends. Jesus heard

about Lazarus' death and told his disciples that **1. BOUND IN A WHEELCHAIR FOR TWENTY-**

Lazarus was sick. Jesus was not in a hurry to

FIVE YEARS

get to Lazarus. This was the third time that he A young lady was at a miracle service I was

had been faced with a death situation.

holding. She had been in a wheelchair for

Perhaps some people had said that Jairus'

twenty-five years. She could not move by

daughter was not really dead when he had

herself. She always needed to hold on to
raised her up. This time he wanted Lazarus to
somebody before she could make any
be dead beyond all doubt. When Jesus raised up
movement. A cousin of hers had brought her to
the dead boy from the city of Nain, some people
the meeting. The Lord touched and healed her
might have doubted it. Some people might have
and she walked by herself. God can heal
said it was not real! This time, Jesus was going impossible
situations!
to wait until the man was buried. That is why
when Jesus knew that Lazarus was dead he
waited for four days. Jesus Christ raised the

2. EIGHTY-YEAR-OLD HEALED

dead from their homes (Jairus' daughter). Jesus An eighty-year-old woman, who gave her name

Christ raised the dead from a coffin (city of
as Maria, was healed of an eye condition that
Nain), and Jesus Christ raised the dead from the made her
see everything around her as cloudy.
cemetery after burial (Lazarus, brother of Mary She could
not have surgery because of a high
and Martha). He is Lord of Lords and King of
blood pressure condition. But now she could
Kings. With him, all things are possible.
see everything. To prove her healing, she
“Jesus wept” (John 11:35). I want you to
started counting the emptied wheelchairs that
know that Jesus is crying about your situation.
were lined up on the platform. With men it is
He cares about you! Jesus went to the
impossible but with God, all things are possible!

cemetery. He told them to dig out the coffin and The angel told Mary that the power of God

bring it out. He said, "Lazarus, come forth!" would overshadow her. The power of the Holy

"And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a

Spirit is what overshadowed these people who

loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. And he that was were healed. With man, it is not possible, but

dead came forth..." (John 11:43-44). Perhaps

with God all things are possible.

you are wondering why it's taken so long for you to receive a miracle. It's because Jesus wants

everybody to know that He has power to set you

3. MAN WITH BROKEN ARTERY

free. When the Lord shows you His power,

there will be no questions about it. With man it Another man was at one of my miracle meetings

is not possible, but with God, it is possible.

who had been in an accident. His leg was

Mary asked, "How can this thing happen?" The affected by this accident. As a result, one of his angel of the Lord told her: the Holy Spirit shall main arteries was cut and he had pain in his

come upon you and the power of the Most High

knee. He discovered that his knees could not

shall overshadow you. The Holy Spirit is with

support his weight anymore and his ankles got

you right now and His power is available to save swollen. He had to use crutches to be able to

and heal you.

move around. He felt at the meeting that a

warm feeling like heat was coming over him. It

came over his diseased leg. Suddenly, he

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 293

THE WORKS OF JESUS / 293

started running and holding the crutches in the

that it was affecting her ability to swallow and air. This is what I call the power of the Most

her breathing. She went to see a doctor and

High overshadowing you. With God all things

she was scheduled for surgery. But before she are possible.

could go in for the operation she came for a

miracle crusade. After attending the meeting

for three days, she felt that she had been healed. **4. VICTIM OF STROKE HEALED**

She went back to the doctor. The doctor

At a meeting where I preached that all things

examined her again but the tumour was gone.

are possible, there was a partially paralysed man He told her that she did not need to have the

who had not been able to walk for a month. He

surgery anymore! She came back to the healing had suffered from a stroke, which had left half crusade with her x-rays to testify about her his body inactive. He could not lift his arm and healing. could not walk. The power of God came upon him and he started walking.

8. DEAD BABY RESURRECTED

The most outstanding miracle I have been

5. MAN WITH TWENTY-EIGHT-YEAR-OLD ARM

privileged to witness is the raising of a baby

PROBLEM

from the dead. This lady had taken her child to the clinic because it had developed a fever. By For twenty-eight years, a certain man who had

the time she arrived at the clinic the baby had

been involved in an accident could not stretch

stopped breathing and she was told that her

his arm. He had had surgery which had left a child was dead. The doctor wanted to put the scar on his arm and he could not stretch long baby in the morgue. In fact, the mother was enough to be able to touch his shoulder. The asked to leave the body in the clinic because it operation had left him handicapped. But the was dead. She decided instead to bring the Lord touched him and he was able to stretch his baby to a crusade I was holding in Columbia in arm. He was able to do what he could not do February 2000. She was desperate and believed before. It was a miracle! that the Lord would raise the baby from the dead. Believe it or not, but the power of God

6. THREE-YEAR-OLD TAKES FIRST STEPS

touched this baby and brought it back to life.

The mother came to the stage to testify. As I

A lady, who worked with the city council,

listened to her, I wondered, "Is it real? Is she brought her grand-daughter to one of my

baby really healed? Was he really dead?" As I miracle crusades. The little girl was three-and-a-half years old. The problem was that she

testifying, I gave glory to God. The impossible could not move her body or walk. All she could

had happened: the dead had been raised. With

she could not move her neck. She could not stand

God all things are possible! "Then said Mary

up nor take a step. God touched this little baby unto the angel, How shall this be ...And the

and she began to walk. This was a miracle from

angel answered... For with God nothing shall be

God. All things are possible.

impossible” (Luke 1:34-37).

7. THYROID MASS HEALED

Another powerful miracle I have witnessed, is that of a lady who was suffering from a thyroid mass. This condition deteriorated so rapidly

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 294

MULTIPLE CHOICE QUESTIONS

CHOICE QUESTIONS

QUESTIONS

6.

According to the textbook the following set of people do not notice the harvest of the souls Answer all options with either T (true) or F (false). All around them.

quotations are from the King James Version (KJV) of a

Pastors, Evangelist and Teachers

b

Pastors and Teachers

the Bible unless otherwise stated.

c

Pastors and Christians

1.

"A good pastor is one who

who seeks and saves the

lost

Pastors, Evangelist and Christian

lost". This is inferred from which of the e

All of the above

underlisted verses.

a

Luke 19:10

7.

According to the textbook

b

John 10:11

a

Do not see the buildings.

c

Acts 4:12,13

b

See the harvest

d

Acts 2:42

c

See the vastness of the harvest

e

Matt. 6:9

d

In addition to all that you see, you must also

see the vastness of God's creative ability

2.

The following quotations and their scriptural references are correctly m

matched.

8.

According to Jn 1:10-11, Jesus said;

a

Follow me, I will make you fishers of men

I am the great shepherd

Matt. 4:19

b

I and the Father are one

b

"Christ Jesus came into the world to save
I am the good shepherd that ever lived

1 Tim 1:15

d

I am a shepherd indeed

c

"And he said unto them, Go ye into all

e

None of the above

the world, and preach the gospel to e v e r y
creature - Mark 15:16

9.

What should be the correct sequence in the d
Occupy till I come - Luke 19:10
following sstatement.

e

I must work the works of him that sent
For tthe sson oof ...

..... lls ccome tto

me, while it is day, THE NIGHT

..... and to That which
cometh, when no man can work - John 9:4
was ...

.....

a
God, save, seek, given

3.
The following are missionaries who made

b
Man, save, seek, lost
great sacrifices for the expansion of the

c
Man, seek, save lost
gospel in Ghana.

d
God, save seek, lost

a
Zwingli

e

God, save seek, give

b

F.A Ramseyer

c

Johannes Zimmerman

10.

The aabove SScripture ccan bbe fformed iin..

d

Johannes Christaller

a

Luke 18:19

e

Martin Luther

b

Mark 19:18

c

Luke 10:19

4.

The following are mistakes that prevent

d

Mark 18:10

effective evangelism

e

Luke 19:10

a

Procrastination

b

Church interaction

11.

A good pastor is one who

who ...

.....

c

Struggling with unsuspended harvests

a

saves the lost

d

Witnessing where there are many

b

saves to seek the cost

unbelievers

c

seeks to some the lost

e

Witnessing to people who have never b e e n

d

none of the above

to church

e

All of the above

5.

That sseeing tthey m

may ssee

12.

Some ppeople tthink tthat aa ggood ppastor ...

.....

a

Matthew 12:4

a

just sleeps at home with the sheep

b

Mark 3:12

b

just thinks about caring for already existing

c

Matthew 3:14

sheep

d

Mark 12:4

c

just thinks about the great harvest and

e

None of the above

participates as well

d

just manages with the few sheep available in
the church

e
none of the above

294

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 295

QUESTIONS / 295

13.
Where is this Scripture in the book of

19.

LINE Y

Y:
Timothy?

a.
20believe, whom heard

"....., tthat C

Christ JJesus ccame iinto tthe w

world

b

understood, whom, believed

to ssave ssinners; oof w

whom ll aam cchief.

c

perceive, whom, understood

a

ll Tim 1:3

d

receive, whom, preached

b

I Tim 1:10

e

none of the above

c

I Tim 1:15

d

II Tim 1:10

20.

LINE ZZ:

e

I Tim 6:6

a

preach, spirit

b

hear, message

14.

Why did G

God give the five-fold m

ministry to the

c

hear, prophet

body oof C

Christ?

d

minister, preacher

a

to ensure that Jesus Christ is revealed

e

hear, preacher

b

to ensure that the work of Christ

continues

21.

Which of the following scriptures talk about c

to ensure that the work of Christ is

evangelism?

revealed

a

Matt. 5;11

d

to ensure that God's ministry

b

Matt 28:19

continuous

c)

Matt 4:19

e

All of the above

d

Mark 16:15

e

Mark 5:19

15.

What is the ultimate goal for every minister?

a

Be pure and powerful

22.

The following are primary roles of the

b

To reap the harvest
church?

c

To win the lost to Christ

a

Building hospitals

d

To win the whole world for the church

b

Building the best schools

e

To achieve perfection

c

Preaching the word of Christ

d

Teaching God's word

16.

After sseeing aa llarge ccrowd, w

what nnext?

e

Having the best church buildings in town

a

see the educated ones in front

b

see the Lord on his throne

23.

Which oof tthe ffollowing ddrives aaway ccorruption c

see the souls who can be saved

and w

war?

d

have a bible with you

a

peaceful democracy

e

All of the above

b

righteousness propagander

c

salvation

17.

Which oof tthe ffollowing aare ffalse ...

.....

d

riches

a

Elections help present the harvest fields.

e

none of the above

b

Elections express the harvest fields

c

Elections expose the harvest fields

24.

The vision to win

the lost at any cost involves

d

Elections destroy the harvest fields

the following

e

Elections increases the harvest fields.

a

To train as many preachers as possible

b

To plant churches anywhere

c

To train many doctors, teachers and nurses

What should be the correct sequence in the

d

To dine with political heavyweights
following statement?

e

To heal the sick with tablets.

X How then shall they _____ on him
in whom they have not _____?

25.

Fill in the gaps with
with the given options to form

Y And how shall they _____ in him of
Eph. 22:10
_____ they have not _____?

For with

we are his ((a) ,, created in ((b) Z And how shall they
_____ without a

, unto ((c) ,, w

which G

God hhath

_____?

(d) ,, oordained tthat w

we sshould ((e) ,,

18.

LINE X

X:

in tthem.

a.

a bag, heard absent

a.

workmen

b force, understood

b.

Jesus Christ

c

call, perceived

c.

Goodness

d

hear, heard

d. Already

e

None of the above

e.

live

/ QUESTIONS

26.

Christians are backsliding everyday because

31.

The imbalance in the lives of C

Christian refers

a

They have no purpose for being in

church

to the fact that

b

They are trying to win souls

a

Some Christians only sing but don't

win

c

They have not found the reason for their
souls

salvation

b

Too much emphasis is placed on the

d

They have nothing to do after their
already established church

salvation

c

The cost and dying world is neglected

e

They find no meaning in the Christian
by the church

life

d

Too much emphasis placed on soul winning.

27.

According to the textbook soul winning

e

Nine coins are being over polished while

a

Gives meaning to Christianity
one is "changing colour" in a corner

b

Gives great joy

c

Energises Christians

32.

True or false?

d

Prevents church splits

a

Many Christians are Full Time Ministry

e

Is the heartbeat of Christians

as an alternative employment

b

An altar call for missionaries to go to New

28.

Match the scriptures below with their

York will yield a little response

corresponding statements

c

An altar call for missionaries to

a

Soul winning generates heavenly joy

Northern Ghana will yield a huge

----Luke 15: 7, 10)

response.

b

Soul winning leads to divine protection

d

The missionaries who died in Ghana w e r e

----Ps 91: 14 - 16)

looking for Gold

c

Soul winning gives great joy ----Luke

e

God is saying "if you don't spread out, I

10: 3, 7

will spread you out."

d

Soul winning gives meaning to

Christianity ---Eph 2:10

33.

Gaining bby ttrading m

means

e

Soul winning prevents church splits --a

The more you do God's work the more

- Rev. 3:17

the anointing increases

b

God's gifts supernaturally increases as

29.

Polishing a and m

more polishing of the same

you begin working

coins occur w

when

c

You become richer as you preach more

a

We preach to the crowd already in

church

d

Your anointing will double and triple as

b

We bring in anointed teachers and

you wait (on the Lord)

spectacular prophets

e

Your anointing will double and triple as

c

We hold marriage seminars

you plunge into evangelism

d

We have home cell meetings

34.

Kingdom PPromotion

e

We have end of year Christian get

a

Comes before "Gaining by Trading"

together

b

Comes after "Gaining by Trading"

c

Is an elevation that makes you marvel

30.

The SScripture ""Either w

what w

woman hhaving tten

d

Is an elevation you give to yourself

a f t e r

pieces oof ssilver, iif sshe llose oone ppiece, ddoth nnot
gaining

light aa ccandle, aand ssweep tthe hhouse aand sseek e

Is when you change your title from

a s t o r

diligently ttill sshe ffind iit?" iis ffound iin to bishop

a

Luke 8:15

35.

Mark 11:10 says

b

Luke 15:8

a

..... Thou hast been faithful in very

c

Luke 15:9

little, have thou authority over ten
cities.

d

Matthew 8:15

b

And the Gospel must first be published

e

None of the above

amongst all nations.

c

..... that he might know how much

every man had gained by trading

d

..... and at that time there was a g r e a t

persecution against the church

e

none of the above

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 297

QUESTIONS / 297

36.

When I say unto thee _____ (a) _____, then shalt 41.

The way to overcome procrastination in

surely die, and thou givest him no ____ (b) ministry is

_____, nor speakest thou to

warn thee _____ ((c) _____

a

To have crusades everyday

from his w

wicked w

way, to save his life; the same

b

Plan a rigid schedule of outreaches

wicked m

man shalt die in his _____ (d) _____ but

c

To attend a full Gospel Businessmen's

his _____ ((e))_____ w

will ll rrequire aat tthine hhand.

fellowship meetings every month

Which oof tthe w

words bbelow ccorrectly ffill iin tthe

d

Avoid postponing or cancelling fixed

indicated sspaces.

meetings

a

sinner

e

Disallow the cares of this world from

b

warming

choking the word.

c

wicked

d

wickedness

42.

The Scripture ""He that w

inneth souls is w

ise"

e

soul.

is found in

37.

The scripture quoted above is found in

a

Psalms 30:11

a

Jeremiah 3:18

b

Ecclesiastics 11:3

b

Isaiah 3:18

c

Proverbs 13:11

c

Hosea 3:18

d

Isaiah 11:30

d

Ezekiel 3:18

e

None of the above

e

Amos

3:18

43.

Which of the following may be seen as

38.

According to "win the lost at all cost", God unripened
hharvests tto bbe aavoided

considers the following people as murderers a

War zones

and kkillers.

b

Islamic regions

a

Those who refuse to warn sinners

c

Atheistic communities

b

Those who refuse to hold crusades

d

Old denominational unbelievers

c

Those who refuse to do door to door

e

European cities of today

witnessing

d

None of the above

44.

Ripened hharvests ffield iinclude

e

All of the above

a

Young students in universities and
secondary schools

39.

There are very few zealous evangelists today in
Muslim communities
because

c

Hardened fetish priests

a

Evangelists have little support for their

d

Sick people in hospital wards
work

e

Condemned criminals in the prisons

b

It is much more profitable to be a

pastor

45.

According to the textbook "If ever we need a

c

Pastors receive more offerings than

baptism from heaven, it should be a baptism
evangelists

of _____" .. C

Complete this phrase.

d

It is a thankless job

a

The Holy Spirit

e

The reward can only be found in

b

Fire

eternity.

c

Power

d

Zeal

40.

In order to stay focused on soul

e

All

winning, some of the things to avoid include a

Distractions

46.

The quotation above was

made by

Procrastinations

a

The Apostle Paul

c

Our reaches

b

Jesus Christ

d

Prayer meetings

c

Bishop Dag Heward Mills

e

Struggling with unripened harvests

d

Rev. E. A. T. Sackey

e

None of the above

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 298

298

/ QUESTIONS

47.

Complete this quotation from the chapter

52.

Even w

with aall tthe ggaps ccorrectly ffilled iin, ttwo titles ""Letters
oof aa ssoulwinner" key words will still be missing from this
I am filled with Holy anger against

Scripture, N

Name tthese ttwo w
words.

a

Never

a

The devil

b

Amen

b

Sin

c

Always

c

Unbelief

d

Forever

d

The church

e

None of the above

e

The pastors

53.

The above scripture is found in

48.

Fill in the gaps in this quotation with the (a)

Matthew 18:28

appropriate w

ords and phrases.

(b)

Mark 16:15

The hold of evangelism on me gets __ (a) __

c

Matthew 28:18

with eevery ppassing ____ (b) ____ . llt

d

Matthew 19: 28

never lessens. I dream of it, ____ (c) ____ with e

None of the above

that ddream aand ____ (d) ____ w

with iit

54.

This qqotation iis ooften rreferred tto aas

still occupying the greater part of my

a

The great Olivet statement

____(e)____.

b

The beatitudes

a

Stronger

c

The great parable

b

Year

d

The great commission

c

Sleep

e

The famous commandment

d

Go to bed

e

Spirit

55.

This sstatement w

was m

made bby

a

Matthew

49.

The quotation above was taken from the

b

Mark

letter eentitled.

c

Paul

a)

I am with you always

d

Jesus Christ

b

Dreaming about souls

e

The Gospel

c

I have a dream

d

Reaching the unreached

56.

Which of the following statements prove that e

Lets do the work

the w

world's spiritual landscape has changes?

a

Today Europe is the seat of Satan

50.

Letters of a soul winner comprises the

b

Most people in Europe are atheists or non following
subtitles believers

a

Reaching the unreached

c

The spiritually alive sections of the

world

b

Baptism of fire

have shifted to the poorer parts.

c

Dreaming about evangelism

d

Today it is white people who need to be saved

d

I am with you

e

God is acknowledged in Africa today m o r e

e

Let's die preaching

than in Europe.

Use the incomplete quotation below to

answer the questions that follow

Use the paraphrased passage below to answer Go ye therefore, and ____ (a) ____ all nations, the questions that

follow

____(b)____ in the name of the Father, and of A recent
ssurvey iin EEngland sshowed tthat oonly the son and of
the Holy ____ (c)____: teaching 28% bbelieved iin aa
""personal G

God". 337% ssaw

them tto ____ (d)____ aall tthings w

whatsoever ll hhave

God as a "spirit or life force," 45% believed ____ (e)____ you:
And lo, I am with you, even Jesus aas tthe sson oof G

God, aas ccompared tto 771%

unto tthe eend oof tthe w

world.

in 11957.

51.

Which oof tthese w

words bbelow ccorrectly ffill tthe

78.

From the above passage we can conclude
corresponding gaps?

that, in England today...

a

Visit

a

72% don't believe God is a real person

b

Preaching

b

37% don't believe God is a real person

c

Spirit

c

72% don't believe in the Bible's

d

Obey

teaching on God.

e

Instructed

d

63% don't even care about God's

existence

e

only 28% believe God is a real person

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 299

QUESTIONS / 299

79

The statistics above indicate that in England 86.

Which of the following activities constitute today _____
don't believe that Jesus is the son of God in

ppractice?

of G

God.

a

Leaving church or crusade grounds to

a

55%

invite sinners

b

71%

b

Printing nice invitation cards to the

c

37%

wealthy to come to programmes

d

28%

c

Putting a Christian literature into ever

e

45%

etter box without their owners'

permission

80.

Compared to 1957 how many believers in

d

Doing house to house evangelism

England hhave ggiven uup ttheir ffaith iin tthe SSon e

Playing fine Gospel music to attract

of G

God?

sinner

a

26%

b

28%

87.

In stage 11 of the ""The science of the following c

71%

Ministry"

d

37%

a

Mortality rate is low

e

none of the 1/3

b

Mortality rate is high

c

No medicines (to check mortality rate)

81.

The B

Basel EEvangelical M

Missionary SSociety ssent

d

There is a medical revolution

misisonaries tto

e

The growth of the population was very

a

Russia

low

b

West Africa

c

Asia

88.

In the stage II of the "the science of the d

India

follow-uup M

Ministry"

e

China

a

At time "x" there was no medical revolution 82.

There aare _____ kkeys tto tthe hharvest

b

At time "x" there was a medical revolution a

2

c

Mortality rate was greatly reduced

b

3

d

Mortality rate was greatly increased

c

4

e

Suddenly the population began to

d

5

shoot up rapidly

e

6

89.

Which statements are true about the following? The key of M

Massive O

Organisation m

means that

up M

Ministry.

to unlock the harvest, pastors m

must m

mobilize

a

It leads to retention of souls

their church m

members to have

b

Without it, evangelism is virtually a waste a

Massive organised prayer

of time and resources

b

Massive organised fasting

c.

It is a scientific way of preventing loss

c

Massive organised outreaches

of converts

d

Massive organised dancing

d

Follow up is to new converts, as breast

e

Massive organised waiting

feeding is to babies

e

As a mother who abandons her baby

84.

The kkey oof A

Anagkazo m

means tto

so is an evangelising church without a

a

compel

follow-up ministry.

b

force

c

drive

90.

Follow up aalso iinvolves tthe ffollowing.

d

necessitate

a

Planting churches where crusades and

e

threaten

evangelism have taken place

b

Praying for the converts that have

b e e n

85.

The w

word A

Anagkazo iis aa _____ w

word w

which

won

is taken from _____

c

Visiting the converts that have been won

a

Jewish/Luke 14:20

d

Ignoring the converts that have been won

b

Greek/Luke 14:21

e

Selecting the best converts and leading

c

Aramaic/Luke 14:23

the rest

d

Greek/Luke 23:14

e

Greek/Luke 14:23

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 300

300

/ QUESTIONS

91.

2 T

Timothy 22:2 aadvices uus aagainst tthe

95.

According to the passage above, the reason mistake oof
why w

we ggather eeach ttime iis tto

a

Wasting time on serious and faithful

a

Pray (b)

Show of our new dresses

converts

c

To read this book

b

Wasting time on non-serious and

d

All the above

unsaved 'converts'

e

None of the above

c

Praying too much instead of following up

d

Not doing outreaches but remaining in church

96.

"Reveal it to each person w

who reads this book:

e

Committing what we have received to the

The "it" refers to

unfaithful

a

The burden of the lord for souls

b

The reason why we gather each time

92.

"And they that be wise shall shine as the c

The correct time for us to gather

brightness of the firmament; and they that d

The way we should dress to church.

turn many to righteousness as the stars

e

None of the above

forever", T

This quotation is taken from

a

Proverbs 11:30

97.

The following statements are true about a

b

Matthew 28:19

church

c

Daniel 12:3

a.

A church is a regular gathering of Christians

d

Daniel 3:12

for the purpose of teaching

e

Proverbs 30:11

b.

The Great Commission will be fulfilled

when there are more gatherings and groups

93.

Some of the special rewards promised for

c.

God is in the business of creating

those w

who live and w

work for Jesus include

gatherings of teachable people.

a

Dinner at the tree of life

d.

God by His Spirit is raising men who will go

b

Becoming a member of the Royal

and gather people regularly to

teach

Family of Heaven

them his Word

c

Escaping damage from the second

Death

e.

All of the above.

d

Eating the Hidden Manna

e

Receiving the White stone

98.

The population of the world in 2004

according to the book "Church Planting" is 94.

Match the following scriptures with their

a.

6.1 billion

corresponding statements:

b.

6.1 million

a

..... To him I will give power over t h e

c.

1. 6 billion

Nations, Rev. 3:26

d.

4. 1 billion

b

..... The same shall be clothed in White

e.

Two hundred million

Raiment; Rev. 3:5

c

..... I will give him the morning s t a r :

In the multitude of people is the king's

Rev. 2:28

honour means that

d
..... I will confess his name before

a.
Pastors are kings

my father; Rev. 3:5

b.
Pastors and all Christians are kings

e
..... I will write upon him my New

c.

The more people there are in the

Name; Rev. 3:12

congregation, the more important the

pastor looks

Use the passage below to answer the

d.

Pastors should have one big impressive

questions that follow

gathering in order to fulfil the Great

" I pray that you w

will transmit into their hearts

Commission

the burden that you have O

O Lord ...

..... Show

e.

Multitudes of people in one place

us the reason w

why w

we gather each time.

would help to fulfil the Great

Help us to know that it is not to show off our
Commission

new dresses, our new suits, and our new

shoes. Reveal it to each person who reads this textbook".

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 301

QUESTIONS / 301

100.

The following statements about pastors are

104.

The following statements are false concerning false.

the definition of sin.

a.

The pastor with the largest

a.

Sin is the substitution of your wisdom

congregation will be the greatest in

for God's wisdom

heaven

b.

"Anomia " means to reject the law, the b.

Pastors with big congregations are

will and the way of God.

likely to be more humble

c.

According to 1 John 3:4, sin is the

c.

Pastors with small congregations will b

e

transgression of the law

great in heaven

d.

Transgression means one who acts

d.

The pastor who will be greatest in

contrary to the law

heaven is the most humble and

e.

Anomia is a Hebrew word

childlike pastor

e.

Pastors who are converted and become

Concerning the strength of a church,
as little children shall enter
into

a.

The strength of a church is traditionally
the kingdom of heaven
measured by its seating capacity

b.

The church was born as a sending
church

101.

How can ye believe, which receive honour

c.

Pastors rarely speak of the people they
(approval and endorsement) one of another,

have sent forth as missionaries

and seek not the honour (approval and

d.

The Antioch church had several

endorsement) that cometh from God

only? His

prophets and teachers who were also

in

Ministers of State

a.

John 4:54

e.

Barnabas and Saul were sent forth

from

b.

John 4:45

the Antioch church

c.

1 John 5:44

10.6

As iit iis w

written, T

There iis nnone rrighteous, nno,

d.

John 5: 45

not oone iis ffound iin

e.

John 5:44

a.

Romans 3:10

102.

Fill in the following gaps. For by ? are ye b.

Romans 10:3

saved through ??; and that not of ourselves: it c.

Romans 10:30

is the ? of God: not of works, lest any man d.

Romans 3:3

should boast. For we are his workmanship,

e.

Romans 3:1

created in Christ Jesus unto good ?, which 107.

The B

Bible talks about two different

hrones

God hath before ordained that w

we should ?? in

of judgements.

them. EEphesians 22:8-110

a.

The White Throne will be the place of

a.

Faith

judgment for all believers.

b.

Grace

b.

The Judgment seat of Christ is a

c.

Gift

different seat to judge the world

d.

Deeds

c.

The White Throne is the supreme

e.

Walk

court of heaven

d.

At the Great White Throne the book of

103.

The following statements are true concerning life will be opened

the definition of sin.

e.

At the Great White Throne the book of

a.

Sin is not necessarily doing something

works will be opened

evil

b.

Doing a good thing which is not God's

108.

Comparing the Jerusalem and Antioch

will is sin

churches,

c.

Sin is the rejection of God's will.

a.

It was persecution that forced the

d.

Sin is the refusal to accept God's plan a n d

Jerusalem church into church planting

God's will

b.

Saul and Barnabas were in the

e.

Sin is the substitution of your plans for

Jerusalem church

God's plans

c.

There was great growth in the

Jerusalem church

d.

Believers were first called "Christians" in the Antioch church

e.

The apostle Paul had as his home

church the Jerusalem church

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 302

/ QUESTIONS

109.

Further questions concerning the Jerusalem

114. These are differences between preaching and A

Antioch churches:

teaching:

a.

The miracles in the book of Acts are those

a.

When the word comes to us by

Paul and Barnabas experienced

preaching, our minds are ministered to

b.

The great difference between the

b.

Preaching has a more lasting effect than

Antioch church and the Jerusalem
church

teaching

was their response to the

c.

Preaching is moving and stirring
command of Jesus

d.

Teaching is more outwardly impressive

c.

The Jerusalem church cared for the poor
than preaching

d.

The first recorded revival took place in

e.

Teachers usually have churches that grow

Antioch

steadily

e.

The church at Antioch was started by

disciples from Cyprus and Cyrene

115. These are direct effects of teaching: a.

The teaching of the word brings light

110.

And Jesus went about all the cities and

b.

The teaching of the word is the sword in

villages, teaching in their synagogues, and action

preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and

c.

The teaching of the word is the

healing every sickness and every disease

planting of the seed

among the people is found in

d.

All of the above

a.

Matthew 6:35

e.

None of the above

b.

Matthew 9:35

c.

Mark 9:35

116. About the tent ministry,

ministry,

d.

Matthew 9:45

a.

The tent ministry is actually the lay ministry

e.

Matthew 6:38

b.

It is not Biblical to combine secular work with
the ministry

111.

The following statements about God

c.

The best New Testament example of t e n t
becoming aa m
man aare ttrue
ministry is the Prophet Daniel

a.

Over 109 prophecies were fulfilled by Jesus'

d.

The tent ministry will be a prominent
coming into this world
ministry in the last days

b.

Some diseases and sicknesses were

e.

Tent ministry is not as fruitful as full t i m e banished from
the presence of the

L o r d

ministry

in Jesus' ministry

c.

That Easter and Christmas are

117.

The following statements are true about the worldwide events are pointers to the fact

that God visited us

ministry

that God visited us

a.

It helps you avoid becoming a burden

d.

Jesus conquered death and the grave and

b.

It will enable you to survive in ministry

hell

without being paid by the church

e.

Jesus spent his time doing the

c.

To flow in the tent ministry, you need
maximum good for all mankind
wisdom but not sacrifice

d.

The tent ministry enables you to be f r e e

112. These aare rreasons w
why ppreaching iis ppowerful.
from all men

a.

Preaching attacks the root of man's

e.

Laziness is the greatest hindrance to t h e
problem
tent ministry

b.

Preaching releases the power of God

c.

Preaching gives hope

118. Concerning H

Hebrew w

words ffor bbarrenness:

d.

Preaching saves lives

a.

Aqar means to miscarry or suffer

e.

All of the above

abortion

b.

Shakol means, a salted, barren or

113. The ffollowing sstatements aabout ssin aare tttrue:

desert land

a.

Sin is the root of all our woes

c.

Melechah means the destruction or

b.

Sin leads all men to their death

removal of generative organs

c.

What is sin today may not be sin

d.

Otser means to inclose or hold back

tomorrow

e.

Tsiyah means a drought, dry land or

d.

Sin is behind all the causes of death

wilderness

e.

is sin to one person may not be sin to

another

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 303

QUESTIONS / 303

119. Are the following m

match-ups true?

125. Familiarity:

a. Aqar

Genesis

11:30

a.

Was the cause of Michal's barrenness

b.

Shakol

2 Kings 2:19

b.

Is not a cause of spiritual barrenness in this c.

Melechah

2 Kings 2:19

day and age

d. Tsiyah

Proverbs

30:16

c.

Was unable to neutralize the anointing

e. Otser

Psalm

41:18

on Jesus' life

d.

Is the greatest block to receiving God's

120

The G

Greek w

words ffor bbarrenness:

power from God's men

a.

Elizabeth was argos

e.

Connotes a sense of becoming

b.

Steiras is in Luke 1:7

presumptuous

c.

Argos means inactive, unemployed, lazy
and useless

126 The following are signs of familiarity: d.

Argos is in 2 Peter 1:8

a. Yawning

e.

Preaching about diligence breaks the argos

b.

Discussing the background of the man

type of barrenness

of God

c.

Evaluating and rating men of God

121. Concerning the definition of barrenness: d.

Having no regard for the anointing

a.

To be barren means to be issueless

e.

Honouring or appreciating your man of

b.

Barren trees do not produce the

God

normal fruit

c.

A barren land is a wasteland

127

The following ministries exemplify the fact d.

A barren thing can be described as

that intercession is the w

way out of barrenness:

copious

a.

The ministry of Hannah

e.

Barrenness speaks of having the power

b.

The ministry of Elijah

of conception

c.

The ministry of Jacob

d.

The ministry of Moses

122. Barrenness in the church is said to occur e.

The Jerusalem Church

when:

a.

There is the absence of healing and miracles

128. These are the stages that a missionary goes b.

There is no growth in the depth of

through when you send him to plant

relationships

churches:

c.

There is no growth in the number of leaders

a.

The Falling Process

in the church

b.

The Dissolving Process

d.

There is no growth in the number of f u l l

c.

The Dying Process

time staff

d.

The Denying Process

e.

There is no growth in fellowships and

e.

Bearing Much Fruit

branches

129. Obedience is better than sacrifice because: 123.

These are w

ways of fighting the barrenness of

a.

It is greater to obey humbling

old age:

commands than it is to sacrifice

a.

Do not reject the prophetic word

b.

It is better to obey instructions you do

b.

Believe in God, his prophets and in the
not agree with than it is to sacrifice
preaching of his word

c.

It is better to obey without fully

c.

Delegate outreach and church planting
understanding, than it is to sacrifice
to zealous shepherds

d.

It is better to obey a command that y o u

d.

Play music in your church that appeals

would not naturally do, than it is

t

o

only to the young

sacrifice

e.

Reject every old minister who comes to

e.

It is better to obey instructions that d o n ' t preach in your church

require your wisdom than it is to

sacrifice

124.

These ggrouops ooften ssuffer ffrom ffamiliarity: a.

Presidents

b. Colleagues

c. Relatives

d. Pastors'

Wives

e. Unbelievers

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 304

304

/ QUESTIONS

130. Concerning church planting and the priestly 134. What
Scripture can help you tell whether ministry:

someone is a real C

Christian or not?

a.

The prayers we offer are incense to the

a.

Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them

Lord

- Matthew 17:20

b.

The priest is able to save (or cause

b.

Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them

salvation) by intercession

- Matthew 20:17

c.

Great miracles happen to the priest as

c.

Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them

he performs his priestly duty

- Matthew 20:7

d.

A priest sins when he does not offer t h e

d.

Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them

incense of prayer

- Matthew 7:20

e.

We are priests unto the Lord

e.

Ye shall know them by their fruits Matthew 7:16

131. These aare ssteps iin pplanting aa cchurch: a.

You should get a complimentary card first

135. Are ttthe ffollowing sstatements tttrue oor ffalse?

b.

Count the cost

a.

Some people cannot bear fruit because they

c.

Elect a council of elders to begin with

are not real Christians

d.

Count the cost

b.

We can distinguish genuine Christians

e.

Lay a foundation of prayer

from counterfeit Christians by looking

at their fruit.

132. Are the following statements true or false?

c.

If by your spiritual activity others just

a.

The word of God teaches us in Genesis

like you are brought to the Lord and

1:22,23 that every living thing is

disciplined to behave like you then this fruit supposed to
bring forth after its kind

you are bearing shows you are for real.

b.

You are expected to give birth to

d.

Some Christians do not bear fruit

something which is just like you

because there is a spiritual sickness

because that is the natural order God has

somewhere

set on the earth

e.

Real Christianity takes place outside t h e

c.

The best person to minister to you is

church after Sundays and you must

someone of your own kind

constantly examine yourself if you are

d.

There are people who will only

in the faith according to II Corinthians

respond to someone they have

5:13

something in common with

e.

Bringing forth means leading

136.

Which of the following is not a disease that somebody to Christ through the gospel

enable a Christian to give birth and be

by your own means and strength

fruitful?

a.

Laziness

133. Through your Christian activities you can b.

Pride

cause someone to exist in Christ. What

c.

Immorality

scripture bbest ssupports tthis sstatement?

d.

Living in sin

a.

I Corinthians 14:15

e.

Smoking

b.

I Corinthians 15:14

137. The following qualities immunise us from c.

I Corinthians 1:14

becoming barren and unfaithful in the things d.

II Corinthians 4:15

of God

e.

I Corinthians 4:15

a.

Faith and Patience

134. To prove that you are a real C

Christian,

b.

Virtue and Temperance

a.

You must be able to pray over a long period

c.

Knowledge and Wisdom

b.

You must be able to have your own praise

d.

Godliness and Charity

and worship

e.

Brotherly kindness

c.

You must not walk through life like

t r e e s

without fruits

138. The statement in question 77 can be supported d.

You are expected to give birth to

by the scripture below:

something which is just like yourself

a.

Galatians 5:22

e.

You must follow the Full Gospel

b.

I Peter 1:5-8

Businessmen Fellowship International

c.

II Peter 1:5-8

example.

d.

I Peter 5:1-8

e.

I Corinthians 4:13

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 305

QUESTIONS / 305

139. "In order to bear fruit one must

overcome the

143. How can we switch from being inactive or chokers of
the world". W

Which of the following

mere spectators to active C

Christians?

statements best explains the above

a.

By breaking up our fallow ground
statement?

b.

By utilising our untapped potential

a.

One should not become so occupied w i t h

c.

By making our lives speak to the
other things that they no longer
h a v e

people around us

time for the things of God

d.

By using our talents and gifts in the

b.

One should not allow himself to
service of the Lord
become like many Christians who allow
e.

By making sure that we are growing as
the blessing of marriage to choke the
Christians
mind and end up no longer being
useful to God

144. Fill in the gaps:
c.

One should note that as God blesses a n d
When ll w

was aa -aa-,, ll -bb-aas aa cchild, ll -cc-aas aa promotes us
in this world, he does
n o t

child, I -dd-aas a child: but when I became a intend that it
should keep us from

giving

man I -ee-cchildish things. I Corinthians unto the church.

13:11

d.

One should be mindful of the cares of this

a.

Boy

world but not to the extent that all

y o u

b.

Taught

have to offer are excuses in not

d o i n g

c.

Speak

the work of God

d.

Understood

e.

One should take into account the fact t h a t

e.

Thought

God blesses and promotes us in

t h i s

world so that we will keep on

145. I C

Corinthians 113:11 ssupports

doing his work.

a

the seventh reason why you must bear

fruit

140. Which of the following scriptures support the b.

the third reason why you must bear fruit

fact that there are cchokers of the w

word in the

c.

the eighth reason why you must bear fruit

Christian's life?

d.

the fourth reason why you must bear fruit

a.

Matthew 4:19

e.

the sixth reason why you must bear fruit

b.

Mark 4:19

c.

Mark 19:4

146.

"Go out into the highways and hedges and d.

Matthew 13:22

compel them to come in, that m

my house m

may

e.

Matthew 19:4

be filled." T

This scripture can be found in ??

a.

Luke 14:13

141. What is the fourth reason w

why yyou m

must bbear

b.

Luke 15:23

fruit?

c.

Luke 15:13

a.

To show that you have overcome the

d.

Luke 14: 23

demons and distractions in the church

e.

None of the above

b.

To show that you have overcome the

chokers of the word

147.

Which word in the above scripture is

c.

To prove that you are a real Christian

translated ""Anagkazo

d.

To show that you are an active

a.

Highways

Christian

b.

Hedges

e.

To show that you are mature

c.

Go

d.

Compel

142. Complete the following scripture. ill in the e.

filled

gaps: T

Therefore, m

my bbeloved bbrethren bbe yye a-,, -bb-,, aalways -cc-iin
the w work oof tthe LLord,

148.

Which of the following phrases also mean

for aas m

much aas yye kknow tthat yyour -dd-iis nnot iin

Anagkazo ??

-ee-iin tthe LLord.'

I C

Cor 115:58

a.

To necessitate

a.

steadfast

b.

To drive

b.

unmovable

c.

To constrain

c.

abounding

d.

To oppress

d.

work

e.

To persuade

e.

useless

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 306

306

/ QUESTIONS

149.

“Anagkazo” iis aa ...

..... W

word

156.

Which oof tthe ffollowing sstatements iis ffound iin a

German

Romans 11:16 ??

b

Latin

a

Many are called but few are chosen

c

Hebrew

b

There is now therefore no more

d

Aramaic

condemnation to those who are in

Christ

e

None of the above

Jesus

c

For I am not ashamed of the gospel

150.

Which of the following methods of evangelism did

..... the violent taketh it by force

employs practical A

Anagkazo ??

e

None of the above

a

To use entreaties

b

To threaten your listeners

157.

Many C

Christians are genuine and have a real

c

To shout at your listeners

message to impart, but for the message to d

To fight with those who refuse to

have an impact.....

listen

a

It must be compelling

e

To weep before your listeners

b

It must drive the listener to change

c

It must persuade the unsaved to make

151.

Biazo is aI..... Word which means
a decision
.....II.....

d
It must be very mystical
a

I = Greek ; II = Shamelessness
e

It must bring in a lot of money
b

I = Latin ; II = Force
c

I = Greek ; II = Force

158.

The m

main eemphasis oof ""Anagkazo" iis d

I = English ; II = Power

a

How to organize a great supper

e

I = Greek ; II = Power

b

How to threaten and force people

c

How to win souls

152.

According to the textbook Christians are

d

How not to have an empty church

forceful

about

every

thing

except

e

Prayer

.....

a

Their jobs

159.

Why is "anagkazo" an important revelation?

b

Their girlfriends

Its iimportant bbecause.....

c

Their marriages

a

A certain type of evangelism will not w o r k

d

Their future

in this age.

e

God's work

b

Without it your church will be empty .

c

Without it many churches will die a

153.

"ANAIDEIA" m

means ...

.....

natural death .

a

Fear

d

People are going to give more and

m o r e

b

To compel

excuses .

c

To be ashamed of something

e

Jesus taught it

d

To force one's way into something

e

None of the above

160.

How m

many ppractical ssteps oof aanagkazo ddoes
the ttextbook llist?

154.

Another word which can be equated with

a

Six

Anaideia iis ...

.....

b

Seven

a

Opportunity

c

Eight

b

Fortune

d

Nine

c

Misfortune

e

Ten

d

Importunity

161.

Which of the following are listed among the e

Disgrace

practical ssteps oof aanagkazo ??

a

An anagakazo man prepares a great
supper

155.

The "Anaideia " principle is taught in b
He plays the drums

.....

c

An anagakazo person does not keep to
a

Luke 11: 8
himself

b

Luke 14 : 14
d

They make balloons out of condoms
c

Mathew 11 :28

e

He is not prepared to cancel his

d

Mathew 11 : 8

service

e

None of the above

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 307

QUESTIONS / 307

162.

Some examples of practical anagkazo

167.

Some ccommon pproblems eexperienced b

y

employed by the Bishop and stated in his

young ppastors iinclude tthe ffollowing;

textbook ,, aanagkazo iinclude

a

Some m

members ccome tthis w

week bbut n o t

a

Playing the drums in his younger days

next w

week

b

Clapping for attention to preach on a

b

People often come late to church

London bus.

c

People backslide

c

Clapping to wake up sleeping nurses to

d

New converts don't remain in church

preach to them

e

Outreaches not being done

d

Doing dawn broadcasts at the hostel of

Public Health Nurses

168.

The following statements are steps o

f

e

Moving out of his nice cute little circle

practical aanagkazo

of friends to reach out to others.

a

He is not overcome by people's

excuses

163.

Bishop D

Dag's statements about preaching to

b

He knows that many excuses are

to a small group of only ten people and

empty

playing the drums and piano in church

c

He knows that many excuses are lies
illustrates.....

d

He makes a way and does not make
a

Step two of practical anagkazo
excuses

b

The need for preparation before
e

He goes out of his normal circles of life
greatness

c

The fact that an anagkazo man

....."master iit iis ddone aas yyou

prepares agreat supper

commanded aand sstill tthere iis rroom"

d

S tep three of practical anagkazo

a

This statement is found in Luke 14 ; 22

e

None of the above

b

This statement is found in Mathew 14

; 22

164.

When the Lord asked the Bishop toclose a c

This verse was used to explain step 9 o

f

Sunday Service and go out into the
practical Biazo
community to bring the unsaved to
d

This verse inspired the song "There is
church.....
room at the cross for you "
a

He was illustrating step three of
e

This statement was made by a servant
practical anagkazo
to Jesus
b

It showed that " anyone practicing
anagkazo is not prepared to cancel his

170.

"And ffrom tthe ddays oof ...

.....I..... uuntil nnow

service"

theII..... sufferethIII..... and

c

He was illustrating step one of

the ...

.....IV..... ttaketh iit bby ...

.....V.....

practical anagkazo

a

I is Jesus Christ

d

He obeyed and it worked

b

II is Kingdom of Heaven

e

He postponed it till the next Sunday

c

III is violent

d

IV is violence

165.

"... FFor tthey pperceived tthat hhe hhad sspoken tthis e

V is force

parable aagainst tthem". T

This sscripture.....

a

Is found in Luke 20; 19

171.

Mathew 11 : 12 illustrates which of the

b

Shows that Jesus preached against excuses

following w

words ??

c

Illustrates practical anagkazo step four

a

Anagkazo

d

Is found in Luke 19 ; 20

b

Anaideia

e

Shows that an anagkazo man is not

c

Biazo

overcome by people's excuses

d

All the above

e

None of the above

166.

Which of the following statements about

excuses are true ??

172.

The following church programmes are enough

a

Many people are full of excuses

to w

win the m

multitudes to C

Christ

b

Manny excuses can be substantiated

a

Bazaars

c

Many excuses are empty and are lies

b

Fellowship meetings

d)

All the three excuses in Luke 14 are empty

c

Nice choir practices

e

A bad minister preaches against people's

d

Weddings

excuses

e

Anagkazo Crusades

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 308

308

/ QUESTIONS

173.

Match tthis ttranslation oof M

Mathew 111:12 w

with

179.

Some other practical methods of Biazo

its aappropriate ssource. ""The kkingdom oof G

God

employed bby tthe B

Bishop iin hhis uuniversity ddays

has bbeen eenduring vviolet aassault "" include tthe
ffollowing

a

Weymouth Translation

a

He directed each of his dawn

b

Goodspeed Translation

broadcasters to ten rooms

c

The William Translation

b

He directed each of his dawn

d

The Twentieth Century New Testament

broadcasters to about five rooms

e

The N .I . V .

c)

He directed his dawn broadcasters to t h e

lecturers houses

174.

"Men have been taking the Kingdom of

d

He directed his message at the Vice

Heaven bby sstorm "" T

This ttranslation oof M

Mathew

Chancellor

11:12 comes from w

which translation ??

e

He screamed till he lost his voice

a

Weymouth Translation

b

Goodspeed Translation

180.

Reactions to the application of the Bishop's c

The William Translation

practical B

Biazon

methods during his university

d

The Twentieth Century New Testament

days include the following

e

The N.I.V.

a

The people were very surprised

175.

Match this translation of M

Mathew 11:12 with

with

b

Some people were very angry

its appropriate source. "Men are seizing it c

Some people were outraged

(The K

Kingdom of H

Heaven) aas aa pprecious pprize

d

One lady ran downstairs to be saved

a

Weymouth Translation

e

Some people came down to beat up t h e

b

Goodspeed Translation

dawn broadcasters

c

The William Translation

d

The Twentieth Century New Testament

181.

During our city-w

wide crusades , each time

e

The N .I .V.

the Bishop from the platform commands

church m

members to go out into the streets to

176.

The following reasons from the textbook prove that
bring in souls, he is demonstrating

without B

Biazo w

we shall not succeed.

a

Anaideia

a

Sinners do not give a hoot about the gospel we

b

Biazo

preach

c

Anagkazo

b

People are hurtling down the road of

d

Fanatism

destruction

e

All the above

c

People are dying across the city all the time

d

Sinners don't care whether Jesus comes today

182.

" ...

... yet because of his iniquity he will

rise

or tomorrow

and give him as many as he needeth". This is

Many people are blinded by the devil

statement

a

Was made by Jesus

177.

"the god of this world hath blinded the b

Was used to teach on evangelism

minds of them that believe not..." This is c

Was used to teach on prayer

found in

d

Is found in Mathew 11 :8

a

1 Cor. 4 :4

e

Illustrates the revelation of Biazo

b

2 Cor. 4:4

c

1 Pet. 4 :4

183.

Which of the following statements are true?

d

2 Peter 4 :4

a

It takes shamelessness to start a church

e

None of the above

b

It takes shamelessness to ask for bread

c

It takes shamelessness to do an altar call

178.

Which of the following methods of practical d

It takes shamelessness to pray for the sick

Biazo did the B

Bishop employ at his preaching

e

It takes shamelessness to call for

sessions at the ladies' hall of his university ??

testimonies after praying for the sick

a

He sang Amazing Grace very loudly

b

They clapped their hands till all the ladies
woke up

c

He preached gently

d

He called out their room numbers in his preaching e
He directed the preaching to individual
rooms

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 309

QUESTIONS / 309

184.

Starting a church involves

190. The following statements are true

a

Breaking away with a segment of

a.

You can never tell who God is going to use

someone's church

b.

If you flow with the move of God, God

b

Moving into a room with two or three

will be with you

people and preaching to them

c.

If you fight against what God is doing

c

Telling your few people that they are in
you will never succeed
a great church.
d.

You must grow up in healings,
d

Renting a nice big hall to begin
miracles, and unbelief
e

Making expensive radio and television
e.

God can do certain things only
announcements

191. Which of the following things must a believer

According to the textbook, the following
grow up into?

happened w

when he began to pray for the sick

a. Healings

in church

b. Miracles

a

He was not worried about what people would

c. Manifestations of the Holy Spirit

think

d. Moves of the Spirit

b

The devil told him "Don't disgrace

e. The greetings of the Spirit

yourself....."

c

The devil told him "Just close the

192. Which of the following statements are true?

service here....."

a.

What we need to understand is what God is

d

He said to himself "I feel ashamed "

doing at this particular moment

e

He said to himself "I won't do it again " b.

God can be predicted and stereotype

c.

Following the Holy Spirit will help you

186.

According to the textbook, some of the

to align yourself with God

thoughts that keep people from powerful

d.

According to the author, there are four

ministries iinclude.....

(4) to follow the visible appearances of

a

"What if no one responds (to my alter c a l l s) the Holy Spirit.

?"

e.

Avoid praying for people that God is

b

"What if the offerings are not much ?" not healing.

c

"People will think that you are not
anointed "

193. The m
most successful M
Ministers aare
d

"Your message was not powerful
a.

Those who ignore the Holy Spirit.
enough"
b.

Those who do not follow the Holy
e

All the above
Spirit.
c.

Those who strictly follow the

187. The G

Greek w

word ""phanerosis" m

means

appearances of the Holy Spirit.

a.

Manifestations

d.

Those who pray a lot.

b.

To make visible

e.

Those who read the Bible a lot.

c.

Power

d.

Wisdom

194. The following statements are true?

e.

Knowledge

a.

You can do everything that God is not doing.

188. To be made

visible is

b.

You cannot do anything that God is not

a. Made

tangible

doing.

b. Available

c.

You can be healed if He is not healing
you.

c. To

understand

d.

If God is not delivery you, you cannot b
e

d.

To make powerful
delivered.

e. To

interact

e.

All of the above.

189.

Phanerosis w

which iis ttranslated m

manifestation

195. How does the Holy Spirit become visible to also means

the aaverage C

Christian?

a. A

sign

a.

His silent voice

b. An

expression

b.

His audible voice.

c. A

demonstration

c.

His teaching ministry.

d. The

symptom

d.

Through His fire.

e. The

appearance

e.

None of the above.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 310

196. When Jesus promised his Holy Spirit to 202. The
greatest barrier to the supernatural is believers, H

He promised us

a. Demons.

a. A

prophet.

b. Witchcraft

power.

b.

An anointed evangelist.

c. Chemical

weapons.

c.

A seasoned Pastor.

d.

State of naturalness

d. A

teacher

e.

None of the above.

e.

All of the above.

203. Which oof tthe ffollowing sstatement(s) iis ttrue?

197. Which of the following scripture(s) teach us a.

Mature Christians have their senses

that the Holy Spirit is here to remind us of exercised to discern good from evil

what JJesus ttold uus iin H

His W

Word?

b.

Mature Christians are those who pray all the

a. John

16:8-14

time and read the Bible

b. John

14:26

everyday.

c. John

14:16

c.

The word "senses" is derived from the

d. John

14:15

Greek word "aistheterion".

e.

None of the above

d.

Young Christians are not supposed to eat a strong meat.

198. Which of the following are the essential elements.

None of the above.

rewards that the Holy Spirit brings to you through the teaching of God

God's word?

word?

204. God expects Christians to use their organs of

Christians to use their organs of

a.

All things that pertain to success

perception to:

b.

All things that pertain to the anointing

a.

Mature in life

c.

All things that pertain to life.

b.

Maneuver in life

d.

All things that pertain to Glory.

c.

Detect or discern spiritual things.

e.

All things that pertain to godliness.

d.

Manipulate their way into spiritual
things

e.

All of the above.

199. What do you understand by the expression

"All things that pertain unto godliness?" 205. The w

word "heart" comes from the G

Greek w

work:

a.

It means you can live a righteous life t

o

a. Cardia

please God.

b. Kardia

b.

It means you can live a sacrificial life f o r

c. Kardos

God.

d. Cardos

c.

It means you can be in Church

e.

None of the above.

regularly and participate fully.

d.

It means you can be spiritual.

20.6 The heart of some Christians has become e.

All of the above.

gross. T

This m

means

a. Dull

200. Life iis m

made uup ttwo ((2) ccompartments. T

These

b. Stupid

are:

c. Fat

a. Supernatural

life

d. Inattentive

b Supersonic

Life

e.

All of the above.

c. Spiritual

life

d. Natural

life

207. The ssupernatural ooperates oonly tthrough e.

All of the above.

your

a. Eyes

201. C

Cut out the supernatural events from the Bible

b. Ears

and you are left with a book on

c. Thoughts.

a. Literature.

d. Feelings

b. Natural

life.

e.

All of the above

- c. Philosophy.
- d. Astrology.

208

The supernatural is always

e.

None of the above

- a. Sensational
- b. Dramatic
- c. Spectacular
- d. Experiential
- e.

None of the above

209. According to 11 C

Corinthians 12:8-11, the

216. Which of the following are listed

following are listed in

manifestations of the H

Holy

demonstrations of the Holy Spirit?

Spirit

a.

baptism in the Holy Spirit

a.

word of wisdom.

b.

interpretation of tongues

b.

word of knowledge

c.

falling under the power

c. Prophecy

d.

the word of wisdom

d. shakings

e.

the word of knowledge and the

e.

None of the above

discerning of spirits

210. When you have the manifestation of the 217. Which of the following phenomena did John discerning of spirits, you see and detect the Wesley experience?

following

a. bodily

convulsions

a. angels

b.

people dropped on every side

b. Demons

c.

people's bones shook

c. God

d.

several fell to the ground

d. hell

e.

manifestation of demons

e.

All of the above

218. What is the commonest unlisted

211. The gift of Seeing and Knowing will bring manifestation of the Spirit?

about the following

a. Supernatural

miracles

a.

Protection

b. Prophecy

b. Prophetic

utterances

c.

Falling under the power

c.

Identify Judas' around you

d.

the rain of the Spirit

d. Direction

e.

None of the above

e. Uncover

liars

219

When the Spirit ministers to a person, the 212

Leaders are often

Lord shows and reveals certain things to the a.
praised

person that touch the deepest emotions

b. paid

honorarium

within. T

The person w

will m

most likely

c. lied

to

a. prophesy

d. teased

b.

speak in tongues

e.

told the truth

c. discern

spirits

d.

fall under the power

213. An advanced type of seeing and knowing is e.
weeps

uncontrollably

a.

the gift of prophesy

b.

the gift of tongues

220. What are obvious manifestations of joy?

c. visions

a. crying

d.

the spirit of wisdom and revelation

b. clapping

e. dreams

c. running

d. smiling

214. One of the top strategies of Satan against laughing

ministers is

a.

sexual immoral conduct

221. What are people usually experiencing when b.
backsliding

they feel the baptism or pouring on of fire on c.
blasphemy

parts of their bodies?

d. undermining

a.

the joy of the Lord

e. Confusion

b. the

anointing

c. sanctification

215. God can save your life from destruction d.
healing

through

e.

judgment from God

a. testimonies

b. dreams

c. miracles

d. visions

e.

None of the above

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 312

312

/ QUESTIONS

222. One of the greatest keys to flowing in the 229.
Jehovah R

Rophe m

means

supernatural iis

a.

The Lord your doctor

a.

having faith in the unseen

b.

The Lord you physician

b.

to believe that what you are seeing is

c.

The Lord your advocate

what you have believed for

d.

The Lord your righteous judge

c.

desire the healing anointing

e.

The Lord your healer

d.

regular prayer and fasting

e.

watching healing videos

230. Healing involves

a.

physical ailments only

223. What must you do after believing "this is b.

many areas of our lives

that?"

c.

preventing us from getting sick

a.

Simply accept supernatural things

d.

keeping us alive

b.

Prove all things

e.

God coming into our lives as a specialist

c.

confirm it with two or more witnesses

d.

flow with them but test them

231. To hheal m

means

e.

None of the above

a.

to make healthy

b.

to become healthy

224. God's different names

c.

to make something easier to bear

a.

are revealed to different people

d.

to cure somebody who is ill

b.

show the different attributes of God

e.

All of the above

c.

illustrate the diverse ways he

demonstrates his power

232. Rophe m

means tto

d.

cannot all be known

a. assure

e.

are Hebrew words

b. fix

c. mend

225. Which nname ddescribes G

God aas tthe C

Creator?

d. build

up

a. Jehovah

Rophe.

e. edify

b. Elohim

c. El

Shaddai

233.

What percentage of the Gospel verses talk

d.

Ehayeh Asher Ehayeh

about tthe hhealing m

miracles oof JJesus

e. YHWH

a. 20%

b. 40%

226. El SShaddai m

means

c. 60%

a.

God the creator

d. 80%

b.

the Almighty one who has everything t h a t

e. 99.5%

you would ever need

c.

the mighty breasted one

235.

Which oof tthese aare ffacts?

d.

the God kind of Love

a.

All are healed

e. our

Healer

b.

God is trying to make everybody

believe F

227. Ehayeh A

Asher EEhayeh

c.

many believe who don't see any

a.

means the promise keeper

miracles believe

b.

was a name revealed to Moses

d.

no one will hate you when you preach

c.

Means "I am that I am"

the truth

d. is

Greek

e.

Certain people will never believe, no matter

e.

means the God who is existing

what God does.

228. FOR II A

AM T

THE LLORD T

THAT H

HEALETH T

THEE

236. True oor FFalse?

is ffound iin

a.

God has determined that people

a. Exodus

14:14

should be saved by preaching

b.

Exodus 9:3

b.

God has determined that people

c. Exodus

10:11

should be saved by miracles

d. Exodus

15:26

c.

God is trying to eradicate sickness f

r o m

e.

Exodus 24:13

the world through preachers

d.

Jesus is trying to heal everybody

e.

Jesus is trying to save every soul

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 313

QUESTIONS / 313

237. The healing anointing is

21.

Explain the nature of the Holy Spirit as

a.

more prominent in the Old Testament

a.

Wind

b.

our only chance to reach the world

b.

Rain

c.

available only for the twelve apostles and

c.

Wine

the seventy sent out

22

Write a half page note on the phenomenon of

d.

brings healing to the broken-hearted

falling under the power of the Holy Spirit. P

e.

our chance to be relevant

23

People sometime weep and cry under the

power of the Holy Ghost. What is the

scriptural basis for this manifestation.

SHORT NOTES QUESTIONS

24

Trembling in God's presence is a real

manifestation of the Holy Ghost. List some

1.

The manifestations of the spirit are given to
examples in the Bible with accompanying
every man. Explain this assertion.
scriptures.

2.

Briefly explain the Greek word 'phanerosis'.

25

Explain what the author means by "This is

3.

What is the importance of the phanerosis of
that" faith. Why is important. Give two (2) the Holy Spirit.
instances to illustrate this.

4.

"You will only succeed to the extent to which 26

List some of the varied manifestations of the
you flow with the Lord". Explain this

Holy Spirit the author speaks about. Explain
statement.

four (4) of them.

5.

Why is it important for us to flow with God?

27

Explain the great revelation in Exo 15:26 to

6.

Briefly explain how you can align yourself
humankind.

with God?

28

Write a brief note on the different names of

7.

Describe briefly the three ways you need to
God.

flow follow the invisible appearances of the

29

Explain the meanings of the following names
Holy Ghost?

of God

8.

Write about three important lessons you must

a.

Jehovah

have in mind as you follow God?

b.

El-Shaddai

9.

"The Holy Spirit must be manifested in your c
Elohim

life as a teacher". Explain this statement
d.

Ehayeh Asher Ehayeh
briefly.

30.
Write a one (1) page note on the different
10.

As a teacher, the Holy Spirit plays several
dimensions of the Hebrew word "Rophe". roles in the life of
a believer. List some of

31.
Sin in the life of Adam and Eve brought
them.

dramatic changes in the body of human

11.

Explain the natural and supernatural

beings. Explain this assertion.

dimensions of the life of the believer.

32.

How did sickness and disease enter into the

12.

What is "Kardia"? How important is it for a life of man?

Explain in one (1) page, God's

Christian life?

healing plan.

13.

Organs of perception are useful for the

33.

Jesus Christ came to heal. Explain this

supernatural life of the believer. Explain how.

statement.

14.

How can you move out of naturalness into the

34.

"Somebody may say we don't need healing.

supernatural?

Explain why you do not agree with this

15.

When people say "God spoke to me", what assertion.

does it mean? How can you experience this?

35.

Write a short note to explain the fact that

16.

List the manifestations of the Holy Spirit as

divine healing covers all aspects of healing.

found in I Cor 12: 8-11.

36.

"Healings do not depend on manifestations of 17.

Write short notes on the Nine (9) gifts of the
the Spirit. Explain this assertion.

Holy Spirit.

37.

Write a short on why God works miracles.

18.

Explain the gift of seeing and knowing,

38.

Sister Jane said to Bro Enoch, "Am really
showing its importance in different areas of
disappointed in the Lord. You did not heal my
your life.

brother during the miracle service". What

19.

List and describe the unlisted manifestations
explanation should brother Enoch give to
of the Holy Spirit which John Wesley
Sister Jane in order to help her maintain her
experienced in his ministry. P61
faith in the Lord.

20.

With the help of appropriate scriptures,

39.

God does not heal everybody. Explain why.
explain why people fall under the power of

40.

Miracles are common yet not the method of
the Holy Spirit.
salvation. Explain why.

314

/ QUESTIONS

41.

Explain to your new convert why she or he

59.

There are seven things that every

church

must continue to take his or her medications,

planter should know about the

even though God can miraculously heal.

Priestly Ministry. Briefly enumerate them.

42.

God does healing miracles in the life of

60.

What steps should be followed to start people. Write a short note to explain why this a church. Why do people fear to start is so.

a church?

43.

The healing anointing is our only chance to

61.

What advantages are there of a reach the world. Discuss this statement.

network of churches. Briefly discuss them.

44.

There are several reasons the church must

62.

Familiarity is one common cause of have the healing anointing. List and write

barrenness. Name (10) signs of

short notes on them.

familiarities.

45.

Explain the following characteristics of the

63.

As Christians, what does bearing fruit involve

Holy Spirit.

and how can we bear fruit.

i.

The Anointing

64.

Why should we bear fruits.

ii.

The Power

65.

How does bearing fruits after your kind show

iii.

The Fire dimension

that :

iv.

Physical dimension

(i)

You are abiding in Christ

46.

The healing anointing has six (6) dimensions.

(ii)

You have overcome the demons and

Discuss each of them.

distraction in the church

47.

Outline seven impact of soul winning in the

(iii)

You are healthy
church.

66.

From which verse of scriptures is the word

48.

Is it true that there is a murder charge if
anakagzo found? Give the simple meanings
Christian fails to win souls for the Lord.

of the word anakagzo?

49.

How can one avoid such if true. Explain with

67.

How different in meaning are the words
scriptural support.

Anakagzo, Biazo and Anaideia.

50.

Mention 3 things that can take your focus

68.

From the story Jesus told in Luke:14 of the
away from soul wining.

important man who held a party for his

51.

Discuss how the work of the white
friends, what practice steps to Anakagzo can
missionaries have impacted Christianity in
one use to win souls.

Ghana today.

69.

Why should you say that Anakagzo is an

52.

Will there be reward for the soul winners? If
important principle to soul wining. (Give at
yes what i
least 4 reasons).

53.

Is evangelism the fulfilling of the great

70.

When would you use Biazo and why?
commission. Yes-NO. Explain the above

71.

How would you use Anaideia for soul wining?
statement.

54.

Compare and contrast the Jerusalem church
and the Antioch church with regards to

church planting.

55a. Why is preaching of Gods word powerful.

b. Why is teaching of Gods word powerful. c. Discuss the difference between teaching and preaching.

d .

What three direct effect are teaching on the child of God.

56.

What is the Tent Ministry, How different is it from the full time ministry.

57.

Barrenness is the number one cause of lack of church planting in the modern Christian church.

a.

How would you diagnose Barrenness in the

church.

b.

How do you fight the different kind of

Barrenness.

58.

Discuss the three keys to planting a

network of churches.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 315

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Emmaus Bible School. The Holy Spirit at Work. North Oak
Park Avenue, Illinois: Emmaus

Alasdair, Heron.

The Holy Spirit. 1 Bathstreet,

Correspondence School, 1977.

London: Marshall Morgan & Scott, 1983.

Erikson, M

Millard JJ. Christian Theology. Grand Rapids,

Anderson, Neil T. The Bondage Breaker. Eugene, MI:
Baker, 1985.

Oregon: Harvest House Publishers, 2000.

Fison, J.E. Fire Upon the Earth. n. c. Edinburgh Andrews,
Ian. Building a People of Power. Milton House Press. 1958.

Keynes, England: Word Publishing, 1988.

Fountain, E. Daniel. Health, the Bible and the Bailey, M.
Keith. Divine Healing: The Children's Church. n.c.:
Fountain, 1989.

Bread. Camp Hill, Pennsylvania: Christian

Freeman, W

Wade C

C. The Holy Spirit's Ministry. Grand

Publications, 1977.

Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House,

Bevington, G

G. C

C. Remarkable Miracles. Gainesville,
1980.

Florida: Bridge-Logos Publishers, n.y.

Gill, Joyce and A. L. Miracles Are Still Happening.
Bloomer, George. Empowered from Above. New

New Kensington, PA: Whitaker, 2000.

Kensington, PA: Whitaker House, 2002.

Graham, B

Billy. Angels. New York, NY: Pocket Books,

Boice, M

Montgomery JJames. Ordinary Men Called by
1975.

God: A Study of Abraham, Moses and David.

———. The Holy Spirit. Waco Texas: Word Books Grand
Rapids, Michigan: n.p. 1982.

Publishers, 1978.

Bonnke, R

Reinhard. Mighty Manifestations. Frankfurt,

Grill, JJoyce. Miracles Are Still Happening. Wheaton,
Germany: Full Flame GmbH, 1982.

Illinois: Tyndale House Publishers, 2000.

Bottari, Pablo. Free in Christ. Lake Mary, Florida: Hagin, E.
Kenneth.

Bible Healing Study Course.

Charisma House Publishers, 2000.

Tulsa, OK: Faith Library Publications, 2004.

Bridge, D

Donald. Spiritual Gifts & the Church. London:

———. I Believe in Visions. Tulsa, Oklahoma:

Intervarsity Press, 1974.

Kenneth Hagin Ministries Inc., 1984.

Brown, Herbert W. Fire, Radiance and Love.

———. Jesus, the Open Door. Tulsa, Oklahoma:

Wheaton, Illinois: Tyndale House Publishers,

Kenneth Hagin Ministries Inc., 1984.

Inc., 1979.

———. Seven Things You Should Know about

Brownville, Gordon C. Symbols of the Spirit.

Divine Healing. Tulsa, OK: Faith Library

Wheaton, Illinois: Tyndale House Publisher's,

Publication, 1979.

1978.

———. The Healing Anointing. Tulsa, OK: Faith

Bush, Lewis and Beverly Pegues. The Move of the Library
Publications, 2004.

Holy Spirit in the 10/40 Window. Seattle, WA:

———. The Triumphant Church. Tulsa, Oklahoma:

YWAM Publishing, 1999.

Faith Library Publications, 1993.

Butler, Staut M. Heritage Lecture: Is Prayer Good

———. Understanding the Anointing. Tulsa, OK:

For Your Health? A Critique of the Scientific

Faith Library Publications, 1982.

Research: The Heritage Foundation, December

Heijkoop, H.L. The Holy Spirit is a Divine Person. 22, 2003.

Fort Washington, Pennsylvania: Christian

Chambers, O

Oswald. The Love of God. Grand Rapids,

Literature Crusade, 1974.

Michigan: Discovery House, 1985.

Henry, F.H. Carl. God, Revelation and Authority. Coleman,
Robert E. The Holy Spirit and the Word. Waoc, Texas:
Word Books Publisher, 1983.

New Jersey: Fleming H. Revell Company, 1975.

Henry, Matthew. Mathew Henry's Commentary on

Coomson, Kofi. The True Independent Chronicle. the Whole Bible. n.c.: Hendrick Publishers Inc., Friday December 6, 2002.

2003.

Cymbala, Jim. Breakthrough Prayer: The Secret of Hession, Roy. Be Filled Now.

Fort Washington,

Receiving What You Need From God. Grand

Pennsylvania: Christian Literature Crusade,

Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 2003.

1980.

Dehaan, Richard. The Holy Spirit and You. Grand Heward-M

Mills, D

Dag. Church Planting. Accra, Ghana:

Rapids, Michigan: W Radio Bible Class, 1928.

Parchment House, 2004.

Dickason, C

C. F Fred. Angels, Elect and Evil. Chicago:

———. Transform Your Pastoral Ministry. Accra,

Moody, 1975.

Ghana: Parchment House, 2001.

Dickson, Athol. The Gospel According to Moses. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Brazos Press, 2003.

315

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 316

316

/ BIBLIOGRAPHY

Hinn, B

Benny. He Touched Me. Nashville, Tennessee:

MacArthur, John. Unleashing God's Work in Your Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1999.

Life. Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson,

———. The Anointing. Nashville, Tennessee:

2003.

Thomas Nelson Inc., 1997.

Maddock, Morris. The Christian Healing Ministry. Howard, David. By the Power of the Holy Spirit. London: SPCK, 1995.

Downer's Grove, Illinois Intervasity Press, 1975. Marshall, C

Catherine. The Helper. Waco Texas: Word

Huch, Larry.

Free At Last. New Kensington,

Books, 1980.

Pennsylvania: Whitaker House, 2004.

Mayhue, Richard. Divine Healing Today. Chicago: Hunter, FFrances aand C

Charles. Handbook for Healing.

Moody, 1983.

New Kensington, PA: Whitaker, n.y.

Maynrd, James. I Believe in the Holy Ghost.

Jensen, Jerry. The Baptist and the Baptism of the Minneapolis, Minnesota: Bethany Fellowship

Holy Ghost. Los Angeles, California: Full Gospel Inc., 1965.
Men's Voice, 1963.

Mcconkey, James H. The Holy Spirit. Pittsburgh, Jones, Doug. Understanding the Healing Power of Pennsylvania: Silver Publishing Society, 1956.

God. Tulsa, OK: Faith Shield, 2001.

Murray, A

Andrew. The Full Blessing of Pentecost. 22

Hannen, Scott. Healing by Design. Lake Mary,

Berners Street, London: James Nisbet &

Florida: Siloam, 2003.

Company Ltd., 1908

Joyner, Rick. Breaking the Power of Evil.

———. The Spirit of Christ. Minneapolis,

Shippensburg, Pennsylvania: Destiny Image

Minnessota: Bethany House Publishers, 1979.

Publishers, 2002.

Overholtzer, Ilvin JJ. Studies on the Doctrine of the Katter,
Calvin K. Ye Shall Receive Power.

Holy Spirit. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Discovery
Minneapolis, Minnesota: Evangelism Associates

House. 1952.

Int., 1979.

Owen, John, D,D. The Holy Spirit, His Gifts and Kenyon,
EE. W

W. The Two Kinds of Faith. n.c.: Kenyon

Power. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Kregel

Gospel Publishing Society, 1998.

Publications, 1960.

Kuhlman, K

Kathryn. I Believe in Miracles. Gainesville,

Packer, J. I. Keep in Step with the Spirit. Grand FL: Bridge-Logos Publishers, 1990.

Rapids, MI: Fleming H. Revell, 1984.

———. Nothing Is Impossible with God. Gainsville,

———. Knowing God. Downer's Grove, Illinois:

Florida: Bridge Logos Publishers, 1974.

Intervarsity Press, 1973.

Lawrence, Roy. The Practice of Christian Healing. Peale, V

Vincent N

Norman. The Positive Power of Jesus

Marylebone Road, London: Holy Trinity Church,

Christ. Wheaton, Illinois: Tyndale House

1998.

Publishers Inc., 1980.

Lehman, Chester K. The Holy Spirit and the Holy

Pentecost,Dwight JJ. The Divine Comforter. Chicago: Life.
Scottsdale, Pennsylvania: Herald Press,

Moody Press, 1978.

1960.

Percy, W

Welsing R

R. Prayer and Fasting: The Mysteries

Leon, Morrison. Spirit of the Living God. 39

Unlocked. n.c.: Series Publishing, 2004.

Bedsquare, London: Intervasity Fellowship,

Prince, Derick. Derick Prince on Experience God's 1967.

Power. New Kensington, PA: Whitaker House,

Lewis, A

Aaron D

D. Healing for the 21st Century. New

1998.

Kensington, PA: Whitaker House, 2000.

Pritchard, Ray. Names of the Holy Spirit. Chicago: Lewis,

C

C. SS. Miracles. New York, NY: HaperCollins,
Moody Press, 1995.

1974.

Rouch, JJohn. National Geographic News: Friday the
Lockyer, Herbert. The Breath of God. Cleveland, 13th
Phobia Rooted in Ancient History. August
Ohio: Union Gospel Press, 1949.

12, 2004.

Nysewander, M

Mark. The Fasting Key: How You Can

Sauelle, JJerry. Expect the Extraordinary. Tulsa, OK:
Unlock Doors to Spiritual Blessing. Tonbridge,
Harrison House, 2000.

Kent: Sovereign World, 2002.

Sherrer, Quin. Miracles Happen When You Pray.

Lucado, Max. Grip of Grace. Nashville, Tennessee: Grand
Rapids, MI: Kregel, 1997.

W. Publishing Group, 1996.

Geivett, R. Douglas and Gary R. Habermas eds. In

———. He Still Moves Stones. Nashville, Tennessee:
Defense of Miracles. UK: Apollos, 1997.

Word Publishing Inc., 1993.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 317

BIBLIOGRAPHY

/ 317

Smeaton, G

George. The Doctrine of the Holy Spirit.

Carlisle, Pennsylvania: The Banner of Truth

Trust, 1974.

Sproul, R

R.C. One Holy Passion. Nashville, Tennessee:

Thomas Nelson Inc., 1987.

Spurgeon, C

C. H

H. The Anointed Life. New Kensington,

PA: Whitaker, 2002.

Spurgeon, Charles. Power over Satan. New

Kensington, Pennsylvania: Whitaker House,

1997.

Stramford, Bryant. The Courier Journal, The Body Shop:
Does Prayer Have Health Benefits?

Louisville, KY, June 9 2005. [http:// www.courierjournal.com](http://www.courierjournal.com)

Subritzky, Bill. Demons Defeated. Tonbridge,

England: Sovereign World Ltd, 1996.

Sumrall, Lester. The Believer's Handbook. New

Kensington, PA: Whitaker House, 2002.

Swindall, R. Charles. A Man of Selfless Dedication.

Nashville, Tennessee: W Publishing Group, a

division of Thomas Nelson Inc., 1999.

Thomas, Robert L. Understanding Spiritual Gifting: A Verse-By-Verse Study of 1 Corinthians 12-14.

Grand Rapids, Michigan: Kregel, 1978.

US Census Bureau Interaction Programme.

Demographic Data and Measurements: World

Birth and Death Rates, 2001. Microsoft Encarta 2004.

Warrington, Keith. Jesus the Healer: Paradism or Unique Phenomenon. Waynesboro, GA:

Paternoster, 1952.

Welsing, PPercy R

R. Prayer and Fasting: The Mysteries

Unlocked. n.c.: Series Publishing, 2004.

Wigglesworth, Smith. Smith Wigglesworth on

Healing. Kaduna, Nigeria: Evangel Publishers

Ltd., 1999.

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 318

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved Evan
and Mission.qxd 2008/05/14 14:03 Page 319

Other Textbooks by Dag Heward-Mills

Pastoral Ministry

Church Administration and Management

Basic Theology

E mail Dag Heward-Mills :

bishop@daghewardmills.org

evangelist@daghewardmills.org

Find out more about Dag Heward-Mills at:

www.daghewardmills.org

www.lighthousechapel.org

www.healingjesuscrusade.org

Write to:

Dag Heward-Mills

P. O. Box 114

Korle-Bu

Accra

Ghana

Dag Heward-Mills eBooks. 2010 All Rights Reserved

Document Outline

- Evan and Mission prelims
- Evan and Mission text